

The Project Gutenberg EBook of An Examination of the Testimony of the Four Evangelists by Simon Greenleaf, LL.D.

This eBook is for the use of anyone anywhere at no cost and with almost no restrictions whatsoever. You may copy it, give it away or re-use it under the terms of the Project Gutenberg License included with this eBook or online at <http://www.gutenberg.org/license>

Title: An Examination of the Testimony of the Four Evangelists

Author: Simon Greenleaf, LL.D.

Release Date: January 17, 2011 [Ebook 34989]

Language: English

\*\*\*START OF THE PROJECT GUTENBERG EBOOK  
AN EXAMINATION OF THE TESTIMONY OF THE  
FOUR EVANGELISTS\*\*\*

An  
Examination of the Testimony  
of the  
Four Evangelists,  
by the Rules of Evidence Administered  
in  
Courts of Justice.

With an Account of the Trial of Jesus.

By Simon Greenleaf, LL.D.

Dane Professor of Law in Harvard University

Second Edition

Revised and Corrected by the Author.

London:

A. Maxwell & Son, 32, Bell Yard, Lincoln's Inn;

W. Smith, 113, Fleet Street;

Hodges & Smith, Dublin; T. & J. Clark, Edinburgh.

1847

# Contents

Contents And Synopsis Of The Harmony. . . . .	9
Advertisement To This Edition. . . . .	63
An Examination, Etc. . . . .	64
Harmony Of The Gospels. . . . .	119
Part I. Events Connected With The Birth And Childhood Of Jesus. . . . .	119
Part II. Announcement And Introduction Of Our Lord's Public Ministry. . . . .	162
Part III. Our Lord's First Passover, And The Subsequent Transactions Until The Second. . . . .	190
Part IV. Our Lord's Second Passover, And The Subsequent Transactions Until The Third. . . . .	238
Part V. From Our Lord's Third Passover, Until His Final Departure From Galilee, At The Festival Of Tabernacles. . . . .	417
Part VI. The Festival Of Tabernacles And The Subsequent Transactions, Until Our Lord's Arrival At Bethany, Six Days Before The Fourth Passover. . . . .	476
Part VII. Our Lord's Public Entry Into Jerusalem, And The Subsequent Transactions Before The Fourth Passover. . . . .	599
Part VIII. The Fourth Passover; Our Lord's Passion; And The Accompanying Events Until The End Of The Jewish Sabbath. . . . .	692
Part IX. Our Lord's Resurrection, His Subsequent Appearances, And His Ascension. . . . .	802
Note On The Resurrection. . . . .	834
An Account Of The Trial Of Jesus. . . . .	854
The Jewish Account Of The Trial Of Jesus. By Mr. Salvador.	872

The Trial Of Jesus Before Caiaphas And Pilate. . . . .	881
Preface. . . . .	882
Analysis Of The Chapter Of Mr. Salvador, Entitled “The Administration Of Justice” Among The Jews.	885
Trial Of Jesus. . . . .	892
Footnotes . . . . .	923



## Advertisement.

In introducing to the notice of the British Public, Mr. Professor GREENLEAF'S Harmony of the Four Gospels, the publishers have much satisfaction in announcing, that it has become a Standard Work in the United States of America: and its intrinsic value has induced them to make it known, in the hope of promoting its circulation, in this country.

The spirit of infidelity is far more restless and active on the other side of the Atlantic, than, happily, it has been in our highly-favoured land: and, in consequence, it has called forth some of the most able and powerful minds to correct and subdue it. Among these advocates of Divine Revelation, the profound lawyer, Professor Greenleaf, holds a most honourable and distinguished place; and his work may justly be regarded as combining sound and practical knowledge with well-directed zeal and piety. Its character has been very fairly appreciated in two leading North American journals, from which the following extracts are made, as indicative of its contents, and also of the high estimation in which its learned author is deservedly held in his own country.

### EXTRACT OF A NOTICE OF PROFESSOR GREENLEAF ON THE FOUR GOSPELS, OCTOBER 24, 1846, IN "THE NEW YORK OBSERVER."

The Author is a lawyer, very learned in his profession, acute, critical and used to raising and meeting practical doubts. Author of a treatise on the law of evidence, which has already become a classic in the hands of the profession which he adorns, and teaches in one of the Law Seminaries which do honour to our country in the eyes of Europe, he brings rare qualifications for the task he assumes. That he should,

with the understanding and from the heart, accept the Gospel as the truth, avow it as his Hope, and seek to discharge a duty to his fellow-men by laying before them the grounds on which he founds this acceptance and this hope, are cheering circumstances to the Christian, and present strong appeals to the indifferent.

To his profession, to the lawyers of the country, however, this work makes a strong appeal. They are a very secular profession. Their business is almost wholly conversant with material interests. Their time is absorbed in controversies, of passion, or of interest. Acute, critical, and disputatious, they apparently present a field unpropitious for the acceptance of a religion, spiritual, disinterested, and insisting on perfect holiness. Still, they necessarily need to know and must enforce the rules of finding truth and justice; the principles for ascertaining truth and dispensing justice are the great subjects of all their discussions, so far as they are discussions of any general principle. From this cause it is, that this profession has numbered among its members, in every age, Christians of great eminence, and in our own day and country, we cannot turn to the eminent men of this profession in any large community, without the satisfaction of finding our Faith embraced by those whose habits of practical as well as speculative investigation render them evidently the best able to appreciate its claims and to detect any imperfections in its proof.

So we trust it always may be; and we are assured that the best models of the mode of investigating matters of legal controversy as the proof of facts, are writings on the evidences. Paley's treatise and that of Chalmers, on the oral testimony in favour of Christ's mission, Paley's examination of the writings of the apostle Paul, are, we are assured, the best models extant for forming the habit of examining oral and documentary evidence. These are subjects on which it is of vital importance, in a secular view, that a lawyer's habits should be right: in a spiritual view the importance is

unspeakable. Mr. Greenleaf has doubtless felt this truth, and has also felt that his position would give to his labours some authority with his brethren and with the public. He has given himself honourably to the labour, and spread its results before the world.

It is long since Infidelity has found its advocates among the truly learned. Among the guesses and speculations of a small portion of unsanctified medical men, she still finds now and then a champion. Historians and philosophers have long since discussed her pretensions. And now from the Jurists and Lawyers, the practical masters of this kind of investigation, works are appearing, whereby not only an earnest reception of the Gospel is manifested, but the mode and means of action and of credit by which all human affairs are governed.

We lose in respect to our own investigations on this subject by its very sacredness. We have an idle dread, that it is not open to free investigation: to severe practical tests. We need to be invited, to be pressed to examine this subject freely. Dr. Chalmers in one department of this inquiry has led the way. Mr. Greenleaf in another has also presented an example. And it will not be competent, after these men have thus investigated and taught the rules and laws of investigation, for any man who is not willing to arrogate superior claims to learning and ability, to turn aside superciliously from an examination of the Gospels.

Such are our views of this work, which we commend to all: to the legal profession, from the character of its topics and the rank of its author: to men desirous of knowledge, in every rank in life, because of its presenting this subject under such a treatment as every-day practical questions are treated with. It does not touch the intrinsic evidences of the Gospel: those which to the believer are, after all, the highest proofs. But it is to be remembered, that these are proofs which are not satisfactory until an examination of the outward evidences has led men to the conviction, that the Gospels cannot be false.

FROM THE "NORTH AMERICAN REVIEW."



*Professor Greenleaf on the Gospels, and Strauss' "Life of Jesus."*—Of course we place the titles of these two books together only by way of contrast. They relate, it is true, to the same general subject; but it is hard to conceive of two works more unlike in their scope, character, and purpose. The object of the one is to prove, and of the other to disprove, the Christian religion. The one is the production of an able and profound lawyer, a man who has grown grey in the halls of justice and the schools of jurisprudence,—a writer of the highest authority on legal subjects, whose life has been spent in weighing testimony and sifting evidence, and whose published opinions on the rules of evidence are received as authoritative in all the English and American tribunals,—for fourteen years the highly respected colleague of the late Mr. Justice Story, and now the honoured head of the most distinguished and prosperous school of English law in the world. The other is the work of a German professor and speculatist, also profoundly learned in his way,—an ingenious and erring framer of theories of the most striking character, almost unheard of till his brain either conceived them or gave them currency, though relating to topics with which men have been familiar for eighteen centuries,—a subtle controversialist, whose work, as he himself avows, is deeply tinged with the most strongly marked peculiarities of the philosophy and theology of his countrymen. We presume the most ardent admirer of Dr. Strauss will not object to our characterising the two works as excellent specimens, the one of clear and shrewd English common sense, the other of German erudition, laborious diligence, and fertility in original speculation. And if the subject of inquiry were one that involved his own temporal and immediate interests, and it were necessary to determine which of these two writers would give the wiser and safer counsel, or the more trustworthy opinion, we suppose the same person would agree with us in making the choice.

On the publishers announcing to Professor Greenleaf their wish to introduce his Harmony to the notice of the British Public, he with equal promptitude and kindness communicated to them some important additions to his Introduction, and also numerous valuable notes, more particularly adapted to the use of Theological Students. These are now printed for the first time: and at the suggestion of a very eminent and learned clergyman of the Established Church, the publishers have added in an Appendix an accurate and elegant translation of the late learned French Advocate, A. M. J. J. Dupin's Refutation of the eminent Jewish writer, Joseph Salvador's "Trial and Condemnation of Jesus," executed by the late distinguished American Lawyer and Statesman, JOHN PICKERING, LL.D., Counsellor at Law, and President of the American Academy of Arts and Sciences (sometime Secretary to the American Embassy in this country); who has most truly characterised M. Dupin's examination of Salvador, as being "conducted with an ability, learning, animation, and interest, that leave nothing to be desired."

[vi]

[vii]

# To The Members Of The Legal Profession.

GENTLEMEN,

The subject of the following work I hope will not be deemed so foreign to our professional pursuits, as to render it improper for me to dedicate it, as I now respectfully do, to you. If a close examination of the evidences of Christianity may be expected of one class of men more than another, it would seem incumbent on us, who make the law of evidence one of our peculiar studies. Our profession leads us to explore the mazes of falsehood, to detect its artifices, to pierce its thickest veils, to follow and expose its sophistries, to compare the statements of different witnesses with severity, to discover truth and separate it from error. Our fellow-men are well aware of this; and probably they act upon this knowledge more generally, and with a more profound repose, than we are in the habit of considering. The influence, too, of the legal profession upon the community is unquestionably great; conversant, as it daily is, with all classes and grades of men, in their domestic and social relations, and in all the affairs of life, from the cradle to the grave. This influence we are constantly exerting for good or ill; and hence, to refuse to acquaint ourselves with the evidences of the Christian religion, or to act as though, having fully examined, we lightly esteemed them, is to assume an appalling amount of responsibility.

The things related by the Evangelists are certainly of the most momentous character, affecting the principles of our conduct here, and our happiness for ever. **The religion of Jesus Christ aims at nothing less than the utter overthrow of all other systems of religion in the world; denouncing them as inadequate to the**

wants of man, false in their foundations, and dangerous in their tendency. It not only solicits the grave attention of all, to whom its doctrines are presented, but it demands their cordial belief, as a matter of vital concernment. These are no ordinary claims; and it seems hardly possible for a rational being to regard them with even a subdued interest; much less to treat them with mere indifference and contempt. If not true, they are little else than the pretensions of a bold imposture, which, not satisfied with having already enslaved millions of the human race, seeks to continue its encroachments upon human liberty, until all nations shall be subjugated under its iron rule. But if they are well founded and just, they can be no less than the high requirements of Heaven, addressed by the voice of God to the reason and understanding of man, concerning things deeply affecting his relations to his sovereign, and essential to the formation of his character and of course to his destiny, both for this life and for the life to come.

Such was the estimate taken of religion, even the religion of pagan Rome, by one of the greatest lawyers of antiquity, when he argued that it was either nothing at all, or was everything. *Aut undique religionem tolle, aut usquequaque conserva.*<sup>1</sup>

With this view of the importance of the subject, and in the hope that the present work may in some degree aid or at least incite others to a more successful pursuit of this interesting study, it is submitted to your kind regard, by

Your obedient servant,

SIMON GREENLEAF.

HARVARD UNIVERSITY,  
DANE HALL, May 1, 1846.

---

<sup>1</sup> Cicero, Philip. II. § 43.

# Contents And Synopsis Of The Harmony.

*The figures in the first column refer to the corresponding Sections in NEWCOME'S HARMONY. Those in the second column to the Sections in this Work.*

Sect.	Sect.	Contents.	Matt.	Mark	Luke	John
		Part I.				
		EVENTS				
		CONNECTED				
		WITH THE				
		BIRTH AND				
		CHILDHOOD				
		OF OUR LORD.				
		TIME: <i>About</i>				
		<i>thirteen and</i>				
		<i>a half years.</i>				
1	1	Preface			1, 1-4	
		to Luke's				
		Gospel.				
3	2	An Angel			1, 5-	
		appears to			25	
		Zacharias.				
		<i>Jerusalem.</i>				
4	3	An Angel			1, 26-	
		appears			38	
		to Mary.				
		<i>Nazareth.</i>				

5	4	Mary vis- its Elizabeth. <i>Juttah.</i>	1, 39- 56
6	5	Birth of John the Baptist. <i>Juttah.</i>	1, 57- 80
7, 8	6	An Angel 1, 18- appears 25 to Joseph. <i>Nazareth.</i>	
8	7	The Birth of Jesus. <i>Beth- lehem.</i>	2, 1-7
10	8	An Angel appears to the Shep- herds. <i>Near Bethlehem.</i>	2, 8- 20
11, 12	9	The circum- cision of Jesus, and his presen- tation in the Temple. <i>Bethlehem. Jerusalem.</i>	2, 21- 38
13	10	The Magi. <i>Jerusalem. Bethlehem.</i>	2, 1- 12

13	11	The flight into Egypt. Herod's cruelty. The return. <i>Bethlehem.</i> <i>Nazareth.</i>	2, 13-23	2, 39-40
14	12	At twelve years of age Jesus goes to the Passover. <i>Jerusalem.</i>		2, 41-52
9	13	The Genealogies.	1, 1-17	3, 28-38

## Part II.

## ANNOUNCEMENT

## AND INTRODUCTION OF

## OUR LORD'S

## PUBLIC

## MINISTRY.

TIME: *About**one year.*

15	14	The Ministry of John the Baptist. The Desert. <i>The Jordan.</i>	3, 1-12	1, 1-8	3, 1-18
16	15	The Baptism of Jesus. <i>The Jordan.</i>	3, 13-17	1, 9-11	3, 21-23

17	16	The Temptation. <i>Desert of Judea.</i>	4, 1-11	1, 12, 13	4, 1-13
2	17	Preface to John's Gospel.			1, 1-18
18	18	Testimony of John the Baptist to Jesus. <i>Bethany beyond Jordan.</i>			1, 19-34
18	19	Jesus gains Disciples. <i>The Jordan. Galilee?</i>			1, 35-52
19	20	The Marriage at Cana of Galilee.			2, 1-12

### Part III.

OUR LORD'S  
FIRST  
PASSOVER,  
AND THE  
SUBSEQUENT  
TRANSACTIONS  
UNTIL  
THE SECOND.  
TIME: *One*  
*year.*



20	21	At the Passover Jesus drives the Traders out of the Temple. <i>Jerusalem.</i>				2, 13- 25
21	22	Our Lord's discourse with Nicode- mus. <i>Jerusalem.</i>				3, 1- 21
22	23	Jesus re- mains in Judea and baptizes. Further testimony of John the Baptist.				3, 22- 36
23	24	Jesus departs into Galilee after John's imprison- ment	4, 12. 14, 3- 5	1, 14. 6, 17- 20	4, 14. 3, 19, 20.	4, 1-3

23	25	Our Lord's discourse with the Samaritan woman. Many of the Samaritans believe on him. <i>Shechem</i> or <i>Neapolis</i> .				4, 4- 42
24	26	Jesus teaches publicly in Galilee.	4, 17	1, 14. 15	4, 14, 15	4, 43- 45
24	27	Jesus again at Cana, where he heals the son of a nobleman lying ill at Capernaum. <i>Cana</i> of <i>Galilee</i> .				4, 46- 54
25	28	Jesus at Nazareth; he is there rejected, and fixes his abode at Capernaum.	4, 13- 16		4, 16- 31	

26	29	The call of Simon Peter and Andrew, and of James and John, with the miraculous draught of fishes. <i>Near Capernaum.</i>	4, 18- 22	1, 16- 20	5, 1- 11
27	30	The healing of a Demo- niac in the Synagogue. <i>Capernaum</i>		1, 21- 28	4, 31- 37
28	31	The healing of Pe- ter's wife's mother, and many others. <i>Capernaum.</i>	8, 14- 17	1, 29- 34	4, 38- 41
28	32	Jesus with his Disciples goes from Capernaum throughout Galilee.	4, 23- 25	1, 35- 39	4, 42- 44
29	33	The healing of a Leper. <i>Galilee.</i>	8, 2-4	1, 40- 45	5, 12- 16

30	34	The healing of a Para- lytic. <i>Capernaum.</i>	9, 2-8	2, 1- 12	5, 17- 26
31	35	The call of Matthew. <i>Capernaum.</i>	9, 9	2, 13, 14	5, 27,

#### Part IV.

OUR LORD'S  
SECOND  
PASSOVER,  
AND THE  
SUBSEQUENT  
TRANSAC-  
TIONS UNTIL  
THE THIRD.

TIME: *One  
year.*

32	36	The Pool of Bethesda; the healing of the infirm man; and our Lord's subsequent discourse. <i>Jerusalem.</i>			5, 1- 47
----	----	---	--	--	-------------

33	37	The Disciples pluck ears of grain on the Sabbath. <i>On the way to Galilee?</i>	12, 1-8	2, 23-28	6, 1-5
34	38	The healing of the withered hand on the Sabbath. <i>Galilee.</i>	12, 9-14	3, 1-6	6, 6-11
34	39	Jesus arrives at the Sea of Tiberias, and is followed by multitudes. <i>Lake of Galilee.</i>	12, 15-21	3, 7-12	
35	40	Jesus withdraws to the Mountain, and chooses the Twelve; the multitudes follow him. <i>Near Capernaum.</i>	10, 2-4,	3, 13-19	6, 12-19
36	41	The Sermon on the Mount. <i>Near Capernaum.</i>	5,1,-8,1		6, 20-49

37	42	The healing of the Cen- turion's ser- vant. <i>Caper- naum.</i>	8, 5- 13	7, 1- 10
38	43	The rais- ing of the Widow's son. <i>Nain.</i>		7, 11- 17
39	44	John the Baptist in prison sends Disciples to Jesus. <i>Galilee. Ca- pernaum?</i>	11, 2- 19	7, 18- 35
40	45	Reflections of Jesus on appealing to his mighty Works. <i>Capernaum.</i>	11, 20-30	
41	46	While sit- ting at meat with a Phar- isee, Jesus is anointed by a woman who had been a sinner. <i>Ca- pernaum?</i>		7, 36- 50

42	47	Jesus, with the Twelve, makes a second circuit in Galilee.			8, 1-3
42	48	The healing of a Demoni- niac. The Scribes and Pharisee blaspheme. <i>Galilee.</i>	12, 22-37	3, 19-30	11, 14, 15, 17-23
43, 44	49	The Scribes and Pharisees seek a sign. Our Lord's reflections. <i>Galilee.</i>	12, 38-45		11, 16, 24-36
45	50	The true Disciples of Christ his nearest relatives. <i>Galilee.</i>	12, 46-50	3, 31-35	8, 19-21
46	51	At a Pharisee's table, Jesus denounces woes against the Pharisees and others. <i>Galilee.</i>			11, 37-54

47	52	Jesus dis- courses to his Disciples and the multitude. <i>Galilee.</i>			12, 1- 59
48	53	The slaugh- ter of certain Galileans. Parable of the barren Fig-tree. <i>Galilee.</i>			13, 1- 9
49	54	Parable of the Sower. <i>Lake of Galilee. Near Caper- naum?</i>	13, 1- 23	4, 1- 25	8, 4- 18
49	55	Parable of the Tares. Other Para- bles. <i>Near Caper- naum?</i>	13, 24-53	4, 26- 34	
50	56	Jesus directs to cross the Lake. Incidents. The tempest stilled. <i>Lake of Galilee.</i>	8, 18- 27	4, 35- 41	8, 22- 25, 9, 57-62



51	57	The two De- moniacs of Gadara. S. <i>E. coast of the Lake of Galilee.</i>	8, 28- 34, 9, 1	5, 1- 21	8, 26- 40
52	58	Levi's Feast. <i>Capernaum.</i>	9, 10- 17	2, 15- 22	5, 29- 39
52	59	The raising of Jairus's daughter. The woman with a bloody flux. <i>Capernaum.</i>	9, 18- 26	5, 22- 43	8, 41- 56
53, 54	60	Two blind men healed, and a dumb spirit cast out. <i>Caper- naum?</i>	9, 27- 34		
55	61	Jesus again at Nazareth, and again re- jected.	13, 54-58	6, 1-6	
56, 57, 58, 59	62	A third circuit in Galilee. The Twelve in- structed and sent forth. <i>Galilee.</i>	9, 35-38, 10, 1, 5-42, 11, 1	6, 6- 13	9, 1-6

60,	63	Herod holds	14, 1,	6,	9, 7-9
61		Jesus to	2, 6-	14-16,	
		be John	12	21-29	
		the Baptist,			
		whom he			
		had just			
		before be-			
		headed.			
		<i>Galilee?</i>			
		<i>Perea.</i>			
62,	64	The Twelve	14,	6, 30-	9, 10-
63		return, and	13-21	44	17
		Jesus retires			6, 1-
		with them			14
		across the			
		Lake. Five			
		thousand are			
		fed. <i>Caper-</i>			
		<i>naum. N.</i>			
		<i>E. coast of</i>			
		<i>the Lake of</i>			
		<i>Galilee.</i>			
64	65	Jesus walks	14,	6, 45-	6, 15-
		upon the wa-	22-36	56	21
		ter. <i>Lake of</i>			
		<i>Galilee.</i>			
		<i>Gen-</i>			
		<i>nesareth.</i>			

65,	66	Our Lord's	6, 22-
83		discourse	71, 7,
		to the mul-	1
		titude in	
		the Syna-	
		gogue at	
		Capernaum.	
		Many Dis-	
		ciples turn	
		back. Peter's	
		profession	
		of faith.	
		<i>Capernaum.</i>	

Part V.

FROM OUR  
LORD'S THIRD  
PASSOVER  
UNTIL HIS  
FINAL DEPAR-  
TURE FROM  
GALILEE AT  
THE FESTIVAL  
OF TABERNA-  
CLES.

TIME: *Six  
months.*

66	67	Our Lord justifies his disciples for eating with unwashen hands. Pharisaic Traditions. <i>Capernaum.</i>	15, 1- 20	7, 1- 23
67	68	The daugh- ter of a Syropheni- cian woman is healed. <i>Region of Tyre and Sidon.</i>	15, 21-28	7, 24- 30
68, 69	69	A deaf and dumb man healed; also many others. Four thou- sand are fed. <i>The Decapo- lis.</i>	15, 29-38	7, 31- 37, 8, 1-9
69, 70	70	The Phar- isees and Sadducees again require a sign. (See § 49.) <i>Near Magdala.</i>	15, 39, 16, 1-4	8, 10- 12

71	71	The Dis-	16, 4-	8, 13-	
		ciples	12	21	
		cautioned			
		against the			
		leaven of the			
		Pharisees,			
		etc. <i>N. E.</i>			
		<i>coast of</i>			
		<i>the Lake of</i>			
		<i>Galilee.</i>			
72	72	A blind		8, 22-	
		man healed.		26	
		<i>Bethsaida.</i>			
		<i>(Julias).</i>			
73	73	Peter and the	16,	8, 27-	9, 18-
		rest again	13-20	30	21
		profess			
		their faith			
		in Christ.			
		(See § 66.)			
		<i>Region of</i>			
		<i>Cesarea</i>			
		<i>Philippi.</i>			
74	74	Our Lord	16,	8, 31-	9, 22-
		foretells his	21-28	38, 9,	27
		own death		1	
		and resurrec-			
		tion, and the			
		trials of his			
		followers.			
		<i>Region of</i>			
		<i>Cesarea</i>			
		<i>Philippi.</i>			

75	76	The Trans-figuration. Our Lord's subsequent discourse with the three Disciples. <i>Region of Cesarea Philippi.</i>	17, 1-13,	9, 2-13	9, 28-36
76	76	The healing of a Demoniac, whom the Disciples could not heal. <i>Region of Cesarea Philippi.</i>	17, 14-21	9, 14-29	9, 37-43
77	77	Jesus again foretells his own death and resurrection (See § 74.) <i>Galilee.</i>	17, 22, 2	9, 30-32	9, 43-45
78	78	The tribute-money miraculously provided. <i>Capernaum.</i>	17, 24-27	9, 33	

79	79	The Disciples contend who should be greatest. Jesus exhorts to humility, forbearance, and brotherly love. <i>Capernaum.</i>	18, 1-35	9, 33-50	9, 46-50
80	80	The Seventy instructed and sent out. <i>Capernaum.</i>			10, 1-16
81, 95	81	Jesus goes up the Festival of Tabernacles. His final departure from Galilee. Incidents in Samaria.			9, 51-56    7, 2-10
95, 96	82	Ten Lepers cleansed. <i>Samaria.</i>			17, 11-19

## Part VI.

THE     FESTI-  
VAL OF THE  
TABERNA-  
CLES AND THE  
SUBSEQUENT  
TRANSAC-  
TIONS UNTIL  
OUR LORD'S  
ARRIVAL AT  
BETHANY, SIX  
DAYS BEFORE  
THE FOURTH  
PASSOVER.

TIME:     *Six  
months less  
one week.*

81	83	Jesus at the Festival of Tabernacles. His public teaching. <i>Jerusalem.</i>	7, 11- 53, 8, 1
82	84	The woman taken in Adultery. <i>Jerusalem.</i>	8, 2- 11



83	85	Further public teach- ing of our Lord. He reproves the unbelieving Jews, and escapes from their hands. <i>Jerusalem.</i>	8, 12- 59
86	86	A lawyer instructed. Love to our neighbour defined. Parable of the Good Samari- tan. <i>Near Jerusalem.</i>	10, 25-37
99	87	Jesus in the house of Martha and Mary. <i>Bethany.</i>	10, 38-42
87	88	The Disci- ples again taught how to pray. <i>Near Jerusalem.</i>	11, 1- 13
85	89	The Sev- enty return. <i>Jerusalem?</i>	10, 17-24

84	90	A man born blind is healed on the Sabbath. Our Lord's subsequent discourses. <i>Jerusalem.</i>	9, 1-41, 10, 1-21
100, 101	91	Jesus in Jerusalem at the Festival of Dedic- ation. He retires be- yond Jordan. <i>Jerusalem.</i> <i>Bethany</i> <i>beyond</i> <i>Jordan.</i>	10, 22-42
102	92	The raising of Lazarus. <i>Bethany.</i>	11, 1- 46
102	93	The counsel of Caiaphas against Je- sus. He retires from Jerusalem. <i>Jerusalem.</i> <i>Ephraim.</i>	11, 47-54

103, 88	94	Jesus be- yond Jordan is followed by multi- tudes. The healing of the infirm woman on the Sabbath. <i>Valley of Jordan. Perea.</i>	19, 1. 10, 1 2	13, 10-21
89	95	Our Lord goes teach- ing and journeying towards Jerusalem. He is warned against Herod. <i>Perea.</i>		13, 22-35
90	96	Our Lord dines with a chief Pharisee on the Sabbath. Incidents. <i>Perea.</i>		14, 1- 24

91	97	What is required of true Disciples. <i>Perea.</i>	14, 25-35
92	98	Parables of the Lost Sheep, etc. Parable of the Prodigal Son. <i>Perea.</i>	15, 1-32
93	99	Parable of the Unjust Steward. <i>Perea.</i>	16, 1-13
93	100	The Pharisees re-proved. Parable of the Rich Man and Lazarus. <i>Perea.</i>	16, 14-31
94	101	Jesus inculcates forbearance, faith, humility. <i>Perea.</i>	17, 1-10
97	102	Christ's coming will be sudden. <i>Perea.</i>	17, 20-37

98	103	Parables.			18, 1-
		The im-			14
		portunate			
		Widow. The			
		Pharisee and			
		Publican.			
		<i>Perea.</i>			
103	104	Precepts	19, 3-	10, 2-	
		respecting	12	12	
		divorce.			
		<i>Perea.</i>			
104	105	Jesus re-	19,	10,	18,
		ceives and	13-15	13-16	15-17
		blesses little			
		Children.			
		<i>Perea.</i>			
105	106	The rich	19,	10,	18,
		Young Man.	16-30,	17-31	18-30
		Parable of	20,		
		the Labour-	1-16		
		ers in the			
		Vineyard.			
		<i>Perea.</i>			
106	107	Jesus a	20,	10,	18,
		third time	17-19	32-34	31-34
		foretells his			
		Death and			
		Resurrec-			
		tion. (See			
		§ 74, § 77.)			
		<i>Perea.</i>			

107	108	James and John pre- fer their ambitious request. <i>Perea.</i>	20, 20-28	10, 35-45	
108	109	The healing of two blind men near Jericho.	20, 29-34	10, 46-52	18, 35-43, 19, 1
109	110	The visit to Zaccheus. Parable of the ten Minae. <i>Jericho.</i>			19, 2- 28
110	111	Jesus arrives at Bethany six days before the Passover.			11, 55-57, 12, 1.9-11

Part VII.

OUR LORD'S  
PUBLIC EN-  
TRY INTO  
JERUSALEM,  
AND THE  
SUBSEQUENT  
TRANSAC-  
TIONS BEFORE  
THE FOURTH  
PASSOVER.

TIME: *Five  
days.*

111	112	Our Lord's public En- try into Jerusalem. <i>Bethany.</i>	21, 1-11, 14-17	11, 1- 11	19, 29-44	12, 12-19
112	113	The barren Fig-tree. The cleansing of the Temple. <i>Bethany, Jerusalem.</i>	21, 12. 13, 18. 19	11, 12-19	19, 45-48, 21, 37.38	
113	114	The barren Fig-tree withers away. <i>Between Bethany and Jerusalem.</i>	21, 20-22	11, 20. 2		

114	115	Christ's au- thority ques- tioned. Para- ble of the Two Sons. <i>Jerusalem.</i>	21, 23-32	11, 27-33	20, 1- 8
114	116	Parable of the wicked hus- bandmen. <i>Jerusalem.</i>	21, 33-46	12, 1- 12	20, 9- 19
114	117	Parable of the Mar- riage of the King's Son. <i>Jerusalem.</i>	22, 1- 14		
115	118	Insidious question of the Pharisees: Tribute to Cæsar. <i>Jerusalem.</i>	22, 15-22	12, 13-17	20, 20-26
115	119	Insidious question of the Sad- ducees: The Res- urrection. <i>Jerusalem.</i>	22, 23-33	12, 18-27	20, 27-40



115	120	A lawyer questions Je- sus. The two great Com- mandments. <i>Jerusalem.</i>	22, 34-40	12, 28-34	
115	121	How is Christ the son of David? <i>Jerusalem.</i>	22, 41-46	12, 35-37	20, 41-44
116	122	Warnings against the evil exam- ple of the Scribes and Pharisees. <i>Jerusalem.</i>	23, 1- 12	12, 38.39	20, 45.46
116	123	Woes against the Scribes and Pharisees. Lamenta- tion over Jerusalem. <i>Jerusalem.</i>	23, 13-39	12, 40	20, 47
117	124	The Widow's mite. <i>Jerusalem.</i>		12, 41-44	21, 1- 4

111	125	Certain Greeks desire to see Jesus. <i>Jerusalem.</i>				12, 20-36
111	126	Reflections upon the unbelief of the Jews. <i>Jerusalem.</i>				12, 37-50
118	127	Jesus, on taking leave of the Tem- ple, foretells its destruc- tion and the persecu- tion of his Disciples. <i>Jerusalem.</i> <i>Mount of Olives.</i>	24, 1- 14	13, 1- 13	21, 5- 19	

118	128	The signs of Christ's coming to destroy Jerusalem, and put an end to the Jewish State and Dispensation. <i>Mount of Olives.</i>	24, 15-42	13, 14-37	21, 20-36
118	129	Transition to Christ's final coming at the Day of Judgment. Exhortation to watchfulness. Parables: The ten Virgins. The five Talents. <i>Mount of Olives.</i>	24, 43-51, 25, 1-30		
119	130	Scenes of the Judgment Day. <i>Mount of Olives.</i>	25, 31-46		

120	131	The Rulers conspire. The supper at Bethany. Treachery of Judas. <i>Jerusalem.</i> <i>Bethany.</i>	26, 1- 16	14, 1- 11	22, 1- 6	12, 2- 8
121	132	Preparation for the Passover. <i>Bethany.</i> <i>Jerusalem.</i>	26, 17-19	14, 12-16	22, 7- 13	

#### Part VIII.

THE FOURTH  
PASSOVER;  
OUR LORD'S  
PASSION;  
AND THE AC-  
COMPANYING  
EVENTS UNTIL  
THE END OF  
THE JEWISH  
SABBATH.

TIME: *Two*  
*days.*

122	133	The Passover Meal. Con- tention among the Twelve. <i>Jerusalem.</i>	26, 20	14, 17	22, 14-18, 24-30	
123	134	Jesus washes the feet of his disciples. <i>Jerusalem,</i>				13, 1- 20
124	136	Jesus point out the Traitor. Judas with- draws. <i>Jerusalem.</i>	26, 21-25	14, 18-21	22, 21-23	13, 21-35
125	136	Jesus fore- tells the fall of Peter, and the dispersion of the Twelve. <i>Jerusalem.</i>	26, 31-35	14, 27-31	22, 31-38	13, 36-38
126, 128	137	The Lord's Supper. <i>Jerusalem.</i>	26, 26-29	14, 22-25	22, 19.20	

127, 129	138	Jesus com- forts his Disci- ples. The Holy Spirit promised. <i>Jerusalem.</i>	14, 1- 31
129	139	Christ the true Vine. His Disci- ples hated by the world. <i>Jerusalem.</i>	15, 1- 27
129	140	Persecution foretold. Further promise of the Holy Spirit. Prayer in the name of Christ. <i>Jerusalem.</i>	16, 1- 33
130	141	Christ's last prayer with his disciples. <i>Jerusalem.</i>	17, 1- 26
131	142	The agony in 26, 14, 22, 18, 1 Gethsemane. 30, 26, 39-46 <i>Mount of 36-46 32-42</i> <i>Olives.</i>	

132	143	Jesus be- trayed, and made pris- oner. <i>Mount of Olives.</i>	26, 47-56	14, 43-52	22, 47-53	18, 2- 12
133, 134	144	Jesus before Caiaphas. Peter thrice denies him. <i>Jerusalem.</i>	26, 47-56	14, 53.54, 66-72	22, 54-62	18, 13-18, 25-27
134	145	Jesus before Caiaphas and the Sanhedrim. He declares himself to be the Christ; is condemned and mocked. <i>Jerusalem.</i>	26, 59-68	14, 55-65	22, 63-71	18, 19-24
135	146	The San- hedrim lead Jesus away to Pilate. <i>Jerusalem.</i>	27, 1. 2, 11- 14	15, 1- 5	23, 1- 5, 23, 6-12	18, 28-38
136	147	Jesus be- fore Herod. <i>Jerusalem.</i>			23, 6- 12	

138	148	Pilate seeks to release Jesus. The Jews demand Barabbas. <i>Jerusalem.</i>	27, 15-26	15, 6-15	23, 13-25	18, 39. 40
138	149	Pilate delivers up Jesus to death. He is scourged and mocked. <i>Jerusalem.</i>	27, 26-30	15, 15-19		19, 1-3
138	150	Pilate again seeks to release Jesus. <i>Jerusalem.</i>				19, 4-16
139	151	Judas repents and hangs himself. <i>Jerusalem.</i>	27, 3-10			
138, 140	152	Jesus is led away to be crucified. <i>Jerusalem.</i>	27, 31-34	15, 20-23	23, 26-33	19, 16.17
141	153	The Crucifixion. <i>Jerusalem.</i>	27, 35-38	15, 24-28	23, 33.34	19, 18-24



141	154	The Jews mock at Jesus on the Cross. He commends his mother to John. <i>Jerusalem.</i>	27, 39-44	15, 29-32, 15, 33-37	23, 35-37, 39-43	19, 25-27
141	155	Darkness prevails. Christ ex- pires on the cross. <i>Jerusalem.</i>	27, 45-50		23, 44-46	19, 28-30
142, 144	156	The veil of the Tem- ple rent, and graves opened. Judgment of the Centu- rion. The Women at the Cross. <i>Jerusalem.</i>	27, 51-56	15, 38-41	23, 45, 47-49	
142	157	The taking down from the Cross. The burial. <i>Jerusalem.</i>	27, 57-61	15, 42-47	23, 50-56	19, 31-42

143 158 The Watch 27,  
at the 62-66  
Sepulchre.  
*Jerusalem.*

Part IX.

OUR LORD'S  
RESURREC-  
TION, HIS  
SUBSEQUENT  
APPEAR-  
ANCES,  
AND HIS  
ASCENSION.

TIME: *Forty  
days.*

144 159 The Morn- 28, 2- 16, 1  
ing of 4  
the Res-  
urrection.  
*Jerusalem.*

145 160 Visit of the 28, 1 16, 2- 24, 1- 20, 1.  
Women to 4 3 2  
the Sepul-  
chre. Mary  
Magdalene  
returns.  
*Jerusalem.*

145	161	Vision of Angels in the Sepulchre. <i>Jerusalem.</i>	28, 5- 7	16, 5- 7	24, 4- 8
145	162	The Women return to the City. Jesus meets them. <i>Jerusalem.</i>	28, 8- 10	16, 8	24, 9- 11
146	163	Peter and John run to the Sepulchre. <i>Jerusalem.</i>			24, 12    20, 3- 10
147, 148	164	Our Lord is seen by Mary Mag- dalene at the Sepulchre. <i>Jerusalem.</i>		16, 9- 11	20, 11-18
149	165	Report of the Watch. <i>Jerusalem.</i>	28, 11-15		
150	166	Our Lord is seen of Peter. Then by two Disciples on the way to Emmaus. <i>Jerusalem.</i> <i>Emmaus.</i>		16, 12.13	24, 13-35

151	167	Jesus ap- pears in the midst of the Apostles, Thomas be- ing absent. <i>Jerusalem.</i>	16, 14-18	24, 36-49	20, 19-23
152	168	Jesus ap- pears in the midst of the Apostles, Thomas be- ing present. <i>Jerusalem.</i>			20, 24-29
153	169	The Apos- tles go away into Galilee. Jesus shows himself to seven of them at the Sea of Tiberias. <i>Galilee.</i>	28, 16		21, 1- 24
154	170	Jesus meets the Apostles and above five hundred Brethren on a Mountain in Galilee. <i>Galilee.</i>	28, 16-20		

155	171	Our Lord is seen of James; then of all the Apostles. <i>Jerusalem.</i>	16, 24, 19.20 50-53
156	172	The As- cension. <i>Bethany.</i>	20, 30.31
157	173	Conclusion of John's Gospel.	21, 25

[xviii]

## Table for Finding Any Passage in the Harmony.

### Matthew.

Chap.	Verse.	Sect.
i.	1-17	13
	18-25	6
ii.	1-12	10
	13-23	11
iii.	1-12	14
	13-17	15
iv.	1-11	16
	12	24
	13-16	28

	17	26
	18-22	29
	23-25	32
v.	1-48	41
vi.	1-34	41
vii.	1-29	41
viii.	1	41
	2-4	33
	5-13	42
	14-17	31
	18-27	56
	28-34	57
ix.	1	57
	2-8	34
	9	35
	10-17	58
	18-26	59
	27-34	60
	35-38	62
x.	1	62
	2-4	40
	5-42	62
xi.	1	62
	2-19	44
	20-30	45
xii.	1-8	37
	9-14	38
	15-21	39
	22-37	48
	38-45	49
	46-50	50
xiii.	1-23	54
	24-53	55

	54-58	61
xiv.	1, 2	63
	3-5	24
	6-12	63
	13-21	64
	22-36	65
xv.	1-20	67
	21-28	68
	29-38	69
	39	70
xvi.	1-4	70
	4-12	71
	13-20	73
	21-28	74
xvii.	1-13	75
	14-21	76
	22, 23	77
	24-27	78
xviii.	1-35	79
xix.	1, 2	94
	3-12	104
	13-15	105
	16-30	106
xx.	1-16	106
	17-19	107
	20-28	108
	29-34	109
xxi.	1-11	112
	12-13	113
	14-17	112
	18-19	113
	20-22	114
	28-32	115

	33-46	116
xxii.	1-14	117
	15-22	118
	23-33	119
	34-40	120
	41-46	121
xxiii.	1-12	122
	13-39	123
xxiv.	1-14	127
	15-42	128
	43-51	129
xxv.	1-30	129
	31-46	130
xxvi.	1-16	131
	17-19	132
	20	133
	21-25	135
	26-29	137
	30	142
	31-35	136
	36-46	142
	47-56	143
	57, 58	144
	59-68	145
	69-75	144
xxvii	1, 2	146
	3-10	151
	11-14	146
	15-26	148
	26-30	149
	31-34	152
	35-38	153
	39-44	154



	45-50	155
	51-56	156
	57-61	157
	62-66	158
xxviii.	1	160
	2-4	159
	5-7	161
	8-10	162
	11-15	165
	16	169
	16-20	170

[xviii]

## Mark.

Chap.	Verse.	Sect.
i.	1-8	14
	9-11	15
	12, 13	16
	14	24
	14, 15	26
	16-20	29
	21-28	30
	29-34	31
	35-39	32
	40-45	33
ii.	1-12	34
	13, 14	35
	15-22	58
	23-28	37
iii.	1-6	38
	7-12	39

	13-19	40
	19-30	48
	31-35	50
iv.	1-25	54
	26-34	55
	35-41	56
v.	1-21	57
	22-43	59
vi.	1-6	61
	6-13	62
	14-16	63
	17-20	24
	21-29	63
	30-44	64
	45-56	65
vii.	1-23	67
	24-30	68
	31-37	69
viii	1-9	69
	10-12	70
	13-21	71
	22-26	72
	27-30	73
	31-38	74
ix.	1	74
	2-13	75
	14-29	76
	30-32	77
	33	78
	33-50	79
x.	1	94
	2-12	104
	13-16	105

	17-31	106
	32-34	107
	35-45	108
	46-52	109
xi.	1-11	112
	12-19	113
	20-26	114
	27-33	115
xii.	1-12	116
	13-17	118
	18-27	119
	28-34	120
	35-37	121
	38, 39	122
	40	123
	41-44	124
xiii.	1-13	127
	14-37	128
xiv.	1-11	131
	12-16	132
	17	133
	18-21	135
	22-25	137
	26	142
	27-31	136
	32-42	142
	43-52	143
	53, 54	144
	55-65	145
	66-72	144
xv.	1-5	146
	6-15	148
	15-19	149

	20-23	152
	24-28	153
	29-32	154
	33-37	155
	38-41	156
	42-47	157
xvi.	1	159
	2-4	160
	5-7	161
	8	162
	9-11	164
	12, 13	166
	14-18	167
	19, 20	172

## Luke.

Chap.	Verse.	Sect.
i.	1-4	1
	5-25	2
	26-38	3
	39-56	4
	57-80	5
ii.	1-7	7
	8-20	8
	21-38	9
	39, 40	11
	41-52	12
iii.	1-18	14
	19-20	24
	21-23	15
	23-38	13

iv.	1-13	16
	14	24
	14, 15	26
	16-31	28
	31-37	30
	38-41	31
	42-44	32
v.	1-11	29
	12-16	33
	17-26	34
	27, 28	35
	29-39	58
vi.	1-5	37
	6-11	38
	12-19	40
	20-26	41
	27-30	41
	31	41
	32-36	41
	37-49	41
vii.	1-10	42
	11-17	43
	18-35	44
	36-50	46
viii.	1-3	47
	4-18	54
	19-21	50
	22-25	56
	26-40	57
	41-56	59
ix.	1-6	62
	7-9	63
	10-17	64

	18-21	73
	22-27	74
	28-36	75
	37-43	76
	43-45	77
	46-50	79
	51-56	81
	57-62	56
x.	1-16	80
	17-24	89
	25-37	86
	38-42	87
xi.	1-13	88
	14, 15	48
	16	49
	17-23	48
	24-28	49
	29-36	49
	37-54	51
xii.	1-59	52
xiii.	1-9	53
	10-21	94
	22-35	95
xiv.	1-24	96
	25-35	97
xv.	1-32	98
xvi.	1-13	99
	14-31	100
xvii.	1-10	101
	11-19	82
	20-37	102
xviii.	1-14	103
	15-17	105

	18-30	106
	31-34	107
	35-43	109
xix.	1	109
	2-28	110
	29-44	112
	45-18	113
xx.	1-8	115
	9-19	116
	20-26	118
	27-40	119
	41-44	121
	45-46	122
	47	123
xxi.	1-4	124
	5-19	127
	20-36	128
	37, 38	118
xxii.	1-6	131
	7-13	132
	14-18	133
	19, 20	137
	21-23	135
	24-30	133
	31-38	136
	39-46	142
	47-53	143
	54-62	144
	63-71	145
xxiii.	1-5	146
	6-12	147
	13-25	148
	26-33	152

	33-34	153
	35-37	154
	38	153
	39-43	154
	44-46	155
	45	156
	47-49	156
	50-56	157
xxiv.	1-3	160
	4-8	161
	9-11	162
	12	163
	13-35	166
	36-49	167
	50-53	172

## John.

Chap.	Verse.	Sect.
i.	1-18	17
	19-34	18
	35-52	19
ii.	1-12	20
	13-25	21
iii.	1-21	22
	22-36	23
iv.	1-3	24
	4-42	25
	43-45	26
	46-54	27
v.	1-47	36
vi.	1-14	64



	15-21	65
	22-71	66
vii.	1	66
	2-10	81
	11-53	83
viii.	1	83
	2-11	84
	12-59	85
ix.	1-41	90
	1-21	90
	22-42	91
xi.	1-46	92
	47-54	93
	55-57	111
xii.	1	111
	2-8	131
	9-11	111
	12-19	112
	20-36	125
	37-50	126
xiii.	1-20	134
	21-35	135
	36-38	136
xiv.	1-31	138
xv.	1-27	139
xvi.	1-33	140
xvii.	1-26	141
xviii.	1	142
	2-12	143
	13-18	144
	19-24	145
	25-27	144
	28-38	146

	39-40	148
xix.	1-3	149
	4-16	150
	16, 17	152
	18-24	153
	25-27	154
	28-30	155
	31-42	157
xx.	1, 2	160
	3-10	163
	11-18	164
	19-23	167
	24-29	168
	30, 31	173
xxi.	1-24	169
	25	173

## Advertisement To This Edition.

The arrangement of the Gospels by Dr. Robinson was adopted in this work, it being the latest published in the United States, and by a scholar of the highest reputation. But by comparing his order with that of Archbishop Newcome, as shown in contiguous columns in the Table of Contents and Synopsis of the Harmony, it will be found that they differ only in a very few unimportant particulars, not at all affecting the general scheme or structure of the Harmony, or the purposes of this examination. I have, however, in several places omitted their transposition of the verses of the text, occurring within the limits of a section; it being more convenient to insert them in the order in which they were written by the Evangelists.

The preliminary Dissertation has been revised and enlarged, and some further notes added to the text, which is printed conformably to the common octavo edition of the American Bible Society, except in a few places, where the article *a* was accidentally printed instead of *an*, in the words *an house*, &c.

Cambridge, Massachusetts,

*March* 1, 1847.

## An Examination, Etc.

§ 1. In examining the evidences of the Christian religion, it is essential to the discovery of truth that we bring to the investigation a mind freed, as far as possible, from existing prejudice and open to conviction. There should be a readiness, on our part, to investigate with candour, to follow the truth wherever it may lead us, and to submit, without reserve or objection, to all the teachings of this religion, if it be found to be of divine origin. “There is no other entrance,” says Lord Bacon, “to the kingdom of man, which is founded in the sciences, than to the kingdom of heaven, into which no one can enter but in the character of a little child.”<sup>2</sup> The docility which true philosophy requires of her disciples is not a spirit of servility, or the surrender of the reason and judgment to whatsoever the teacher may inculcate; but it is a mind free from all pride of opinion, not hostile to the truth sought for, willing to pursue the inquiry and impartially to weigh the arguments and evidence, and to acquiesce in the judgment of right reason. The investigation, moreover, should be pursued with the serious earnestness which becomes the greatness of the subject—a subject fraught with such momentous consequences to man. It should be pursued as in the presence of God, and under the solemn sanctions created by a lively sense of his omniscience, and of our accountability to him for the right use of the faculties which he has bestowed.

§ 2. In requiring this candour and simplicity of mind in those who would investigate the truth of our religion, Christianity demands nothing more than is readily conceded to every branch

---

<sup>2</sup> Nov. Org. 1. 68. “Ut non alius fere sit aditus ad regnum hominus, quod fundatur in scientiis, quam ad regnum cœlorum, in quod, nisi sub persona infantis, intrare non datur.”

of human science. All these have their data, and their axioms; and Christianity, too, has her first principles, the admission of which is essential to any real progress in knowledge. “Christianity,” says Bishop Wilson, “inscribes on the portal of her dominions, ‘Whosoever shall not receive the kingdom of God as a little child, shall in nowise enter therein.’ Christianity does not profess to convince the perverse and headstrong, to bring irresistible evidence to the daring and profane, to vanquish the proud scorner, and afford evidences from which the careless and perverse cannot possibly escape. This might go to destroy man’s responsibility. All that Christianity professes, is to propose such evidences as may satisfy the meek, the tractable, the candid, the serious inquirer.”<sup>3</sup>

§ 3. The present design, however, is not to enter upon any general examination of the evidences of Christianity, but to confine the inquiry to the testimony of the Four Evangelists, bringing their narratives to the tests to which other evidence is subjected in human tribunals. The foundation of our religion is a basis of fact—the fact of the birth, ministry, miracles, death, resurrection, and ascension of Jesus Christ. These are related by the Evangelists as having actually occurred, within their own personal knowledge. Our religion, then, rests on the credit due to these witnesses. Are they worthy of implicit belief, in the matters which they relate? This is the question, in all human tribunals, in regard to persons testifying before them; and we propose to test the veracity of these witnesses, by the same rules and means which are there employed. The importance of the facts testified, and their relations to the affairs of the soul, and the life to come, can make no difference in the principles or the mode of weighing the evidence. It is still the evidence of matters of fact, capable of being seen and known and related, as well by one man as by another. And if the testimony of the Evangelist, supposing it to be [003]

---

<sup>3</sup> Bishop Wilson’s Evidences, p. 38.

relevant and material to the issue in a question of property or of personal right, between man and man, in a court of justice, ought to be believed and have weight; then, upon the like principles, it ought to receive our entire credit here. But if, on the other hand, we should be justified in rejecting it, if there testified on oath, then, supposing our rules of evidence to be sound, we may be excused if we hesitate elsewhere to give it credence.

§ 4. The proof that God has revealed himself to man by special and express communications, and that Christianity constitutes that revelation, is no part of these inquiries. This has already been shown, in the most satisfactory manner, by others, who have written expressly upon this subject.<sup>4</sup> Referring therefore to their writings for the arguments and proofs, the fact will here be assumed as true. That man is a religious being, is universally conceded, for it has been seen to be universally true. He is everywhere a worshipper. In every age and country, and in every stage, from the highest intellectual culture to the darkest stupidity, he bows with homage to a superior Being. Be it the rude-carved idol of his own fabrication, or the unseen divinity that stirs within him, it is still the object of his adoration. This trait in the character of man is so uniform, that it may safely be assumed, either as one of the original attributes of his nature, or as necessarily resulting from the action of one or more of those attributes.

§ 5. The object of man's worship, whatever it be, will naturally be his standard of perfection. He clothes it with every attribute, belonging, in his view, to a perfect character; and this character he himself endeavours to attain. He may not, directly and consciously, aim to acquire every virtue of his deity, and to avoid the opposite vices; but still this will be the

---

<sup>4</sup> See Dr. Hopkins's Lowell Lectures, particularly Lect. 2. Bp. Wilson's Evidences of Christianity, Vol. i. pp. 45-61. Horne's Introduction, Vol. i. pp. 1-39. Mr. Horne having cited all the best English writers on this subject, it is sufficient to refer to his work alone.

inevitable consequence of sincere and constant worship. As in human society men become assimilated, both in manners and in moral principles, to their chosen associates, so in the worship of whatever deity men adore, they “form to his the relish of their souls.” To suppose, then, that God made man capable of religion, and requiring it in order to the development of the highest part of his nature, without communicating with him, as a father, in those revelations which alone could perfect that nature, would be a reproach upon God, and a contradiction.<sup>5</sup> [004]

§ 6. How it came to pass that man, originally taught, as we doubt not he was, to know and to worship the true Jehovah, is found, at so early a period of his history, a worshipper of baser objects, it is foreign to our present purpose to inquire. But the fact is lamentably true, that he soon became an idolater, a worshipper of moral abominations. The Scythians and Northmen adored the impersonations of heroic valour and of bloodthirsty and cruel revenge. The mythology of Greece and of Rome, though it exhibited a few examples of virtue and goodness, abounded in others of gross licentiousness and vice. The gods of Egypt were reptiles, and beasts and birds. The religion of Central and Eastern Asia was polluted with lust and cruelty, and smeared with blood, rioting, in deadly triumph, over all the tender affections of the human heart and all the convictions of the human understanding. Western and Southern Africa and Polynesia are, to this day, the abodes of frightful idolatry, cannibalism, and cruelty; and the aborigines of both the Americas are examples of the depths of superstition to which the human mind may be debased. In every quarter of the world, however, there is a striking uniformity seen, in all the features of paganism. The ruling principle of her religion is terror, and her deity is lewd and cruel. Whatever of purity the earlier forms of paganism may have possessed, it is evident from history that it was of brief duration. Every form,

---

<sup>5</sup> Hopkins's Lowell Lect., p. 48.

[005]

which history has preserved, grew rapidly and steadily worse and more corrupt, until the entire heathen world, before the coming of Christ, was infected with that loathsome leprosy of pollution, described with revolting vividness by St. Paul, in the beginning of his Epistle to the Romans.

§ 7. So general and decided was this proclivity to the worship of strange gods, that, at the time of the deluge, only one family remained faithful to Jehovah; and this was a family which had been favoured with his special revelation. **Indeed it is evident that nothing but a revelation from God could raise men from the degradation of pagan idolatry, because nothing else has ever had that effect.** If man could achieve his own freedom from this bondage, he would long since have been free. But instead of this, the increase of light and civilization and refinement in the pagan world has but multiplied the objects of his worship, added voluptuous refinements to its ritual, and thus increased the number and weight of his chains. In this respect there is no difference in their moral condition, between the barbarous Scythian and the learned Egyptian or Roman of ancient times, nor between the ignorant African and the polished Hindu of our own day. The only method, which has been successfully employed to deliver man from idolatry, is that of presenting to the eye of his soul an object of worship perfectly holy and pure, directly opposite, in moral character, to the gods he had formerly adored. **He could not transfer to his deities a better character than he himself possessed.** He must for ever remain enslaved to his idols, unless a new and pure object of worship were revealed to him, with a display of superior power sufficient to overcome his former faith and his present fears, to detach his affections from grosser objects, and to fix them upon that which alone is worthy.<sup>6</sup>

---

<sup>6</sup> It has been well remarked, that, if we regard man as in a state of innocence, we should naturally expect that God would hold communications with him; that if we regard him as guilty, and as having lost the knowledge and moral image of God, such a communication would be absolutely necessary, if man



This is precisely what God, as stated in the Holy Scriptures, has done. He rescued one family from idolatry in the Old World, by the revelation of himself to Noah; he called a distinct branch of this family to the knowledge of himself, in the person of Abraham and his sons; **He extended this favour to a whole nation, through the ministry of Moses; but it was through that of Jesus Christ alone that it was communicated to the whole world.** In Egypt, by the destruction of all the objects of the popular worship, God taught the Israelites that he alone was the self-existent Almighty. At the Red Sea, he emphatically showed them that He was the Protector and Saviour of his people. At Sinai, he revealed himself as the righteous Governor who required implicit obedience for men, and taught them, by the strongly marked distinctions of the ceremonial law, that he was a holy Being, of purer eyes than to behold evil, and that could not look upon iniquity. The demerit of sin was inculcated by the solemn infliction of death upon every animal, offered as a propitiatory sacrifice. And when, by this system of instruction, he had prepared a people to receive the perfect revelation of the character of God, of the nature of his worship, and of the way of restoration to his image and favour, this also was expressly revealed by the mission of his Son.<sup>7</sup> [006]

§ 8. That the books of the Old Testament, as we now have them, are genuine; that they existed in the time of our Saviour, and were commonly received and referred to among the Jews, as the sacred books of their religion;<sup>8</sup> and that the text of the Four Evangelists has been handed down to us in the state in which it was originally written, that is, without having been materially corrupted or falsified, either by heretics or Christians; are facts which we are entitled to assume as true, until the contrary is

---

was to be restored.—Dr. Hopkins's Lowell Lect., p. 62.

<sup>7</sup> The argument here briefly sketched, is stated more at large, and with great clearness and force, in an essay entitled "The Philosophy of the Plan of Salvation," pp. 13-107.

<sup>8</sup> See Professor Stuart's Critical History and Defence of the Old Testament Canon, where this is abundantly proved.

shown.

The genuineness of these writings really admits of as little doubt, and is susceptible of as ready proof, as that of any ancient writings whatever. The rule of municipal law on this subject is familiar, and applies with equal force to all ancient writing, whether documentary or otherwise; and as it comes first in order, in the prosecution of these inquiries, it may, for the sake of mere convenience, be designated as our first rule.

[007]

*Every document, apparently ancient, coming from the proper repository or custody, and bearing on its face no evident marks of forgery, the law presumes to be genuine, and devolves on the opposing party the burden of proving it to be otherwise.*

§ 9. An ancient document, offered in evidence in our courts, is said to come from the proper repository, when it is found in the place where, and under the care of persons with whom, such writings might naturally and reasonably be expected to be found; for it is this custody which gives authenticity to documents found within it.<sup>9</sup> If they come from such a place, and bear no evident

---

<sup>9</sup> Per Tindal, Ch. Just., in the case of the Bishop of Meath v. the Marquis of Winchester, 3 Bing. N. C. 183, 200, 201. "It is when documents are found in other than their proper places of deposit," observed the Chief Justice, "that the investigation commences, whether it was reasonable and natural, under the circumstances of the particular case, to expect that they should have been in the place where they are actually found; for it is obvious, that, which there can be only one place of deposit strictly and absolutely proper, there may be many and various, that are reasonable and probable, though differing in degree, some being more so, some less; and in these cases the proposition to be determined is, whether the actual custody is so reasonably and probably accounted for, that it impresses the mind with the conviction that the instrument found in such custody must be genuine." See the cases cited in 1 Greenleaf on Evidence § 142. See also 1 Stark. on Evidence, pp. 332-335, 381-386. Croughton v. Blake, 12 Mees. & Welsb. 205, 208. Doe v. Phillips, 10 Jurist, p. 34. It is this defect, namely, that they do not come from the proper or natural repository, which shows the fabulous character of many pretended revelations, from the Gospel of the Infancy to the Book of Mormon.

marks of forgery, the law presumes that they are genuine, and they are permitted to be read in evidence, unless the opposing party is able successfully to impeach them.<sup>10</sup> The burden of showing them to be false and unworthy of credit, is devolved on the party who makes that objection. The presumption of law is the judgment of charity. It presumes that every man is innocent until he is proven guilty; that everything has been done fairly and legally, until it is proved to have been otherwise; and that every document, found in its proper repository, and not bearing marks of forgery, is genuine. Now this is precisely the case with the Sacred Writings. They have been used in the church from time immemorial, and thus are found in the place where alone they ought to be looked for. They come to us, and challenge our reception of them as genuine writings, precisely as Domesday Book, the Ancient Statutes of Wales, or any other of the ancient documents which have recently been published under the British Record Commission, are received. [008] They are found in familiar use in all the churches of Christendom, as the sacred books to which all denominations of Christians refer, as the standard of their faith. There is no pretence that they were engraven on plates of gold and discovered in a cave, nor that they were brought from heaven by angels; but they are received as the plain narratives and writings of the men whose names they respectively bear, made public at the time they were written; and though there are some slight discrepancies among the copies subsequently made, there is no pretence that the originals were anywhere corrupted. If it be objected that the originals are lost, and that copies alone are now produced, the principles of the municipal law here also afford a satisfactory answer. For the multiplication of copies was a public fact, in the faithfulness of which all the Christian community had an interest, and it is a rule of law, that, *in matters of public and general interest, all persons must be presumed to be conversant,*

<sup>10</sup> 1 Greenleaf on Evid. § 34, 142, 570.

*on the principle that individuals are presumed to be conversant with their own affairs.* Therefore it is that, in such matters, the prevailing current of assertion is resorted to as evidence, for it is to this that every member of the community is supposed to be privy.<sup>11</sup> The persons, moreover, who multiplied these copies, may be regarded, in some manner, as the agents of the Christian public, for whose use and benefit the copies were made; and on the ground of the credit due to such agents, and of the public nature of the facts themselves, the copies thus made are entitled to an extraordinary degree of confidence, and, as in the case of official registers and other public books, it is not necessary that they should be confirmed and sanctioned by the ordinary tests of truth.<sup>12</sup> If any ancient document concerning our public rights were lost, copies which had been as universally received and acted upon as the Four Gospels have been, would have been received in evidence in any of our courts of justice, without the slightest hesitation. **The entire text of the Corpus Juris Civilis is received as authority in all the courts of continental Europe, upon much weaker evidence of its genuineness; for the integrity of the Sacred Text has been preserved by the jealousy of opposing sects, beyond any moral possibility of corruption; while that of the Roman Civil Law has been preserved only by tacit consent, without the interest of any opposing school, to watch over and preserve it from alteration.**

[009]

§ 10. These copies of the Holy Scriptures having thus been in familiar use in the churches, from the time when the text was committed to writing; having been watched with vigilance by so many sects, opposed to each other in doctrine, yet all appealing to these Scriptures for the correctness of their faith; and having in all ages, down to this day, been respected as the authoritative

<sup>11</sup> Morewood v. Wood, 14 East, 329, n. Per Lord Kenyon. Weeks v. Sparke, 1 M. & S. 686; the Berkeley Peerage Case, 4 Campb. 416. Per Mansfield, Ch. J. See 1 Greenleaf on Evidence, § 128.

<sup>12</sup> 1 Starkie on Evidence, pp. 195, 230; 1 Greenleaf on Evidence, § 483.

source of all ecclesiastical power and government, and submitted to, and acted under in regard to so many claims of right, on the one hand, and so many obligations of duty, on the other; it is quite erroneous to suppose that the Christian is bound to offer any further proof of their genuineness or authenticity. It is for the objector to show them spurious; for on him, by the plainest rules of law, lies the burden of proof.<sup>13</sup> If it were the case of a claim to a franchise, and a copy of an ancient deed or charter were produced in support of the title, under parallel circumstances on which to presume its genuineness, no lawyer, it is believed, would venture to deny either its admissibility in evidence, or the satisfactory character of the proof. In a recent case in the House of Lords, precisely such a document, being an old manuscript copy, purporting to have been extracted from ancient Journals [010] of the House, which were lost, and to have been made by an officer whose duty it was to prepare lists of the Peers, was held admissible in a claim of peerage.<sup>14</sup>

§ 11. Supposing, therefore, that it is not irrational, nor inconsistent with sound philosophy, to believe that God has made a special and express revelation of his character and will to man, and that the sacred books of our religion are genuine, as we now have them; we proceed to examine and compare the testimony of the Four Evangelists, as witnesses to the life and doctrines of Jesus Christ; in order to determine the degree of credit, to which, by the rules of evidence applied in human tribunals, they are justly entitled. Our attention will naturally be

---

<sup>13</sup> The arguments for the genuineness and authenticity of the books of the Holy Scriptures are briefly, yet very fully stated, and almost all the writers of authority are referred to by Mr. Horne, in his *Introduction to the Study of the Holy Scriptures*, vol. i., *passim*. The same subject is discussed in a more popular manner in the *Lectures of Bp. Wilson*, and of *Bp. Sumner of Chester*, on the *Evidences of Christianity*; and, in America, the same question, as it relates to the Gospels, has been argued by *Bp. M'Ilvaine*, in his *Lectures*.

<sup>14</sup> See the case of the *Slane Peerage*, 5 *Clark & Finelly's Rep.*, p. 24. See also the case of the *Fitzwalter Peerage*, 10 *Clark & Finelly's Rep.*, p. 948.

first directed to the witnesses themselves, to see who and what manner of men they were, and we shall take them in the order of their writings; stating the prominent traits only in their lives and characters, as they are handed down to us by credible historians.

§ 12. MATTHEW, called also LEVI, was a Jew of Galilee, but of what city is uncertain. He held the place of publican, or tax-gatherer, under the Roman government, and his office seems to have consisted in collecting the taxes within his district, as well as the duties and customs levied on goods and persons, passing in and out of his district or province, across the lake of Genesareth. While engaged in this business, at the office or usual place of collection, he was required by Jesus to follow him, as one of his disciples; a command which he immediately obeyed. Soon afterwards, he appears to have given a great entertainment to his fellow-publicans and friends, at which Jesus was present; intending probably both to celebrate his own change of profession, and to give them an opportunity to profit by the teaching of his new Master.<sup>15</sup> He was constituted one of the twelve apostles, and constantly attended the person of Jesus as a faithful follower, until the crucifixion; and after the ascension of his Master he preached the gospel for some time, with the other apostles, in Judea, and afterwards in Ethiopia, where he died.

[011]

He is generally allowed to have written first, of all the evangelists; but whether in the Hebrew or the Greek language, or in both, the learned are not agreed, nor is it material to our purpose to inquire; the genuineness of our present Greek gospel being sustained by satisfactory evidence.<sup>16</sup> The precise time when he wrote is also uncertain, the several dates given to it among learned men, varying from A.D. 37 to A.D. 64. The earlier date, however, is argued with greater force, from the improbability that the Christians would be left for several years without a general

<sup>15</sup> Matt. ix. 10; Mark ii. 14, 15; Luke v. 29.

<sup>16</sup> The authorities on this subject are collected in Horne's Introduction, vol. iv. pp. 234-238, part 2, chap. ii. sec. 2.

and authentic history of our Saviour's ministry; from the evident allusions which it contains to a state of persecution in the church at the time it was written; from the titles of sanctity ascribed to Jerusalem, and a higher veneration testified for the temple than is found in the other and later evangelists; from the comparative gentleness with which Herod's character and conduct are dealt with, that bad prince probably being still in power; and from the frequent mention of Pilate, as still governor of Judea.<sup>17</sup>

§ 13. That Matthew was himself a native Jew, familiar with the opinions, ceremonies, and customs of his countrymen; that he was conversant with the Sacred Writings, and habituated to their idiom; a man of plain sense, but of little learning, except what he derived from the Scriptures of the Old Testament; that he wrote seriously and from conviction, and had, on most occasions, been present, and attended closely, to the transactions which he relates, and relates, too, without any view of applause to himself; are facts which we may consider established by internal evidence, as strong as the nature of the case will admit. It is deemed equally well proved, both by internal evidence and the aid of history, that he wrote for the use of his countrymen the Jews. Every circumstance is noticed which might conciliate their belief, and every unnecessary expression is avoided which might obstruct it. They looked for the Messiah, of the lineage of David, and born in Bethlehem, in the circumstances of whose life the prophecies should find fulfilment, a matter, in their estimation, of peculiar value; and to all these this evangelist has directed their especial attention.<sup>18</sup>

[012]

§ 14. Allusion has been already made to his employment as a collector of taxes and customs; but the subject is too important to be passed over without further notice. The tribute imposed by the Romans upon countries conquered by their arms was

<sup>17</sup> See Horne's Introduction, vol. iv. p. 229-232.

<sup>18</sup> See Campbell on the Four Gospels, vol. iii. pp. 35, 36; Preface to St. Matthew's Gospel, § 22, 23.

enormous. In the time of Pompey, the sums annually exacted from their Asiatic provinces, of which Judea was one, amounted to about four millions and a half sterling, or about twenty-two millions of dollars. These exactions were made in the usual forms of direct and indirect taxation; the rate of the customs on merchandise varying from an eighth to a fortieth part of the value of the commodity; and the tariff including all the principal articles of the commerce of the East, much of which, as is well known, still found its way to Italy through Palestine, as well as by the way of Damascus and of Egypt. The direct taxes consisted of a capitation-tax and a land-tax, assessed upon a valuation or census, periodically taken, under the oath of the individual, with heavy penal sanctions.<sup>19</sup> It is natural to suppose that these taxes were not voluntarily paid, especially since they were imposed by the conqueror upon a conquered people, and by a heathen, too, upon the people of the house of Israel. The increase of taxes has generally been found to multiply discontents, evasions and frauds on the one hand, and, on the other, to increase vigilance, suspicion, close scrutiny, and severity of exaction. The penal code, as revised by Theodosius, will give us some notion of the difficulties in the way of the revenue officers, in the earlier times of which we are speaking. These difficulties must have been increased by the fact that, at this period, a considerable portion of the commerce of that part of the world was carried on by the Greeks, whose ingenuity and want of faith were proverbial. It was to such an employment and under such circumstances, that Matthew was educated; an employment which must have made him acquainted with the Greek language, and extensively conversant with the public affairs and the men of business of

[013]

---

<sup>19</sup> See Gibbon's *Rome*, vol. i. ch. vi. and vol. iii. ch. xvii. and authorities there cited. *Cod. Theod. Lib. xi. tit. 1-28*, with the notes of Gothofred. Gibbon treats particularly of the revenues of a later period than our Saviour's time; but the general course of proceeding, in the levy and collection of taxes, is not known to have been changed since the beginning of the empire.



his time; thus entitling him to our confidence, as an experienced and intelligent observer of events passing before him. And if the men of that day were, as in truth they appear to have been, as much disposed as those of the present time, to evade the payment of public taxes and duties, and to elude, by all possible means, the vigilance of the revenue officers, **Matthew must have been familiar with a great variety of the forms of fraud, imposture, cunning, and deception, and must have become habitually distrustful, scrutinizing, and cautious; and, of course, much less likely to have been deceived in regard to many of the facts in our Lord's ministry, extraordinary as they were, which fell under his observation. This circumstance shows both the sincerity and the wisdom of Jesus, in selecting him for an eye-witness of his conduct, and adds great weight to the value of the testimony of this evangelist.**

§ 15. MARK was the son of a pious sister of Barnabas, named Mary, who dwelt at Jerusalem, and at whose home the early Christians often assembled. His Hebrew name was John; the surname of Mark having been adopted, as is supposed, when he left Judea to preach the gospel in foreign countries; a practice not unusual among the Jews of that age, who frequently, upon such occasions, assumed a name more familiar than their own to the people whom they visited. He is supposed to have been converted to the Christian faith by the ministry of Peter. He travelled from Jerusalem to Antioch with Paul and Barnabas, and afterwards accompanied them elsewhere. When they landed at Perga in Pamphylia, he left them and returned to Jerusalem; for which reason, when he afterwards would have gone with them, Paul refused to take him. Upon this, a difference of opinion arose between the two apostles, and they separated, Barnabas taking Mark with him to Cyprus. Subsequently he accompanied Timothy to Rome, at the express desire of Paul. From this city he probably went into Asia, where he found Peter, with whom he returned to Rome, in which city he is supposed to have written

[014]

and published his Gospel. Such is the outline of his history, as it is furnished by the New Testament.<sup>20</sup> The early historians add, that after this he went into Egypt and planted a church in Alexandria, where he died.<sup>21</sup>

§ 16. It is agreed that Mark wrote his Gospel for the use of Gentile converts; an opinion deriving great force from the explanations introduced into it, which would have been useless to a Jew;<sup>22</sup> and that it was composed for those at Rome, is believed, not only from the numerous Latinisms it contains, but from the unanimous testimony of ancient writers, and from the internal evidence afforded by the Gospel itself.

§ 17. Some have entertained the opinion that Mark compiled his account from that of Matthew, of which they supposed it an abridgment. But this notion has been refuted by Koppe, and others,<sup>23</sup> and is now generally regarded as untenable. For Mark frequently deviates from Matthew in the order of time, in his arrangement of facts; and he adds many things not related by the other evangelists; neither of which a mere epitomizer would probably have done. He also omits several things related by Matthew, and imperfectly describes others, especially the transactions of Christ with the apostles after the resurrection; giving no account whatever of his appearance in Galilee; omissions irreconcilable with any previous knowledge of the Gospel according to Matthew. To these proofs we may add, that in several places there are discrepancies between the accounts of Matthew and Mark, not, indeed, irreconcilable, but sufficient to destroy the probability that the latter copied from

---

<sup>20</sup> Acts xii. 12, 25; xiii. 5, 13; and xv. 36-41; 2 Tim. iv. 11; Phil. 24; Col. iv. 10; 1 Pet. v. 13.

<sup>21</sup> Horne's Introduction, vol. iv. pp. 252, 253.

<sup>22</sup> Mark vii. 2, 11; and ix. 43, and elsewhere.

<sup>23</sup> Mr. Norton has conclusively disposed of this objection, in his *Evidences of the Genuineness of the Gospels*, vol. i. Additional Notes, sec. 2, pp. cxv-cxxxii.

the former.<sup>24</sup> The striking coincidences between them, in style, words, and things, in other places, may be accounted for by considering that Peter, who is supposed to have dictated this Gospel to Mark, was quite as intimately acquainted as Matthew with the miracles and discourses of our Lord; which, therefore, he would naturally recite in his preaching; and that the same things might very naturally be related in the same manner, by men who sought not after excellency of speech. Peter's agency in the narrative of Mark is asserted by all ancient writers, and is confirmed by the fact, that his humility is conspicuous in every part of it, where anything is or might be related of him; his weaknesses and fall being fully exposed, while things which might redound to his honour, are either omitted or but slightly mentioned; that scarcely any transaction of Jesus is related, at which Peter was not present, and that all are related with that circumstantial minuteness which belongs to the testimony of an eye-witness.<sup>25</sup> We may, therefore, regard the Gospel of Mark as an original composition, written at the dictation of Peter, and consequently as another original narrative of the life, miracles, and doctrines of our Lord. [015]

§ 18. LUKE, according to Eusebius, was a native of Antioch, by profession a physician, and for a considerable period a companion of the apostle Paul. From the casual notices of him in the Scriptures, and from the early Christian writers, it has been collected, that his parents were Gentiles, but that he in his youth embraced Judaism, from which he was converted to Christianity. The first mention of him is that he was with Paul at Troas;<sup>26</sup> whence he appears to have attended him to Jerusalem; continued with him in all his troubles in Judea; and sailed with him when he was sent a prisoner from Cæsarea to Rome, where he remained

<sup>24</sup> Compare Mark x. 46, and xiv. 69, and iv. 35, and i. 35, and ix. 28, with Matthew's narrative of the same events.

<sup>25</sup> See Horne's Introd. vol. iv. pp 252-259.

<sup>26</sup> Acts xvi. 10, 11.

with him during his two years' confinement. As none of the ancient fathers have mentioned his having suffered martyrdom, it is generally supposed that he died a natural death.

§ 19. That he wrote his Gospel for the benefit of Gentile converts is affirmed by the unanimous voice of Christian antiquity; and it may also be inferred from its dedication to a Gentile. He is particularly careful to specify various circumstances conducive to the information of strangers, but not so to the Jews; he gives the lineage of Jesus upwards, after the manner of the Gentiles, instead of downwards, as Matthew had done; tracing it up to Adam, and thus showing that Jesus was the promised seed of the woman; and he marks the eras of his birth, and of the ministry of John, by the reigns of the Roman emperors. He also has introduced several things, not mentioned by the other evangelists, but highly encouraging to the Gentiles to turn to God in the hope of pardon and acceptance; of which description are the parables of the publican and pharisee, in the temple; the lost piece of silver; and the prodigal son; and the fact of Christ's visit to Zaccheus the publican, and the pardon of the penitent thief.

§ 20. That Luke was a physician, appears not only from the testimony of Paul,<sup>27</sup> but from the internal marks in his Gospel, showing that he was both an acute observer, and had given particular and even professional attention to all our Saviour's miracles of healing. Thus, the man whom Matthew and Mark describe simply as a leper, Luke describes as *full* of leprosy;<sup>28</sup> he, whom they mention as having a withered hand, Luke says had his *right* hand withered;<sup>29</sup> and of the maid, of whom the others say that Jesus took her by the hand and she arose, he adds, that *her spirit came to her again*.<sup>30</sup> He alone, with professional accuracy

<sup>27</sup> Col. iv. 14. Luke, the beloved physician.

<sup>28</sup> Luke v. 12; Matt. viii. 2; Mark i. 40.

<sup>29</sup> Luke vi. 6; Matt. xii. 10; Mark iii. 1.

<sup>30</sup> Luke viii. 55; Matt. ix. 25; Mark v. 42.

of observation, says that *virtue went out* of Jesus, and healed the sick;<sup>31</sup> he alone states the fact that the sleep of the disciples in Gethsemane was *induced by extreme sorrow*; and mentions the blood-like sweat of Jesus, as occasioned by the *intensity of his agony*; and he alone relates the miraculous healing of Malchus's ear.<sup>32</sup> That he was also a man of a liberal education, the comparative elegance of his writings sufficiently show.<sup>33</sup>

§ 21. The design of Luke's Gospel was to supersede the defective and inaccurate narratives then in circulation, and to deliver to Theophilus, to whom it is addressed, a full and authentic account of the life, doctrines, miracles, death and resurrection of our Saviour. Who Theophilus was, the learned are not perfectly agreed; but the most probable opinion is that of Dr. Lardner, now generally adopted, that, as Luke wrote his Gospel in Greece, Theophilus was a man of rank in that country.<sup>34</sup> Either the relations subsisting between him and Luke, or the dignity and power of his rank, or both, induced the evangelist, who himself also "had perfect understanding of all things from the first," to devote the utmost care to the drawing up of a complete and authentic narrative of these great events. He does not affirm himself to have been an eye-witness; though his personal knowledge of some of the transactions may well be inferred from the "perfect understanding" which he says he possessed. Some of the learned seem to have drawn this inference as to them all, and to have placed him in the class of original witnesses; but this opinion, though maintained on strong and plausible grounds, is not generally adopted. If, then, he did not write from his own personal knowledge, the question is, what is [017]

---

<sup>31</sup> Luke vi. 19.

<sup>32</sup> Luke xxii. 44, 45, 51.

<sup>33</sup> See Horne's Introd. vol. iv. pp. 260-272, where references may be found to earlier writers.

<sup>34</sup> See Lardner's Works, 8vo. vol. vi. pp. 138, 139; 4to. vol. iii. pp. 203, 204; and other authors, cited in Horne's Introd. vol. iv. p. 267.

the legal character of his testimony?

§ 22. If it were “the result of inquiries, made under competent public authority, concerning matters in which the public are concerned”<sup>35</sup> it would possess every legal attribute of an inquisition, and, as such, would be legally admissible in evidence, in a court of justice. To entitle such results, however, to our full confidence, it is not necessary that they should be obtained under a legal commission; it is sufficient if the inquiry is gravely undertaken and pursued, by a person of competent intelligence, sagacity and integrity. The request of a person in authority, or a desire to serve the public, are, to all moral intents, as sufficient a motive as a legal commission.<sup>36</sup> Thus, we know that when complaint is made to the head of a department, of official misconduct or abuse, existing in some remote quarter, nothing is more common than to send some confidential person to the spot, to ascertain the facts and report them to the department; and this report is confidently adopted as the basis of its discretionary action, in the correction of the abuse, or the removal of the offender. Indeed, the result of any grave inquiry is equally certain to receive our confidence, though it may have been voluntarily undertaken, if the party making it had access to the means of complete and satisfactory information upon the subject.<sup>37</sup> If, therefore, Luke's Gospel were

[018]

<sup>35</sup> 2 Phillips on Evidence, p. 95, (9th edition.)

<sup>36</sup> When Abbot, Archbishop of Canterbury, in shooting at deer with a cross-bow, in Bramsil park, accidentally killed the keeper, King James I. by a letter dated Oct. 3, 1621, requested the Lord Keeper, the Lord Chief Justice, and others, to inquire into the circumstances and consider the case and “the scandal that may have risen thereupon,” and to certify the King what it may amount to. Could there be any reasonable doubt of their report of the facts, thus ascertained? See Spelman's Posthumous Works, p. 121.

<sup>37</sup> The case of the ill-fated steamer *President* furnishes an example of this sort of inquiry. This vessel, it is well-known, sailed from New York for London in the month of March, 1841 having on board many passengers, some of whom were highly connected. The ship was soon overtaken by a storm, after which she was never heard of. A few months afterwards a solemn inquiry

to be regarded only as the work of a contemporary historian, it would be entitled to our confidence. But it is more than this. It is the result of careful inquiry and examination, made by a person of science, intelligence and education, concerning subjects which he was perfectly competent to investigate, and as to many of which he was peculiarly skilled, they being cases of the cure of maladies; subjects, too, of which he already had the perfect knowledge of a contemporary, and perhaps an eye-witness, but beyond doubt, familiar with the parties concerned in the transactions, and belonging to the community in which the events transpired, which were in the mouths of all; and the narrative, moreover, drawn up for the especial use, and probably at the request, of a man of distinction, whom it would not be for the interest nor safety of the writer to deceive or mislead. Such a document certainly possesses all the moral attributes of an inquest of office, or of any other official investigation of facts; and as such is entitled, *in foro conscientiæ*, to be adduced as original, competent and satisfactory evidence of the matters it contains. [019]

§ 23. JOHN, the last of the evangelists, was the son of Zebedee, a fisherman of the town of Bethsaida, on the sea of Galilee. His father appears to have been a respectable man in his calling, owning his vessel and having hired servants.<sup>38</sup> His mother, too, was among those who followed Jesus and “ministered unto him<sup>39</sup>,” and to John himself, Jesus, when on the cross, confided the care and support of his own mother.<sup>40</sup> This disciple also

---

was instituted by three gentlemen of respectability, one of whom was a British admiral, another was agent for the underwriters at Lloyd's, and the other a government packet agent, concerning the time, circumstances and causes of that disaster; the result of which was communicated to the public, under their hands. This document received universal confidence, and no further inquiry was made.

<sup>38</sup> Mark i. 20.

<sup>39</sup> John xix. 26, 27.

<sup>40</sup> John xiii. 23.

seems to have been favourably known to the high priest, and to have influence in his family; by means of which he had the privilege of being present in his palace at the examination of his Master, and of introducing also Peter, his friend.<sup>41</sup> He was the youngest of the apostles, was eminently the object of our Lord's regard and confidence; was on various occasions admitted to free and intimate intercourse with him; and is described as "the disciple whom Jesus loved."<sup>42</sup> Hence he was present at several scenes, to which most of the others were not admitted. He alone, in company with Peter and James, was present at the resurrection of Jairus's daughter, at the transfiguration on the mount, and at the agony of our Saviour in the garden of Gethsemane.<sup>43</sup> He was the only apostle who followed Jesus to the cross, he was the first of them at the sepulchre, and he was present at the several appearances of our Lord after his resurrection. These circumstances, together with his intimate friendship with the mother of Jesus, especially qualify him to give a circumstantial and authentic account of the life of his Master. After the ascension of Christ, and the effusion of the Holy Spirit on the day of Pentecost, John became one of the chief apostles of the circumcision, exercising his ministry in and near Jerusalem. From ecclesiastical history we learn that, after the death of Mary the mother of Jesus, he proceeded to Asia Minor, where he founded and presided over seven churches, in as many cities, but resided chiefly at Ephesus. Thence he was banished, in Domitian's reign, to the isle of Patmos, where he wrote his Revelation. On the accession of Nerva he was freed from exile, and returned to Ephesus, where he wrote his Gospel and Epistles, and died at the age of one hundred years, about A.D. 100, in the third year of the emperor Trajan.<sup>44</sup>

[020]

---

<sup>41</sup> Matt. xxvii. 55, 56; Mark xv. 40, 41.

<sup>42</sup> John xviii. 15, 16.

<sup>43</sup> Luke viii. 51; Matt. xvii. 1, and xxvi. 37.

<sup>44</sup> This account is abridged from Horne's *Introd.* vol. iv. pp. 286-288.



§ 24. The learned are not agreed as to the time when the Gospel of John was written, some dating it as early as the year 68, others as late as the year 98; but it is generally conceded to have been written after all the others. That it could not have been the work of some Platonic Christian of a subsequent age, as some have without evidence asserted, is manifest from references to it by some of the early fathers, and from the concurring testimony of many other writers of the ancient Christian church.<sup>45</sup>

§ 25. That it was written either with especial reference to the Gentiles, or at a period when very many of them had become converts to Christianity, is inferred from the various explanations it contains, beyond the other Gospels, which could have been necessary only to persons unacquainted with Jewish names and customs.<sup>46</sup> And that it was written after all the others, and to supply their omissions, is concluded, not only from the uniform tradition and belief in the church, but from his studied omission of most of the transactions noticed by the others, and from his care to mention several incidents which they have not recorded. That their narratives were known to him, is too evident to admit of doubt; while his omission to repeat what they had already stated, or, where he does mention the same things, his relating them in a brief and cursory manner, affords incidental but strong testimony that he regarded their accounts as faithful and true.<sup>47</sup>

§ 26. Such are the brief histories of the men, whose narratives we are to examine and compare; conducting the examination and weighing the testimony by the same rules and principles which govern our tribunals of justice in similar cases. These tribunals are in such cases governed by the following fundamental rule:— [021]

*In trials of fact, by oral testimony, the proper inquiry is not whether it is possible that the testimony may be false, but*

<sup>45</sup> Horne's Introd. vol. iv. p. 289, and authors there cited.

<sup>46</sup> See, among others, John i. 38, 41, and ii. 6, 13, and iv. 9, and xi. 55.

<sup>47</sup> See Horne's Introd. vol. iv. pp. 297, 298.

*whether there is sufficient probability that it is true.*

It should be observed that the subject of inquiry is matter of fact, and not of abstract mathematical truth. The latter alone is susceptible of that high degree of proof, usually termed demonstration, which excludes the possibility of error, and which therefore may reasonably be required in support of every mathematical deduction. But the proof of matters of fact rests upon moral evidence alone; by which is meant not merely that species of evidence which is employed in cases respecting moral conduct, but all the evidence which we do not obtain either from our own senses, from intuition, or from demonstration. In the ordinary affairs of life we do not require nor expect demonstrative evidence, because it is inconsistent with the nature of matters of fact, and to insist on its production would be unreasonable and absurd. And it makes no difference, whether the facts to be proved relate to this life or to the next, the nature of the evidence required being in both cases the same. The error of the sceptic consists in pretending or supposing that there is a difference in the nature of the evidence, where there is no difference in the nature of the things to be proved; and in demanding demonstrative evidence concerning things which are not susceptible of any other than moral evidence alone, and of which the utmost that can be said is that there is no reasonable doubt of their truth.<sup>48</sup>

§ 27. In proceeding to weigh the evidence of any proposition of fact, the previous question to be determined is, *when* may it be said to be proved? The answer to this question is furnished by another rule of municipal law, which may be thus stated:—

*A proposition of fact is proved, when its truth is established by competent and satisfactory evidence.*

[022]

By competent evidence, is meant such as the nature of the

---

<sup>48</sup> See Gambier's Guide to the Study of Moral Evidence, p. 121.

thing to be proved requires; and by satisfactory evidence, is meant that amount of proof, which ordinarily satisfies an unprejudiced mind, beyond any reasonable doubt. The circumstances which will amount to this degree of proof can never be previously defined; the only legal test to which they can be subjected is, their sufficiency to satisfy the mind and conscience of a man of common prudence and discretion, and so to convince him, that he would venture to act upon that conviction in matters of the highest concern and importance to his own interest.<sup>49</sup> If, therefore, the subject is a problem in mathematics, its truth is to be shown by the certainty of demonstrative evidence. But if it is a question of fact in human affairs, nothing more than moral evidence can be required, for this is the best evidence which, from the nature of the case, is attainable. Now as the facts, stated in Scripture History, are not of the former kind, but are cognizable by the senses, they may be said to be proved when they are established by that kind and degree of evidence which, as we have just observed, would, in the affairs of human life, satisfy the mind and conscience of a common man. When we have this degree of evidence, it is unreasonable to require more. A juror would violate his oath, if he should refuse to acquit or condemn a person charged with an offence, where this measure of proof was adduced.

§ 28. Proceeding further, to inquire whether the facts related by the Four Evangelists are proved by competent and satisfactory evidence, we are led, first, to consider on which side lies the burden of establishing the credibility of the witnesses. On this point the municipal law furnishes a rule, which is of constant application in all trials by jury, and is indeed the dictate of that charity which thinketh no evil.

*In the absence of circumstances which generate suspicion,*

---

<sup>49</sup> 1 Stark. Evid. pp. 514, 577; 1 Greenl. on Evid. §§ 1, 2; Wills on Circumstantial Evid., p. 2; Whately's Logic, b. iv. ch. iii. § 1.

*every witness is to be presumed credible, until the contrary is shown; the burden of impeaching his credibility lying on the objector.*<sup>50</sup>

[023]

This rule serves to show the injustice with which the writers of the Gospels have ever been treated by infidels; an injustice silently acquiesced in even by Christians; in requiring the Christian affirmatively, and by positive evidence, *aliunde*, to establish the credibility of his witnesses above all others, before their testimony is entitled to be considered, and in permitting the testimony of a single profane writer, alone and uncorroborated, to outweigh that of any single Christian. This is not the course in courts of chancery, where the testimony of a single witness is never permitted to outweigh the oath even of the defendant himself, interested as he is in the cause; but, on the contrary, if the plaintiff, after having required the oath of his adversary, cannot overthrow it by something more than the oath of one witness, however credible, it must stand as evidence against him. But the Christian writer seems, by the usual course of the argument, to have been deprived of the common presumption of charity in his favour; and reversing the ordinary rule of administering justice in human tribunals, his testimony is unjustly presumed to be false, until it is proved to be true. This treatment moreover, has been applied to them all in a body; and, without due regard to the fact, that, being independent historians, writing at different periods, they are entitled to the support of each other: they have been treated, in the argument, almost as if the New Testament were the entire production, at once, of a body of men, conspiring by a joint fabrication, to impose a false religion upon the world. It is time that this injustice should cease, that the testimony of the evangelists should be admitted to be true, until it can be disproved by those who would impugn it; that the silence of one sacred writer on any point, should no more detract from his own

<sup>50</sup> See 1 Stark. Evid. pp. 16, 480, 521.

veracity or that of the other historians, than the like circumstance is permitted to do among profane writers; and that the Four Evangelists should be admitted in corroboration of each other, as readily as Josephus and Tacitus, or Polybius and Livy.<sup>51</sup> [024]

§ 29. But if the burden of establishing the credibility of the evangelists were devolved on those who affirm the truth of their narratives, it is still capable of a ready moral demonstration, when we consider the nature and character of the testimony, and the essential marks of difference between true narratives of facts and the creations of falsehood. It is universally admitted that the credit to be given to witnesses depends chiefly on their ability to discern and comprehend what was before them, their opportunities for observation, the degree of accuracy with which they are accustomed to mark passing events, and their integrity in relating them. The rule of municipal law on this subject embraces all these particulars, and is thus stated by a legal text-writer of the highest repute. [025]

---

will not be unacceptable to the reader. "In other cases, when we compare the narratives of contemporary historians, it is not expected that all the circumstances alluded to by one will be taken notice of by the rest; and it often happens that an event or a custom is admitted upon the faith of a single historian; and the silence of all other writers is not suffered to attach suspicion or discredit to his testimony. It is an allowed principle, that a scrupulous resemblance betwixt two histories is very far from necessary to their being held consistent with one another. And what is more, it sometimes happens that, with contemporary historians, there may be an apparent contradiction, and the credit of both parties remain as entire and unsuspicious as before. Posterity is, in these cases, disposed to make the most liberal allowances. Instead of calling it a contradiction, they often call it a difficulty. They are sensible that, in many instances a seeming variety of statement has, upon a more extensive knowledge of ancient history, admitted of a perfect reconciliation. Instead, then, of referring the difficulty in question to the inaccuracy or bad faith of any of the parties, they, with more justness and more modesty, refer it to their own ignorance, and to that obscurity which necessarily hangs over the history of every remote age. These principles are suffered to have great influence in every secular investigation; but so soon as, instead of a secular, it becomes a sacred investigation, every ordinary principle is abandoned, and the suspicion annexed to the teachers of religion is carried to the dereliction of all that

*The credit due to the testimony of witnesses depends upon, firstly, their honesty; secondly, their ability; thirdly, their number and the consistency of their testimony; fourthly, the conformity of their testimony with experience; and fifthly, the coincidence of their testimony with collateral circum-*

---

candour and liberality with which every other document of antiquity is judged of and appreciated. How does it happen that the authority of Josephus should be acquiesced in as a first principle, while every step, in the narrative of the evangelists, must have foreign testimony to confirm and support it? How comes it, that the silence of Josephus should be construed into an impeachment of the testimony of the evangelists, while it is never admitted, for a single moment, that the silence of the evangelists can impart the slightest blemish to the testimony of Josephus? How comes it, that the supposition of two Philips in one family should throw a damp of scepticism over the Gospel narrative, while the only circumstance which renders that supposition necessary is the single testimony of Josephus; in which very testimony it is necessarily implied that there are two Herods in that same family? How comes it, that the evangelists, with as much internal, and a vast deal more of external evidence in their favour, should be made to stand before Josephus, like so many prisoners at the bar of justice? In any other case, we are convinced that this would be looked upon as *rough handling*. But we are not sorry for it. It has given more triumph and confidence to the argument. And it is no small addition to our faith, that its first teachers have survived an examination, which, in point of rigour and severity, we believe to be quite unexampled in the annals of criticism.” See Chalmers's Evidences, pp. 72-74.

<sup>51</sup> This subject has been treated by Dr. Chalmers, in his Evidences of the

*stances.*<sup>52</sup>

Let the evangelists be tried by these tests.

§ 30. And *first*, as to their *honesty*. Here they are entitled to the benefit of the general course of human experience, that men ordinarily speak the truth, when they have no prevailing motive or inducement to the contrary. This presumption, to which we have before alluded, is applied in courts of justice, even to witnesses whose integrity is not wholly free from suspicion; much more is it applicable to the evangelists, whose testimony went against all their worldly interests. The great truths which the apostles declared, were, that Christ had risen from the dead, and that only through repentance from sin, and faith in him, could men hope for salvation. This doctrine they asserted with one voice, everywhere, not only under the greatest discouragements, but in the face of the most appalling terrors that can be presented to the mind of man. Their master had recently perished as a malefactor, by the sentence of a public tribunal. His religion sought to overthrow the religions of the whole world. The laws of every country were against the teachings of his disciples. The interests and passions of all the rulers and great men in the world were against them. The fashion of the world was against them. Propagating this new faith, even in the most inoffensive and peaceful manner, they could expect nothing but contempt, opposition, revilings, bitter persecutions, stripes, imprisonments, torments and cruel deaths. Yet this faith they zealously did propagate; and all these miseries they endured undismayed, nay, [026] rejoicing. As one after another was put to a miserable death, the survivors only prosecuted their work with increased vigour and resolution. The annals of military warfare afford scarcely an example of the like heroic constancy, patience and unblenching courage. They had every possible motive to review carefully the

---

Christian Revelation, chapter iii. The following extract from his observations

<sup>52</sup> See 1 Stark. Evid. pp. 480, 545.

grounds of their faith, and the evidences of the great facts and truths which they asserted; and these motives were pressed upon their attention with the most melancholy and terrific frequency. It was therefore impossible that they could have persisted in affirming the truths they have narrated, had not Jesus actually risen from the dead, and had they not known this fact as certainly as they knew any other fact.<sup>53</sup> If it were morally possible for them to have been deceived in this matter, every human motive operated to lead them to discover and avow their error. To have persisted in so gross a falsehood, after it was known to them, was not only to encounter, for life, all the evils which man could inflict, from without, but to endure also the pangs of inward and conscious guilt, with no hope of future peace, no testimony of a good conscience, no expectation of honour or esteem among men, no hope of happiness in this life, or in the world to come.

§ 31. Such conduct in the apostles would moreover have been utterly irreconcilable with the fact, that they possessed the ordinary constitution of our common nature. Yet their lives do show them to have been men like all others of our race; swayed by the same motives, animated by the same hopes, affected by the same joys, subdued by the same sorrows, agitated by the same fears, and subject to the same passions, temptations and infirmities, as ourselves. And their writings show them to have been men of vigorous understandings. If then their testimony was not true, there was no possible motive for its fabrication.

§ 32. It would also have been irreconcilable with the fact that they were good men. But it is impossible to read their writings,

[027]

---

<sup>53</sup> If the witnesses could be supposed to have been biassed, this would destroy their testimony to matters of fact; it would only detract from the weight of their judgment in matters of opinion. The rule of law on this subject has been thus stated by Dr. Lushington: "When you examine the testimony of witnesses nearly connected with the parties, and there is nothing very peculiar tending to destroy their credit, when they depose to mere facts, their testimony is to be believed; when they depose as to matter of opinion, it is to be received with suspicion." *Dillon v. Dillon*, 3 Curteis's Eccl. Rep. pp. 96, 102.



and not feel that we are conversing with men eminently holy, and of tender consciences, with men acting under an abiding sense of the presence and omniscience of God, and of their accountability to him, living in his fear, and walking in his ways. Now, though, in a single instance, a good man may fall, when under strong temptations, yet he is not found persisting, for years, in deliberate falsehood, asserted with the most solemn appeals to God, without the slightest temptation or motive, and against all the opposing interests which reign in the human breast. If, on the contrary, they are supposed to have been bad men, it is incredible that such men should have chosen this form of imposture; enjoining, as it does, unfeigned repentance, the utter forsaking and abhorrence of all falsehood and of every other sin, the practice of daily self-denial, self-abasement and self-sacrifice, the crucifixion of the flesh with all its earthly appetites and desires, indifference to the honours, and hearty contempt of the vanities of the world; and inculcating perfect purity of heart and life, and intercourse of the soul with heaven. It is incredible, that bad men should invent falsehoods, to promote the religion of the God of truth. The supposition is suicidal. If they did believe in a future state of retribution, a heaven and a hell hereafter, they took the most certain course, if false witnesses, to secure the latter for their portion. And if, still being bad men, they did not believe in future punishment, how came they to invent falsehoods, the direct and certain tendency of which was to destroy all their prospects of worldly honour and happiness, and to ensure their misery in this life? From these absurdities there is no escape, but in the perfect conviction and admission that they were good men, testifying to that which they had carefully observed and considered, and well knew to be true.<sup>54</sup>

[028]

§ 33. In the *second* place, as to their *ability*. The text writer

---

<sup>54</sup> This subject has been so fully treated by Dr. Paley, in his view of the Evidences of Christianity, Part I., Prop. I., that is it unnecessary to pursue it farther in this place.

before cited observes, that the ability of a witness to speak the truth, depends on the opportunities which he has had for observing the fact, the accuracy of his powers of discerning, and the faithfulness of his memory in retaining the facts, once observed and known.<sup>55</sup> Of the latter trait, in these witnesses, we of course know nothing; nor have we any traditionary information in regard to the accuracy of their powers of discerning. But we may well suppose that in these respects they were like the generality of their countrymen, until the contrary is shown by an objector. It is always to be presumed that men are honest, and of sound mind, and of the average and ordinary degree of intelligence. This is not the judgment of mere charity; it is also the uniform presumption of the law of the land; a presumption which is always allowed freely and fully to operate, until the fact is shown to be otherwise, by the party who denies the applicability of this presumption to the particular case in question. Whenever an objection is raised in opposition to the ordinary presumptions of law, or to the ordinary experience of mankind, the burden of proof is devolved on the objector, by the common and ordinary rules of evidence, and of practice in courts. No lawyer is permitted to argue in disparagement of the intelligence or integrity of a witness, against whom the case itself afforded no particle of testimony. This is sufficient for our purpose, in regard to these witnesses. But more than this is evident, from the minuteness of their narratives, and from their history. Matthew was trained, by his calling, to habits of severe investigation and suspicious scrutiny; and Luke's profession demanded an exactness of observation equally close and searching. The other two evangelists, it has been well remarked, were as much too unlearned to forge the story of their Master's life, as these were too learned and acute to be deceived by imposture.

§ 34. In the *third* place, as to their *number* and the *consistency*

---

<sup>55</sup> 1 Stark. Evid., pp. 483, 548.

of their testimony. The character of their narratives is like that of all other true witnesses, containing, as Dr. Paley observes, substantial truth, under circumstantial variety. There is enough of discrepancy to show that there could have been no previous concert among them; and at the same time such substantial agreement as to show that they all were independent narrators of the same great transaction, as the events actually occurred. That they conspired to impose falsehood upon the world is, moreover, utterly inconsistent with the supposition that they were honest men; a fact, to the proofs of which we have already adverted. But if they were bad men, still the idea of any conspiracy among them is negatived, not only by the discrepancies alluded to, but by many other circumstances which will be mentioned hereafter; from all which, it is manifest that if they concerted a false story, they sought its accomplishment by a mode quite the opposite to that which all others are found to pursue, to attain the same end. On this point the profound remark of an eminent writer is to our purpose; that “in a number of concurrent testimonies, where there has been no previous concert, there is a probability distinct from that which may be termed the sum of the probabilities resulting from the testimonies of the witnesses, a probability which would remain, even though the witnesses were of such a character as to merit no faith at all. This probability arises from the concurrence itself. That such a concurrence should spring from chance, is as one to infinite; that is, in other words, morally impossible. If therefore concert be excluded, there remains no cause but the reality of the fact.”<sup>56</sup> [029]

§ 35. The discrepancies between the narratives of the several evangelists, when carefully examined, will not be found sufficient to invalidate their testimony. Many seeming contradictions will prove, upon closer scrutiny, to be in substantial agreement; and it may be confidently asserted that there are none that will not

---

<sup>56</sup> Campbell's *Philosophy of Rhetoric*, c. v. b. 1. Part 3, p. 125. Whately's *Rhetoric*, Part 1. ch. 2. § 4. 1 Stark. *Evid.*, p. 487.

[030]

yield, under fair and just criticism. If these different accounts of the same transactions were in strict verbal conformity with each other, the argument against their credibility would be much stronger. All that is asked for these witnesses is, that their testimony may be regarded as we regard the testimony of men in the ordinary affairs of life. This they are justly entitled to; and this no honourable adversary can refuse. We might, indeed, take higher ground than this, and confidently claim for them the severest scrutiny; but our present purpose is merely to try their veracity by the ordinary tests of truth, admitted in human tribunals.

§ 36. If the evidence of the evangelists is to be rejected because of a few discrepancies among them, we shall be obliged to discard that of many of the contemporaneous histories on which we are accustomed to rely. Dr. Paley has noticed the contradiction between Lord Clarendon and Burnett and others in regard to Lord Strafford's execution; the former stating that he was condemned to be hanged, which was done on the same day; and the latter all relating that on a Saturday he was sentenced to the block, and was beheaded on the following Monday. Another striking instance of discrepancy has since occurred, in the narratives of the different members of the royal family of France, of their flight from Paris to Varennes, in 1792. These narratives, ten in number, and by eye-witnesses and personal actors in the transactions they relate, contradict each other, some on trivial and some on more essential points, but in every case in a wonderful and inexplicable manner.<sup>57</sup> Yet these contradictions

---

<sup>57</sup> See the Quarterly Review, vol. xxviii. p. 465. These narrators were, the Duchess D'Angoulême herself, the two Messrs. De Bouillè, the Duc De Choiseul, his servant, James Brissac, Messrs. De Damas and Deslons, two of the officers commanding detachments on the road, Messrs. De Moustier and Valori, the garde du corps who accompanied the king, and finally M. de Fontanges, archbishop of Toulouse, who though not himself a party to the transaction, is supposed to have written from the information of the queen. An earlier instance of similar discrepancy is mentioned by Sully. After the battle

do not, in the general public estimation, detract from the integrity of the narrators, nor from the credibility of their relations. In the points in which they agree, and which constitute the great body of their narratives, their testimony is of course not doubted; where they differ, we reconcile them as well as we may; and where this cannot be done at all, we follow that light which seems to us the clearest. Upon the principles of the sceptic, we should be bound utterly to disbelieve them all. On the contrary, we apply to such cases the rules which, in daily experience, our judges instruct juries to apply, in weighing and reconciling the testimony of different witnesses; and which the courts themselves observe, in comparing and reconciling different and sometimes discordant reports of the same decisions. This remark applies especially to some alleged discrepancies in the reports which the several evangelists have given of the same discourses of our Lord.<sup>58</sup> [031]

§ 37. In the *fourth* place, as to the *conformity of their testimony* [032]

while Bulstrode gives a still different report of the judgment of the court, which he says was delivered by Croke himself. But by his account it further appears, that the case was previously twice argued; and thus it at length results that the other reporters relate only what fell from the court on each of the previous occasions. Other similar examples may be found in 1 Dougl. 6, n. compared with 5 East, 475, n. in the case of *Galbraith v. Neville*; and in that of *Stoughton v. Reynolds*, reported by Fortescue, Strange, and in *Cases temp. Hardwicke*. (See 3 Barnw. & Ald. 247, 248.) Indeed, the books abound in such instances. Other discrepancies are found in the names of the same litigating parties, as differently given by reporters; such as, *Putt v. Roster*, (2 Mod. 318); *Foot v. Rastall*, (Skin. 49), and *Putt v. Royston*, (2 Show. 211); also, *Hosdell v. Harris*, (2 Keb. 462); *Hodson v. Harwich*, (Ib. 533), and *Hodsden v. Harridge*, (2 Saund. 64), and a multitude of others, which are universally admitted to mean the same cases, even when they are not precisely within the rule of *idem sonans*. These diversities, it is well known, have never detracted in the slightest degree from the estimation in which the reporters are all deservedly held, as authors of merit, enjoying, to this day, the confidence of the profession. Admitting now, for the sake of argument, (what is not conceded in fact,) that diversities equally great exist among the sacred writers; how can we consistently, and as lawyers, raise any serious objection against them on that account, or treat them in any manner different from that which we observe towards our own reporters? of Aumale, in which Henry IV. was wounded, when the officers were around

*with experience.* The title of the evangelists to full credit for veracity would be readily conceded by the objector, if the facts they relate were such as ordinarily occur in human experience. But they also relate events which were miraculous, or out of the ordinary course of human experience, and on this circumstance an argument is founded against their credibility. Miracles, say the objectors, are impossible; and therefore the evangelists were either deceivers or deceived; and in either case their narratives are unworthy of belief. Spinoza's argument against the possibility of miracles, was founded on the broad and bold assumption that all things are governed by immutable laws, or fixed modes of motion and relation, termed the laws of nature, by which God himself is of necessity bound. This erroneous assumption is the tortoise, on which stands the elephant that upholds his system of atheism. He does not inform us who made these immutable laws, nor whence they derive their binding force and irresistible

---

the king's bed, conversing upon the events of the day, there were not two who agreed in the recital of the most particular circumstances of the action. D'Aubigné, a contemporary writer, does not even mention the king's wound, though it was the only one he ever received in his life. See *Memoirs of Sully*, vol. i. p. 245. If we treated these narratives as sceptics would have us treat these of the sacred writers, what evidence should we have of any battle at Aumale, or of any flight to Varennes?

<sup>58</sup> Far greater discrepancies can be found in the different reports of the same case, given by the reporters of legal judgments than are shown among the evangelists; and yet we do not consider them as detracting from the credit of the reporters, to whom we still resort with confidence, as to good authority. Some of these discrepancies seem utterly irreconcilable. Thus, in a case, 45 Edw. III. 19, where the question was upon a gift of lands to J. de C. with Joan, the sister of the donor, and to their heirs, Fitzherbert (tit. *Tail*, 14) says it was adjudged fee simple, and not frankmarriage; Statham (tit. *Tail*) says it was adjudged a gift in frankmarriage; while Brook (tit. *Frankmarriage*) says it was not decided. (Vid. 10 Co. 118.) Others are irreconcilable, until the aid of a third reporter is invoked. Thus, in the case of *Cooper v. Franklin*, Croke says it was not decided, but adjourned; (Cro. Jac. 100); Godbolt says it was decided in a certain way, which he mentions; (Godb. 269); Moor also reports it as decided, but gives a different account of the question raised; (Moor, 848);

operation. The argument supposes that the creator of all things first made a code of laws, and then put it out of his own power to change them. The scheme of Mr. Hume is but another form of the same error. He deduces the existence of such immutable laws from the uniform course of human experience. This, he affirms, is our only guide in reasoning concerning matters of fact; and whatever is contrary to human experience, he pronounces incredible.<sup>59</sup> Without stopping to examine the correctness of this doctrine, as a fundamental principle in the law of evidence, it is sufficient in this place to remark, that it contains this fallacy; it excludes all knowledge derived by inference or deduction from facts, confining us to what we derive from experience alone, and thus depriving us of any knowledge, or even rational belief, of the existence or character of God. Nay more, it goes to prove that successive generations of men can make no advancement in knowledge, but each must begin *de novo*, and be limited

[033]

[034]

[035]

---

human testimony, be shown to have been, in a particular instance, and with a particular purpose, suspended.” See his Discourse of Natural Theology, Note 5, p. 210-214. (Ed. 1835.)

Laplace, in his *Essai sur les Probabilités*, maintains that, the more extraordinary the fact attested, the greater the probability of error or falsehood in the attestor. Simple good sense, he says, suggests this; and the calculation of probabilities confirms its suggestion. There are some things, he adds, so extraordinary, that nothing can balance their improbability. The position here laid down is, that the probability of error, or of the falsehood of testimony, becomes in *proportion* greater, as the fact which is attested is more extraordinary. And hence a fact extraordinary in the highest possible degree, becomes in the highest possible degree improbable; or so much so, that nothing can counterbalance its improbability.

This argument has been made much use of, to discredit the evidence of miracles, and the truth of that divine religion which is attested by them. But however sound it may be, in one sense, this application of it is fallacious. The fallacy lies in the meaning affixed to the term “extraordinary.” If Laplace means a fact extraordinary *under* its existing circumstances and relations, that is, a fact remaining extraordinary, notwithstanding all its circumstances, the position need not here to be controverted. But if the term means extraordinary *in the abstract*, it is far from being universally true, or affording a correct test of truth,

to the results of its own experience. But if we may infer, [036]  
 from what we see and know, that there is a Supreme Being,  
 by whom this world was created, we may certainly, and with  
 equal reason, believe him capable of works which *we* have never  
 yet known him to perform. We may fairly conclude that the  
 power which was originally put forth to create the world is still  
 constantly and without ceasing exerted to sustain it; and that  
 the experienced connexion between cause and effect is but the  
 uniform and constantly active operation of the finger of God.  
 Whether this uniformity of operation extends to things beyond  
 the limits of our observation, is a point we cannot certainly  
 know. Its existence in all things that ordinarily concern us may  
 be supposed to be ordained as conducive to our happiness; and  
 if the belief in a revelation of peace and mercy from God is  
 conducive to the happiness of man, it is not irrational to suppose  
 that he would depart from his ordinary course of action, in order  
 to give it such attestations as should tend to secure that belief.

---

or rule of evidence. Thus, it is extraordinary that a man should leap fifteen feet  
 at a bound; but not extraordinary that a strong and active man should do it, under  
 a sudden impulse to save his life. The former is improbable in the abstract; the  
 latter is rendered probable by the circumstances. So, things extraordinary, and  
 therefore improbable under one hypothesis, become the reverse under another.  
 Thus, the occurrence of a violent storm at sea, and the utterance by Jesus of  
 the words, "Peace, be still," succeeded instantly by a perfect calm, are facts  
 which, taken separately from each other, are not in themselves extraordinary.  
 The connexion between the command of Jesus and the ensuing calm, as cause  
 and effect, would be extraordinary and improbable if he were a mere man; but  
 it becomes perfectly natural and probable, when his divine power is considered.  
 Each of those facts is in its nature so simple and obvious, that the most ignorant  
 person is capable of observing it. There is nothing extraordinary in the facts  
 themselves; and the extraordinary coincidence, in which the miracle consists,  
 becomes both intelligible and probable upon the hypothesis of the Christian.  
 (See the Christian Observer for Oct. 1838, p. 617.) The theory of Laplace may,  
 with the same propriety, be applied to the creation of the world. That matter  
 was created out of nothing is extremely improbable, in the abstract, that is, if  
 there is no God; and therefore it is not to be believed. But if the existence of a  
 Supreme Being is conceded, the fact is perfectly credible.

Laplace was so fascinated with his theory, that he thought the calculus



“A miracle is improbable, when we can perceive no sufficient cause, in reference to his creatures, why the Deity should vary his modes of operation; it ceases to be so, when such cause is

---

of probabilities might be usefully employed in discovering the value of the different methods resorted to, in those sciences which are in a great measure conjectural, as medicine, agriculture, and political economy. And he proposed that there should be kept, in every branch of the administration, an exact register of the trials made of different measures, and of the results, whether good or bad, to which they have led. (See the Edinburgh Review, vol. xxiii. pp 335, 336.) Napoleon, who appointed him Minister of the Interior, has thus described him: “A geometrician of the first class, he did not reach mediocrity as a statesman. He never viewed any subject in its true light; he was always occupied with subtleties; his notions were all problematic; and he carried into the administration the spirit of the *infinitely* small.” See the Encyclopedia Britannica, art. Laplace, vol. xiii. p. 101. Memoires Ecrits à Ste. Helena, i. 3. The injurious effect of deductive reasoning, upon the minds of those who addict themselves to this method alone, to the exclusion of all other modes of arriving at the knowledge of truth in fact, is shown with great clearness and success, by Mr. Whewel in the ninth of the Bridgewater Treatises, book 3, ch. 6. The calculus of probabilities has been applied by some writers, to judicial evidence; but its very slight value as a test, is clearly shown in an able article on Presumptive Evidence, in the Law Magazine, vol. i. pp. 28-32 (New Series.)

<sup>59</sup> Mr. Hume's argument is thus refuted by Lord Brougham. “Here are two answers, to which the doctrine proposed by Mr. Hume is exposed, and either

---

appears sufficient to shake it.

*“First—*Our belief in the uniformity of the laws of nature rests not altogether upon our own experience. We believe no man ever was raised from the dead,—not merely because we ourselves never saw it, for indeed that would be a very limited ground of deduction; and our belief was fixed on the subject long before we had any considerable experience,—fixed chiefly by authority,—that is, by deference to other men’s experience. We found our confident belief in this negative position partly, perhaps chiefly, upon the testimony of others; and at all events, our belief that in times before our own the same position held good, must of necessity be drawn from our trusting relations of other men—that is, it depends upon the evidence of testimony. If, then, the existence of the law of nature is proved, in great part at least, by such evidence, can we wholly reject the like evidence when it comes to prove an exception to the rule—a deviation from the law? The more numerous are the cases of the law being kept—the more rare those of its being broken—the more scrupulous certainly ought we to be in admitting the proofs of the breach. But that testimony is capable of making good the proof there seems no doubt. In truth, the degree of excellence and of strength to which testimony may arise seems almost indefinite. There is hardly any cogency which it is not capable by possible supposition of attaining. The endless multiplication of witnesses,—the unbounded variety of their habits of thinking, their prejudices, their interests,—afford the means of

---

conceiving the force of their testimony, augmented *ad infinitum*, because these circumstances afford the means of diminishing indefinitely the chances of their being mistaken, all misled, or all combining to deceive us. Let any man try to calculate the chances of a thousand persons who come from different quarters, and never saw each other before, and who all vary in their habits, stations, opinions, interests,—being mistaken or combining to deceive us, when they give the same account of an event as having happened before their eyes,—these chances are many hundreds of thousands to one. And yet we can conceive them multiplied indefinitely; for one hundred thousand such witnesses may in all like manner bear the same testimony; and they may all tell us their story within twenty-four hours after the transaction, and in the next parish. And yet, according to Mr. Hume's argument, we are bound to disbelieve them all, because they speak to a thing contrary to our own experience, and to the accounts which other witnesses had formerly given us of the law of nature, and which our forefathers had handed down to us as derived from witnesses who lived in the old time before them. It is unnecessary to add that no testimony of the witnesses, whom we are supposing to concur in their relation, contradicts any testimony of our own senses. If it did, the argument would resemble Archbishop Tillotson's upon the Real Presence, and our disbelief would be at once warranted.

“*Secondly*—This leads us to the next objection to which Mr. Hume's argument is liable, and which we have in part anticipated while illustrating the

---

first. He requires us to withhold our belief in circumstances which would force every man of common understanding to lend his assent, and to act upon the supposition of the story told being true. For, suppose either such numbers of various witnesses as we have spoken of; or, what is perhaps stronger, suppose a miracle reported to us, first by a number of relators, and then by three or four of the very soundest judges and most incorruptibly honest men we know,—men noted for their difficult belief of wonders, and, above all, steady unbelievers in miracles, without any bias in favour of religion, but rather accustomed to doubt, if not disbelieve,—most people would lend an easy belief to any miracles thus vouched. But let us add this circumstance, that a friend on his death-bed had been attended by us, and that we had told him a fact known only to ourselves,—something that we had secretly done the very moment before we told it to the dying man, and which to no other being we had ever revealed,—and that the credible witnesses we are supposing, informed us that the deceased appeared to them, conversed with them, remained with them a day or two, accompanying them, and to avouch the fact of his reappearance on this earth, communicated to them the secret of which we had made him the sole depository the moment before his death;—according to Mr. Hume, we are bound rather to believe, not only that those credible witnesses deceive us, or that those sound and unprejudiced men were themselves deceived, and fancied things without real existence, but further, that they all hit by chance upon the discovery of a real secret, known only to ourselves and the dead man.

assigned.”<sup>60</sup>

§ 38. But the full discussion of the subject of miracles forms no part of the present design. Their credibility has been fully established, and the objections of sceptics most satisfactorily met and overthrown, by the ablest writers of our own day, whose

---

Mr. Hume's argument requires us to believe this as the lesser improbability of the two—as less unlikely than the rising of one from the dead; and yet every one must feel convinced, that were he placed in the situation we have been figuring, he would not only lend his belief to the relation, but if the relators accompanied it with a special warning from the deceased person to avoid a certain contemplated act, he would, acting upon the belief of their story, take the warning, and avoid doing the forbidden deed. Mr. Hume's argument makes no exception. This is its scope; and whether he chooses to push it thus far or no, all miracles are of necessity denied by it, without the least regard to the kind or the quantity of the proof on which they are rested; and the testimony which we have supposed, accompanied by the test or check we have supposed, would fall within the grasp of the argument just as much and as clearly as any other miracle avouched by more ordinary combinations of evidence.

“The use of Mr. Hume's argument is this, and it is an important and a valuable one. It teaches us to sift closely and rigorously the evidence for miraculous events. It bids us remember that the probabilities are always, and must always be incomparably greater against, than for, the truth of these relations, because it is always far more likely that the testimony should be mistaken or false, than that the general laws of nature should be suspended.

Further than this the doctrine cannot in soundness of reason be carried. It does not go the length of proving that those general laws cannot, by the force of

<sup>60</sup> See Mr. Norton's “Discourse on the latest form of Infidelity,” p. 18.

[037]

works are easily accessible.<sup>61</sup> Thus much, however, may here be remarked; that in almost every miracle related by the evangelists, the facts, separately taken, were plain, intelligible, transpiring in public, and about which no person of ordinary observation would be likely to mistake. Persons blind or crippled, who applied to Jesus for relief, were known to have been crippled or blind for many years; they came to be cured; he spake to them; they went away whole. Lazarus had been dead and buried four days; Jesus called him to come forth from the grave; he immediately came forth, and was seen alive for a long time afterwards. In every case of healing, the previous condition of the sufferer was known to all; all saw his instantaneous restoration, and all witnessed the act of Jesus in touching him, and heard his words.<sup>62</sup> All these, separately considered, were facts, plain and simple in their nature, easily seen and fully comprehended by persons of common capacity and observation. If they were separately testified to, by different witnesses of ordinary intelligence and integrity, in any court of justice, the jury would be bound to believe them; and a verdict, rendered contrary to the uncontradicted testimony of credible witnesses to

---

<sup>61</sup> The arguments on this subject are stated in a condensed form, by Mr. Horne, in his *Introduction to the Study of the Holy Scriptures*, vol. i. ch. 4, sec. 2; in which he refers, among others, to Doctor Gregory's *Letters on the Evidences of the Christian Revelation*; Dr. Campbell's *Dissertation on Miracles*; Vince's *Sermons on the Credibility of Miracles*; Bishop Marsh's *Lectures*, part 6, lect. 30; Dr. Adam's *Treatise in reply to Mr. Hume*; Bishop Gleig's *Dissertation on Miracles*, (in the third volume of his edition of Stackhouse's *History of the Bible*, p. 240, &c.); Dr. Key's *Norissian Lectures*, vol. i. See also Dr. Hopkins's *Lowell Lectures*, lect. I. and II. delivered in Boston in 1844, where this topic is treated with great perspicuity and cogency.

Among the more popular treatises on miracles, are Bogue's *Essay on the Divine Authority of the New Testament*, ch. 5; Bishop Wilson's *Evidences of Christianity*, vol. i. lect. 7; Bishop Sumner's *Evidences*, ch. 10; Gambier's *Guide to the Study of Moral Evidence*, ch. v.; Mr. Norton's *Discourse on the latest form of Infidelity*, and Dr. Dewey's *Dudleian Lecture*, delivered before Harvard University, in May, 1836.

<sup>62</sup> See Bishop Wilson's *Evidences*, lect. 7, p. 130.

any one of these plain facts, separately taken, would be liable to be set aside, as a verdict against evidence. If one credible witness testified to the fact, that Bartimeus was blind, according to the uniform course of administering justice, this fact would be taken as satisfactorily proved. So also, if his subsequent restoration to sight were the sole fact in question, this also would be deemed established, by the like evidence. Nor would the rule of evidence be at all different, if the fact to be proved were the declaration of Jesus, immediately preceding his restoration to sight, that his faith had made him whole. In each of these cases, each isolated fact was capable of being accurately observed, and certainly known; and the evidence demands our assent, precisely as the like evidence upon any other indifferent subject. The connexion of the word or the act of Jesus with the restoration of the blind, lame and dead, to sight, and health, and life, as cause and effect, [038] is a conclusion which our reason is compelled to admit, from the uniformity of their concurrence, in such a multitude of instances, as well as from the universal conviction of all, whether friends or foes, who beheld the miracles which he wrought. Indeed, if the truth of one of the miracles is satisfactorily established, our belief cannot reasonably be withheld from them all. This is the issue proposed by Dr. Paley, in regard to the evidence of the death of Jesus upon the cross, and his subsequent resurrection, the truth of which he has established in an argument, incapable of refutation.

§ 39. In the *fifth* place, as to *the coincidence of their testimony with collateral and contemporaneous facts and circumstances*. After a witness is dead, and his moral character is forgotten, we can ascertain it only by a close inspection of his narrative, comparing its details with each other, and with contemporary accounts and collateral facts. This test is much more accurate than may at first be supposed. Every event which actually transpires, has its appropriate relation and place in the vast complication of circumstances, of which the affairs of men consist; it owes

its origin to the events which have preceded it, is intimately connected with all others which occur at the same time and place, and often with those of remote regions, and in its turn gives birth to numberless others which succeed. In all this almost inconceivable contexture, and seeming discord, there is perfect harmony; and while the fact, which really happened, tallies exactly with every other contemporaneous incident, related to it in the remotest degree, it is not possible for the wit of man to invent a story, which, if closely compared with the actual occurrences of the same time and place, may not be shown to be false.<sup>63</sup> Hence it is, that a false witness will not willingly detail any circumstances, in which his testimony will be open to contradiction, nor multiply them where there is danger of his being detected by a comparison of them with other accounts, equally circumstantial. He will rather deal in general statements and broad assertions, and if he finds it necessary for his purpose to employ names and particular circumstances in his story, he will endeavor to invent such as shall be out of the reach of all opposing proof; and will be the most forward and minute in details, where he knows that any danger of contradiction is least to be apprehended.<sup>64</sup> Therefore it is, that variety and minuteness of detail are usually regarded as certain tests of sincerity, if the story, in the circumstances related, is of a nature capable of easy refutation if it were false.

[039]

§ 40. The difference, in the detail of circumstances, between artful or false witnesses and those who testify the truth, is worthy of especial observation. The former are often copious and even profuse in their statements, as far as these may have been previously fabricated, and in relation to the principal matter; but beyond this, all will be reserved and meagre, from the fear of detection. Every lawyer knows how lightly the evidence of a *non-mi-recordo* witness is esteemed. The testimony of false

---

<sup>63</sup> 1 Stark on Evid. p. 496-499.

<sup>64</sup> 1 Stark. on Evid. p. 523.



witnesses will not be uniform in its texture, but will be unequal, unnatural, and inconsistent. On the contrary, in the testimony of true witnesses there is a visible and striking naturalness of manner, and an unaffected readiness and copiousness in the detail of circumstances, as well in one part of the narrative as another, and evidently without the least regard either to the facility or difficulty of verification or detection.<sup>65</sup> It is easier, therefore, to make out the proof of any fact, if proof it may be called, by suborning one or more false witnesses, to testify directly to the matter in question, than to procure an equal number to testify falsely to such collateral and separate circumstances as will, without greater danger of detection, lead to the same false result. The increased number of witnesses to circumstances, and the increased number of the circumstances themselves, all tend to increase the probability of detection if the witnesses are false, because thereby the points are multiplied in which their statements may be compared with each other, as well as with the truth itself, and in the same proportion is increased the danger of variance and inconsistency.<sup>66</sup> Thus the force of circumstantial evidence is found to depend on the number of particulars involved in the narrative; the difficulty of fabricating them all, if false, and the great facility of detection; the nature of the circumstances to be compared, and from which the dates and other facts are to be collected; the intricacy of the comparison; the number of the intermediate steps in the process of deduction; and the circuitry of the investigation. The more largely the narrative partakes of these characters, the further it will be found removed from all suspicion of contrivance or design, and the more profoundly the mind will repose on the conviction of its truth. [040]

§ 41. The narratives of the sacred writers, both Jewish and

<sup>65</sup> 1 Stark. Evid. 487. The Gospels abound in instances of this. See, for example, Mark, xv. 21. John, xviii. 10. Luke, xxiii. 6. Matt. xxvii. 58-60, John xi. 1.

<sup>66</sup> 1 Stark. Evid. 522, 585.

Christian, abound in examples of this kind of evidence, the value of which is hardly capable of being properly estimated. It does not, as has been already remarked, amount to mathematical demonstration; nor is this degree of proof justly demandable in any question of moral conduct. In all human transactions, the highest degree of assurance to which we can arrive, short of the evidence of our own senses, is that of probability. The most that can be asserted is, that the narrative is more likely to be true than false; and it may be in the highest degree more likely, but still be short of absolute mathematical certainty. Yet this very probability may be so great as to satisfy the mind of the most cautious, and enforce the assent of the most reluctant and unbelieving. If it is such as usually satisfies reasonable men, in matters of ordinary transaction, it is all which the greatest sceptic has a right to require; for it is by such evidence alone that our rights are determined, in the civil tribunals; and on no other evidence do they proceed, even in capital cases. Thus, where a house had been feloniously broken open with a knife, the blade of which was broken and left in the window, and the mutilated knife itself, the parts perfectly agreeing, was found in the pocket of the accused, who gave no satisfactory explanation of the fact, no reasonable doubt remained of his participation in the crime. And where a murder had been committed by shooting with a pistol, and the prisoner was connected with the transaction by proof that the wadding of the pistol was part of a letter addressed to him, the remainder of which was found upon his person, no juror's conscience could have reproached him for assenting to the verdict of condemnation.<sup>67</sup> Yet the evidence, in both cases, is but the evidence of circumstances; amounting, it is true, to the highest degree of probability, but yet not utterly inconsistent with the innocence of the accused. The evidence which we have of the great facts of the Bible history belongs to this class, that

[041]

---

<sup>67</sup> See 1 Stark. Evid. 498. Wills on Circumstantial Evidence, pp. 128, 129.

is, it is moral evidence; sufficient to satisfy any rational mind, by carrying it to the highest degree of moral certainty. If such evidence will justify the taking away of human life or liberty, in the one case, surely it ought to be deemed sufficient to determine our faith in the other.

§ 42. All that Christianity asks of men on this subject, is, that they would be consistent with themselves; that they would treat its evidences as they treat the evidence of other things; and that they would try and judge its actors and witnesses, as they deal with their fellow-men, when testifying to human affairs and actions, in human tribunals. Let the witnesses be compared with themselves, with each other, and with surrounding facts and circumstances; and let their testimony be sifted, as if it were given in a court of justice, on the side of the adverse party, the witnesses being subjected to a rigorous cross-examination. The result, it is confidently believed, will be an undoubting conviction of their integrity, ability, and truth. In the course of such an examination, the undesigned coincidences will multiply upon us at every step in our progress; the probability of the veracity of the witnesses and of the reality of the occurrences which they relate will increase, until it acquires, for all practical purposes, the value and force of demonstration.

§ 43. It should be remembered, that very little of the literature of their times and country has come down to us; and that the collateral sources and means of corroborating and explaining their writings are proportionally limited. The contemporary writings and works of art which have reached us, have invariably been found to confirm their accounts, to reconcile what was apparently contradictory, and supply what seemed defective or imperfect. We ought therefore to conclude, that if we had more of the same light, all other similar difficulties and imperfections would vanish. Indeed they have been gradually vanishing, and rapidly too, before the light of modern research, conducted by men of science in our own times. And it is worthy of remark, that

[042]

of all the investigations and discoveries of travellers and men of letters, since the overthrow of the Roman empire, not a vestige of antiquity has been found, impeaching, in the slightest degree, the credibility of the sacred writers; but, on the contrary, every result has tended to confirm it.

§ 44. The essential marks of difference between true narratives of facts and the creations of fiction, have already been adverted to. It may here be added that these attributes of truth are strikingly apparent throughout the gospel histories, and that the absence of all the others is equally remarkable. The writers allude, for example, to the existing manners and customs, and to the circumstances of the times and of their country, with the utmost minuteness of reference. And these references are never formally made, nor with preface and explanation, never multiplied and heaped on each other, nor brought together, as though introduced by design; but they are scattered broad-cast and singly over every part of the story, and so connect themselves with every incident related, as to render the detection of falsehood inevitable. This minuteness, too, is not peculiar to any one of the historians, but is common to them all. Though they wrote at different periods, and without mutual concert, they all alike refer incidentally to the same state of affairs, and to the same contemporary and collateral circumstances. Their testimony, in this view, stands on the same ground with that of four witnesses, separately examined before different commissioners, upon the same interrogatories, and all adverting incidentally to the same circumstances as surrounding and accompanying the principal transaction, to which alone their attention is directed. And it is worthy of observation that these circumstances were at that time of a peculiar character. Hardly a state or kingdom in the world ever experienced so many vicissitudes in its government and political relations, as did Judea, during the period of the gospel history. It was successively under the government of Herod the Great, of Archelaus, and of a Roman magistrate; it

was a kingdom, a tetrarchate, and a province; and its affairs, its laws, and the administration of justice, were all involved in the confusion and uncertainty naturally to be expected from recent conquest. It would be difficult to select any place or period in the history of nations, for the time and scene of a fictitious history or an imposture, which would combine so many difficulties for the fabricator to surmount, so many contemporary writers to confront him with, and so many facilities for the detection of falsehood.<sup>68</sup>

§ 45. "Had the evangelists been false historians," says Dr. Chalmers, "they would not have committed themselves upon so many particulars. They would not have furnished the vigilant inquirers of that period with such an effectual instrument for bringing them into discredit with the people; nor foolishly supplied, in every page of their narrative, so many materials for a cross-examination, which would infallibly have disgraced them. Now, we of this age can institute the same cross-examination. We can compare the evangelical writers with contemporary authors, and verify a number of circumstances in the history, and government, and peculiar economy of the Jewish people. We therefore have it in our power to institute a cross-examination upon the writers of the New Testament; and the freedom and frequency of their allusions to these circumstances supply us with ample materials for it. The fact, that they are borne out in their minute and incidental allusions by the testimony of other historians, gives a strong weight of what has been called circumstantial evidence in their favour. As a specimen of the argument, let us confine our observations to the history of our Saviour's trial, and execution, and burial. They brought him to Pontius Pilate. We know both from Tacitus and Josephus, that he was at that time governor of Judea. A sentence from him was necessary before they could proceed to the execution of Jesus;

---

<sup>68</sup> See Chalmers's Evidence, chap. iii.

[044]

and we know that the power of life and death was usually vested in the Roman governor. Our Saviour was treated with derision; and this we know to have been a customary practice at that time, previous to the execution of criminals, and during the time of it. Pilate scourged Jesus before he gave him up to be crucified. We know from ancient authors, that this was a very usual practice among the Romans. The accounts of an execution generally run in this form: he was stripped, whipped, and beheaded or executed. According to the evangelists, his accusation was written on the top of the cross; and we learn from Suetonius and others, that the crime of the person to be executed was affixed to the instrument of his punishment. According to the evangelists, this accusation was written in three different languages; and we know from Josephus that it was quite common in Jerusalem to have all public advertisements written in this manner. According to the evangelists, Jesus had to bear his cross; and we know from other sources of information, that this was the constant practice of these times. According to the evangelists, the body of Jesus was given up to be buried at the request of friends. We know that, unless the criminal was infamous, this was the law or the custom with all Roman governors.”<sup>69</sup>

§ 46. There is also a striking naturalness in the characters exhibited in the sacred historians, rarely if ever found in works of fiction, and probably nowhere else to be collected in a similar manner from fragmentary and incidental allusions and expressions, in the writings of different persons. Take, for example, that of Peter, as it may be gathered from the evangelists, and it will be hardly possible to conceive that four persons, writing at different times, could have concurred in the delineation of such a character, if it were not real; a character too, we must observe, which is nowhere expressly drawn, but is shown only here and

---

<sup>69</sup> See Chalmers's Evidence, pp. 76-78, Amer. ed. Proofs of this kind are copiously referred to by Mr. Horne, in his Introduction, &c. vol. i., ch. 3, sect. II. 2.

there, casually, in the subordinate parts of the main narrative. Thus disclosed, it is that of a confident, sanguine, and zealous man; sudden and impulsive, yet humble and ready to retract; [045] honest and direct in his purposes; ardently loving his master, yet deficient in fortitude and firmness in his cause.<sup>70</sup> When Jesus put any question to the apostles, it was Peter who was foremost to reply;<sup>71</sup> and if they would inquire of Jesus, it was Peter who was readiest to speak.<sup>72</sup> He had the impetuous courage to cut off the ear of the High Priest's servant, who came to arrest his master; and the weakness to dissemble before the Jews, in the matter of eating with Gentile converts.<sup>73</sup> It was he who ran with John to the sepulchre, on the first intelligence of the resurrection of Jesus, and with characteristic zeal rushed in, while John paused without the door.<sup>74</sup> He had the ardour to desire and the faith to attempt to walk on the water, at the command of his Lord, but as soon as he saw the wind boisterous, he was afraid.<sup>75</sup> He was the first to propose the election of another apostle in the place of Judas;<sup>76</sup> and he it was who courageously defended them all, on the day of Pentecost, when the multitude charged them with being filled with new wine.<sup>77</sup> He was forward to acknowledge Jesus to be the Messiah;<sup>78</sup> yet having afterwards endangered his own life by wounding the servant of the High Priest, he suddenly consulted his own safety by denying the same Master, for whom, but a few hours before, he had declared himself ready to die.<sup>79</sup> We may

---

<sup>70</sup> See Mark viii. 32; ix. 5; and xiv. 29; Matt. xvi. 22; and xvii. 5; Luke ix. 33; and xviii. 18; John xiii. 8; and xviii. 15.

<sup>71</sup> Mark viii. 29; Matt. xvi. 16; Luke ix. 20.

<sup>72</sup> Matt. xviii. 21; and xix. 27; John xiii. 36.

<sup>73</sup> Gal. ii. 11.

<sup>74</sup> John xx. 3-6.

<sup>75</sup> Matt. xiv. 30.

<sup>76</sup> Acts i. 15.

<sup>77</sup> Acts ii. 14.

<sup>78</sup> Matt. xvi. 16; Mark viii. 29; Luke ix. 20; John vi. 69.

<sup>79</sup> Matt. xxvi. 33, 35; Mark xiv. 29.

safely affirm that the annals of fiction afford no example of a similar but not uncommon character, thus incidentally delineated.

§ 47. There are other internal marks of truth in the narratives of the evangelists, which, however, need here be only alluded to, as they have been treated with great fulness and force by able writers, whose works are familiar to all.<sup>80</sup> Among these may be mentioned the nakedness of the narratives; the absence of all parade by the writers about their own integrity, of all anxiety to be believed, or to impress others with a good opinion of themselves or their cause, of all marks of wonder, or of desire to excite astonishment at the greatness of the events they record, and of all appearance of design to exalt their Master. On the contrary, there is apparently the most perfect indifference on their part, whether they are believed or not; or rather, the evident consciousness that they were recording events well known to all, in their own country and times, and undoubtedly to be believed, like any other matter of public history, by readers in all other countries and ages. It is worthy, too, of especial observation, that though the evangelists record the unparalleled sufferings and cruel death of their beloved Lord, and this too, by the hands and with the consenting voices of those on whom he had conferred the greatest benefits, and their own persecutions and dangers, yet they have bestowed no epithets of harshness or even of just censure on the authors of all this wickedness, but have everywhere left the plain and unincumbered narrative to speak for itself, and the reader to pronounce his own sentence of condemnation; like true witnesses, who have nothing to gain or to lose by the event of the cause, they state the facts, and leave them to their fate. Their simplicity and artlessness, also, should not pass unnoticed, in readily stating even those things most disparaging to themselves.

---

<sup>80</sup> See Paley's view of the Evidences of Christianity, part ii. chapters iii. iv. v. vi. vii; Ibid. part iii. ch. i.; Chalmers on the Evidence and Authority of the Christian Revelation, ch. iii. iv. viii.; Wilson's Evidences of Christianity, lect. vi.; Bogue's Essay on the Divine Authority of the New Testament, chap. iii. iv.



Their want of faith in their Master, their dulness of apprehension of his teachings, their strifes for preëminence, their inclination to call fire from heaven upon their enemies, their desertion of their Lord in his hour of extreme peril; these, and many other incidents tending directly to their own dishonour, are nevertheless set down with all the directness and sincerity of truth, as by men writing under the deepest sense of responsibility to God. Some of the more prominent instances of this class of proofs will be noticed hereafter, in their proper places, in the narratives themselves. [047]

§ 48. Lastly, the great character they have portrayed is perfect. It is the character of a sinless Being; of one supremely wise and supremely good. It exhibits no error, no sinister intention, no imprudence, no ignorance, no evil passion, no impatience; in a word, no fault; but all is perfect uprightness, innocence, wisdom, goodness and truth. The mind of man has never conceived the idea of such a character, even for his gods; nor has history nor poetry shadowed it forth. The doctrines and precepts of Jesus are in strict accordance with the attributes of God, agreeably to the most exalted idea which we can form of them, either from reason or from revelation. They are strikingly adapted to the capacity of mankind, and yet are delivered with a simplicity and majesty wholly divine. He spake as never man spake. He spake with authority; yet addressed himself to the reason and the understanding of men; and he spake with wisdom, which men could neither gainsay nor resist. In his private life, he exhibits a character not merely of strict justice, but of overflowing benignity. He is temperate, without austerity; his meekness and humility are signal; his patience is invincible; truth and sincerity illustrate his whole conduct; every one of his virtues is regulated by consummate prudence; and he both wins the love of his friends, and extorts the wonder and admiration of his enemies<sup>81</sup>. He is represented in every variety of situation in life,

---

<sup>81</sup> See Bogue's Essay, chap. i. sect. 2; Newcome's Obs. part ii. ch. i. sec. 14.

from the height of worldly grandeur, amid the acclamations of an admiring multitude, to the deepest abyss of human degradation and woe, apparently deserted of God and man. Yet everywhere he is the same; displaying a character of unearthly perfection, symmetrical in all its proportions, and encircled with splendour more than human. Either the men of Galilee were men of superlative wisdom, of extensive knowledge and experience, and of deeper skill in the arts of deception, than any and all others, before or after them, or they have truly stated the astonishing things which they saw and heard.

[048]

The narratives of the evangelists are now submitted to the reader's perusal and examination, upon the principles and by the rules already stated. For this purpose, and for the sake of more ready and close comparison, they are arranged in juxtaposition, after the general order of the latest and most approved harmonies. The question is not upon the strict propriety of the arrangement, but upon the veracity of the witnesses and the credibility of their narratives. With the relative merits of modern harmonists, and with points of controversy among theologians, the writer has no concern. His business is that of a lawyer, examining the testimony of witnesses by the rules of his own profession, in order to ascertain whether, if they had thus testified on oath, in a court of justice, they would be entitled to credit; and whether their narratives, as we now have them, would be received as ancient documents, coming from the proper custody. If so, then it is believed that every honest and impartial man will act consistently with that result, by receiving their testimony in all the extent of its import. To write out a full commentary or argument upon the text, would be a useless addition to the bulk of the volume; but a few notes have been added for illustration of the narratives, and for the clearing up of apparent discrepancies, as being all that members of the legal profession would desire.

[049]

# Harmony Of The Gospels.

## Part I. Events Connected With The Birth And Childhood Of Jesus.

TIME. *About thirteen and a half years.*

[050]

### § 1. Preface to Luke's Gospel.

Luke.

CH. I. 1-4.

Forasmuch as many  
have taken in hand to  
set forth in order a dec-  
laration of those things  
which are most surely  
believed among us,

2 Even as they de-  
livered them unto us,  
which from the be-  
ginning were eye-  
witnesses, and minis-  
ters of the word;

3 It seemed good to me  
also, having had perfect  
understanding of  
all things from the very  
first, to write unto thee  
in order, most excellent  
Theophilus,  
4 That thou mightest  
know the certainty of  
those things wherein  
thou hast been instructed.

§ 2. An Angel appears to Zacharias. *Jerusalem.*

Luke.

CH. I. 5-25.

5 There was in the days  
of Herod the king of  
Judea, a certain priest  
named Zacharias, of  
the course of Abia: and  
his wife *was* of the  
daughters of Aaron,  
and her name *was* Elisabeth.

6 And they were both  
righteous before God,  
walking in all the commandments and ordinances of the Lord blameless.

7 and they had no child, because that Elisabeth was barren; and they both were *now* well stricken in years.

8 And it came to pass, that, while he executed the priest's office before God in the order of his course,

9 According to the custom of the priest's office, his lot was to burn incense when he went into the temple of the Lord.

10 And the whole multitude of the people were praying without, at the time of incense.

11 And there appeared unto him an angel of the Lord, standing on the right side of the altar of incense.

12 And when Zacharias saw *him*, he was troubled, and fear fell upon him.

13 But the angel said unto him, Fear not, Zacharias: for thy prayer is heard; and thy wife Elisabeth shall bear thee a son, and thou shalt call his name John.

14 And thou shalt have joy and gladness, and many shall rejoice at his birth.

15 For he shall be great in the sight of the Lord, and shall drink neither wine nor strong drink; and he shall be filled with the Holy Ghost, even from his mother's womb.

16 And many of the children of Israel shall he turn to the Lord their God.

17 And he shall go before him in the spirit and power of Elias,<sup>82</sup> to turn the hearts of the fathers to the children, and the disobedient to the wisdom of the just; to make ready a people prepared for the Lord.

18 And Zacharias said unto the angel, Whereby shall I know this? for I am an old man, and my wife well stricken in years.

19 And the angel, answering, said unto him, I am Gabriel, that stand in the presence of God, and am sent to speak unto thee, and to shew thee these glad tidings.

20 And behold, thou shalt be dumb, and not able to speak, until the day that these things shall be performed, because thou believest not my words, which shall be fulfilled in their season.

---

<sup>0</sup> Mal. iv. 5, 6.

21 And the people waited for Zacharias, and marvelled that he tarried so long in the temple.

22 And when he came out, he could not speak unto them: and they perceived that he had seen a vision in the temple; for he beckoned unto them, and remained speechless.

23 And it came to pass, that as soon as the days of his ministration were accomplished, he departed to his own house.

24 And after those days his wife Elisabeth conceived, and hid herself five months, saying,

25 Thus hath the Lord dealt with me in the days wherein he looked on *me*, to take away my reproach among men.

[054]

### § 3. An Angel appears to Mary. *Nazareth.*



Luke.

CH. I. 26-38.

26 And in the sixth month the angel Gabriel was sent from God unto a city of Galilee, named Nazareth,

27 To a virgin espoused to a man whose name was Joseph, of the house of David; and the virgin's name *was* Mary.

28 And the angel came in unto her, and said, Hail, *thou that art* highly favoured, the Lord is with thee: blessed art thou among women.

29 And when she saw *him*, she was troubled at his saying, and cast in her mind what manner of salutation this should be.

30 And the angel said unto her, Fear not, Mary: for thou hast found favour with God.

31 And behold, thou shalt conceive in thy womb, and bring forth a son, and shalt call his name JESUS.

32 He shall be great, and shall be called the son of the Highest; and the Lord God shall give unto him the throne of his father David.

33 And<sup>83</sup> he shall reign over the house of Jacob for ever; and of his kingdom there shall be no end.

34 Then said Mary unto the angel, How shall this be, seeing I know not a man?

35 And the angel answered and said unto her, The Holy Ghost shall come upon thee, and the power of the Highest shall overshadow thee: therefore also that holy thing which shall be born of thee, shall be called the Son of God.

---

<sup>0</sup> Mic. iv. 7.

36 And behold, thy  
cousin Elisabeth, she  
hath also conceived a  
son in her old age;  
and this is the sixth  
month with her who  
was called barren:

37 For with God noth-  
ing shall be impossi-  
ble.

38 And Mary said, Be-  
hold the handmaid of  
the Lord, be it unto me  
according to thy word.  
And the angel departed  
from her.

#### § 4. Mary visits Elisabeth. *Juttah*.

Luke.

CH. I. 39-56.

39 And Mary arose in  
those days, and went  
into the hill-country  
with haste, into a city  
of Juda,

40 And entered into  
the house of Zacharias,  
and saluted Elisabeth.

41 And it came to pass,  
that when Elisabeth  
heard the salutation of  
Mary, the babe leaped  
in her womb: and Elis-  
abeth was filled with  
the Holy Ghost.

42 And she spake out  
with a loud voice and  
said, Blessed *art* thou  
among women, and  
blessed *is* the fruit of  
thy womb.

43 And whence *is* this  
to me, that the mother  
of my lord should  
come to me?

44 For lo, as soon as  
the voice of thy salu-  
tation sounded in mine  
ears, the babe leaped in  
my womb for joy.

45 And blessed *is* she  
that believed: for there  
shall be a performance  
of those things which  
were told her from the  
Lord.

46 And Mary said, My  
soul doth magnify the  
Lord,

47 And my spirit hath  
rejoiced in God my  
Saviour.

48 For he hath re-  
garded the low estate  
of his handmaiden: for  
behold, from hence-  
forth all generations  
shall call me blessed.

49 For he that is mighty  
hath done to me great  
things; and holy *is* his  
name.

50 And his mercy  
*is* on them that fear  
him, from generation  
to generation.

51 He hath shewed  
strength with his arm;  
he hath scattered the  
proud in the imagina-  
tion of their hearts.

52 He hath put down  
the mighty from *their*  
seats, and exalted them  
of low degree.

53 He hath filled  
the hungry with good  
things, and the rich he  
hath sent empty away.

54 He hath holpen  
his servant Israel, in  
remembrance of *his*  
mercy;

55 As<sup>84</sup> he spake to  
our fathers, to Abra-  
ham, and to his seed,  
for ever.

56 And Mary abode  
with her about three  
months, and returned  
to her own house.

[058]

## § 5. The birth of John the Baptist. *Juttah.*

Luke.

CH. I. 57-80.

57 Now Elisabeth's full  
time came that she  
should be delivered;  
and she brought forth  
a son.

58 And her neighbours  
and her cousins heard  
how the Lord had  
shewed great mercy  
upon her; and they re-  
joiced with her.

---

<sup>0</sup> Is. xli. 8, 9; Gen. xxii. 16, seq.

59 And it came to pass,  
that on the eighth day  
they came to circum-  
cise the child; and they  
called him Zacharias,  
after the name of his  
father.

60 And his mother an-  
swered and said, not  
*so*; but he shall be  
called John.

61 And they said unto  
her, There is none  
of thy kindred that is  
called by this name.

62 And they made  
signs to his father, how  
he would have him  
called.

63 And he asked for  
a writing-table, and  
wrote, saying, His  
name is John. And they  
marvelled all.

64 And his mouth  
was opened immedi-  
ately, and his tongue  
loosed, and he spake,  
and praised God.

65 And fear came on  
all that dwelt round  
about them: and all  
these sayings were  
noised abroad through-  
out all the hill-country  
of Judea.

66 And all they that  
heard *them*, laid *them*  
up in their hearts, say-  
ing, What manner of  
child shall this be! And  
the hand of the Lord  
was with him.

67 And his father  
Zacharias was filled  
with the Holy Ghost,  
and prophesied, say-  
ing,

68 Blessed *be* the Lord  
God of Israel; for he  
hath visited and re-  
deemed his people,

69 And hath raised up  
a horn of salvation for  
us, in the house of his  
servant David:

70 As he spake by  
the mouth of his holy  
prophets, which have  
been since the world  
began:



71 That we should be  
 saved from our ene-  
 mies, and from the  
 hand of all that hate  
 us;

72 To perform the  
 mercy *promised* to our  
 fathers, and to remem-  
 ber his holy covenant;

73 The oath which he  
 sware to our Father  
 Abraham,<sup>85</sup>

74 That he would grant  
 unto us, that we, be-  
 ing delivered out of the  
 hand of our enemies,  
 might serve him with-  
 out fear,

75 In holiness and  
 righteousness before  
 him, all the days of our  
 life.

76 And thou, child,  
 shalt be called the  
 Prophet of the Highest,  
 for thou shalt go before  
 the face of the Lord to  
 prepare his ways;

77 To give knowledge  
 of salvation unto his  
 people, by the remis-  
 sion of their sins,

---

<sup>0</sup> Gen. xxii. 16, seq.

78 Through the tender mercy of our God; whereby the day-spring from on high hath visited us,

79 To give light to them that sit in darkness and *in* the shadow of death, to guide our feet into the way of peace.

80 And the child grew, and waxed strong in spirit, and was in the deserts till the day of his shewing unto Israel.

[060]

## § 6. An Angel appears to Joseph. *Nazareth.*

Matthew.

CH. I. 18-25.

18 Now the birth of Jesus Christ was on this wise: When as his mother Mary was espoused to Joseph, before they came together, she was found with child of the holy Ghost.

19 Then Joseph her husband, being a just *man*, and not willing to make her a public example, was minded to put her away privily.<sup>86</sup>

20 But while he thought on these things, Behold, the angel of the Lord appeared unto him in a dream, saying, Joseph, thou son of David, fear not to take unto thee Mary thy wife; for that which is conceived in her is of the Holy Ghost.

21 And she shall bring forth a son, and thou shalt call his name JESUS: for he shall save his people from their sins.

---

<sup>0</sup> Matt. i. 19.

*husband*. There was commonly an interval of ten or twelve months, between the making of the contract of marriage and the time of its celebration. *Gen.* xxiv. 55; *Judg.* xiv. 8. During this period, though there was no intercourse between the bride and bridegroom, not even so much as an interchange of conversation, yet they were considered and spoken of as husband and wife. If, at the end of this probationary period, the bridegroom was unwilling to solemnize his engagements by the marriage of the bride, he was bound to give her a bill of divorce, as if she had been his wife. And if she, during the same period, had illicit intercourse with another man, she was liable to punishment, as an adulteress. JAHN'S {FNS Archæol. § 154.

22 Now all this was done, that it might be fulfilled which was spoken of the Lord by the prophet, saying,

23 Behold,<sup>87</sup> a virgin shall be with child, and shall bring forth a son, and they shall call his name Emmanuel, which being interpreted is, God with us.

24 Then Joseph, being raised from sleep, did as the angel of the Lord had bidden him, and took unto him his wife:

25 And knew her not till she had brought forth her first-born son: and he called his name JESUS.

[062]

## § 7. The birth of Jesus. *Bethlehem.*

Luke.

CH. II. 1-7.

---

<sup>0</sup> Is. vii. 14.

And it came to pass in from Cesar Augustus, that all the world should be taxed.

those days, that there

went out a decree<sup>88</sup>

2 (And this taxing was first made when Cyrenius was governor of Syria.)

3 And all went to be taxed, every one into his own city.

4 And Joseph also went up from Galilee, out of the city of Nazareth, into Judea, unto the city of David, which is called Bethlehem, (because he was of the house and lineage of David,)

5 To be taxed with Mary his espoused wife, being great with child.

6 And so it was, that while they were there, the days were accomplished that she should be delivered.

---

<sup>0</sup> Luke ii. 1. *a decree*. This decree was issued eleven years before it was carried into effect, the delay having been procured by Herod. This fact reconciles the evangelist with the Roman historians, from whom it appears that Cyrenius was not governor when the decree was issued, though he held that office when the census was taken and the tax assessed. See TOWNSEND{FNS, *in loc*.

7 And she brought  
forth her first-born  
son, and wrapped him  
in swaddling-clothes,  
and laid him in a  
manger; because there  
was no room for them  
in the inn.

§ 8. An Angel appears to the Shepherds. *Near  
Bethlehem.*

Luke.

CH. II. 8-20.

8 And there were in  
the same country shep-  
herds abiding in the  
field, keeping watch  
over their flock by  
night.

9 And lo, the angel  
of the Lord came upon  
them, and the glory of  
the Lord shone round  
about them; and they  
were sore afraid.

10 And the angel said  
unto them, Fear not:  
for behold, I bring you  
good tidings of great  
joy, which shall be to  
all people.

11 For unto you is born  
this day, in the city  
of David, a Saviour,  
which is Christ the  
Lord.

12 And this *shall be* a  
sign unto you; Ye shall  
find the babe wrapped  
in swaddling-clothes,  
lying in a manger.

13 And suddenly there  
was with the angel a  
multitude of the heav-  
enly host praising God,  
and saying,

14 Glory to God in the  
highest, and on earth  
peace, good will to-  
ward men.

15 And it came to  
pass, as the angels  
were gone away from  
them into heaven, the  
shepherds said one to  
another, Let us now  
go even unto Bethle-  
hem, and see this thing  
which is come to pass,  
which the Lord hath  
made known unto us.

16 And they came with haste, and found Mary and Joseph, and the babe lying in a manger.

17 And when they had seen *it*, they made known abroad the saying which was told them concerning this child.

18 And all they that heard *it*, wondered at those things which were told them by the shepherds.

19 But Mary kept all these things, and pondered *them* in her heart.

20 And the shepherds returned, glorifying and praising God for all the things that they had heard and seen, as it was told unto them.

[064]

§ 9. The circumcision of Jesus and his presentation in the temple. *Bethlehem. Jerusalem.*

Luke.



CH. II. 21-38.

21 And when eight days were accomplished for the circumcising of the child,<sup>89</sup> his name was called JESUS, which was so named of the angel before he was conceived in the womb.

22 And when the days of her purification according to the law of Moses were accomplished, they brought him to Jerusalem, to present *him* to the Lord;

23 (As it is written in the law of the Lord,<sup>90</sup> Every male that openeth the womb shall be called holy to the Lord;)

24 And to offer a sacrifice according to that which is said in the law of the Lord,<sup>91</sup> A pair of turtle-doves, or two young pigeons.

---

<sup>0</sup> Gen. xvii. 12; Lev. xii. 3.

<sup>0</sup> Ex. xiii. 2; Numb. viii. 16, 17.

<sup>0</sup> Lev. xii. 6, 8.

25 And behold,  
there was a man  
in Jerusalem, whose  
name *was* Simeon; and  
the same man *was* just  
and devout, waiting  
for the consolation of  
Israel: and the Holy  
Ghost was upon him.

26 And it was revealed  
unto him by the Holy  
Ghost, that he should  
not see death, before  
he had seen the Lord's  
Christ.

27 And he came by the  
Spirit into the temple;  
and when the parents  
brought in the child Je-  
sus, to do for him after  
the custom of the law,

28 Then took he him  
up in his arms, and  
blessed God, and said,

29 Lord, now lettest  
thou thy servant depart  
in peace, according to  
thy word:

30 For mine eyes have  
seen thy salvation,

31 Which thou hast  
prepared before the  
face of all people;

32 A light to lighten the  
Gentiles, and the glory  
of thy people Israel.

33 And Joseph and  
his mother marvelled  
at those things which  
were spoken of him.

34 And Simeon  
blessed them, and said  
unto Mary his mother,  
Behold, this child is<sup>92</sup>  
set for the fall and  
rising again of many  
in Israel; and for a sign  
which shall be spoken  
against,

35 (Yea, a sword  
shall pierce through  
thy own soul also;)   
that the thoughts of  
many hearts may be re-  
vealed.

36 And there was  
one Anna, a prophet-  
ess, the daughter of  
Phanuel, of the tribe  
of Aser: she was of  
a great age, and had  
lived with a husband  
seven years from her  
virginity.

---

<sup>0</sup> Is. viii. 14.

37 And she *was*  
a widow of about  
fourscore and four  
years, which departed  
not from the temple,  
but served *God* with  
fastings and prayers  
night and day.

38 And she coming  
in that instant, gave  
thanks likewise unto  
the Lord, and spake of  
him to all them that  
looked for redemption  
in Jerusalem.

[068]

## § 10. The Magi. *Jerusalem. Bethlehem.*

Matthew.

CH. II. 1-12.

Now when Jesus was  
born in Bethlehem of  
Judea in the days of  
Herod the king, be-  
hold, there came wise  
men from the East to  
Jerusalem,

2 Saying, Where is he  
that is born king of the  
Jews? for we have seen  
his star in the east, and  
are come to worship  
him.

3 When Herod the king  
had heard *these things*,  
he was troubled,<sup>93</sup>, Ve-  
racity, &c. § ii. 2.

and all Jerusalem with him. 4 And when he had gathered all the chief priests and scribes of the people together, he demanded of them where Christ should be born. 5 And they said unto him, in Bethlehem of Judea: for thus it is written by the prophet, 6 And<sup>94</sup> thou Bethlehem, in the land of Juda, art not the least among the princes of Juda: for out of thee shall come a Governor, that shall rule my people Israel. 7 Then Herod, when he had privily called the wise men, inquired of them diligently what time the star appeared. 8 And he sent them to Bethlehem, and said Go, and search diligently for the young child; and when ye have found *him*, bring me word again, that I may come and worship him also. 9 When they had heard the king, they departed; and lo, the star, which they saw in the east, went before them, till it came and stood over where the young child was. 10 When they saw the star, they rejoiced with exceeding great joy. 11 And when they were come into the house, they saw the young child with Mary his mother, and fell down, and worshipped him: and when they had opened their treasures, they presented unto him gifts; gold, and frankincense, and myrrh. 12 And being warned of God in a dream that they should not return to Herod, they departed into their own country another way.

[070]

---

<sup>0</sup> Matth. ii. 3, *he was troubled*. According to Josephus, Herod was always in fear for the stability of his throne, and anxious to pry into futurity to discover whether it was likely to endure. Thus, when advanced to regal power, he sent for Manahem, an Essene, who had predicted of him when a boy that he would be a king, to inquire of him how long he should reign. JOSEPH. {FNS Ant. xv. § 5. BLUNT {FNS

<sup>94</sup> Mic. v. 2.

§ 11. The flight into Egypt. Herod's cruelty. The return. *Bethlehem. Nazareth.*

Matthew.

CH. II. 13-23.

13 And when they were departed, behold, the angel of the Lord appeareth to Joseph in a dream, saying, Arise, and take the young child and his mother, and flee into Egypt, and be thou there until I bring thee word: for Herod will seek the young child to destroy him.

14 When he arose, he took the young child and his mother by night, and departed into Egypt:

15 And was there until the death of Herod: that it might be fulfilled which was spoken of the Lord by the prophet, saying,<sup>95</sup> Out of Egypt have I called my Son.

---

<sup>0</sup> Hos. xi. 1.

16 Then Herod, when he saw that he was mocked of the wise men, was exceeding wroth, and sent forth, and slew all the children that were in Bethlehem, and in all the coasts thereof, from two years old and under, according to the time which he had diligently inquired of the wise men.

17 Then was fulfilled that which was spoken by Jeremy the prophet, saying,

18 In<sup>96</sup> Rama was there a voice heard, lamentation, and weeping, and great mourning, Rachel weeping for her children, and would not be comforted, because they are not.

19 But, when Herod was dead, behold, an angel of the Lord appeareth in a dream to Joseph in Egypt,

---

<sup>0</sup> Jer. xxxi. 15, and xl. 1.

20 Saying, Arise, and take the young child and his mother, and go into the land of Israel: for they are dead which sought the young child's life.

21 And he arose, and took the young child and his mother, and came into the land of Israel.

22 But when he heard notwithstanding, being warned of God in a dream, that Archelaus did reign in Judea in the room of his father Herod, he was afraid to go thither:<sup>97</sup>

---

<sup>97</sup> Matth. ii. 22, *he was afraid*. The naked statement of this fact, without explanation, is a mark of the sincerity of the evangelist, for the value of which we are indebted to Josephus, who relates, (*Ant. b. 17, ch. 9, § 3*), an instance of savage cruelty in Archelaus, immediately on his coming to the throne, in causing three thousand persons to be butchered in cold blood, at the first passover after Herod's death. Such an act, committed under such circumstances, must have been rapidly made known abroad, and inspired all persons with horror. Well, therefore, might Joseph fear to return. But Matthew's incidental allusion to the cause, is characteristic of a man intent only upon the statement of the main facts, and regardless of appearances or explanations. BLUNT{FNS, Veracity, &c. § ii. 3.



23 And he came  
and dwelt in a city  
called Nazareth: that  
it might be fulfilled  
which was spoken by  
the prophets, He shall  
be called a Nazarene.<sup>98</sup>

[072]

§ 12. At twelve years of age, Jesus goes to the  
Passover. *Jerusalem.*

went a day's journey; and they sought him among their kinsfolk and acquaintance. 45 And when they found him not, they turned back again to Jerusalem, seeking him. 46 And it came to pass, that after three days they found him in the temple, sitting in the midst of the doctors, both hearing them, and asking them questions. 47 And all that heard him were astonished at his understanding and answers. 48 And when they saw him, they were amazed: and his mother said unto him, Son, why hast thou thus dealt with us? Behold, thy father and I have sought thee sorrowing. 49 And he said unto them, How is it that ye sought me? wist ye not that I must be about my Father's business? 50 And they understood not the saying which he spake unto them. 51 And he went down with them, and came to Nazareth, and was subject unto them: but his mother kept all these sayings in her heart. 52 And Jesus increased in wisdom and stature, and in favour with God and man.

Luke.

CH. II. 41-52.

41 Now his parents  
went to Jerusalem ev-  
ery year at the feast of  
the passover.

---

<sup>0</sup> Is. xi. 1, and liii. 2; Zech. vi. 12; Rev. v. 5.

42 And when he was  
twelve years old<sup>99</sup>, *in*  
*loc.*

, they went up to Jerusalem after the custom of the feast. 43 And when they had fulfilled the days, as they returned, the child Jesus tarried behind in Jerusalem; and Joseph and his mother knew not of it. 44 But they, supposing him to have been in the company,<sup>100</sup>

[074]

### § 13. The Genealogies.

Matthew.  
CH. I. 1-17.

---

<sup>99</sup> Luke ii. 42; *twelve years old*. Jewish children were not obliged to the observances of the ceremonial law, until they attained to years of discretion, which, in males, was fixed by common consent at twelve years. On arriving at this age, they were taken to Jerusalem at the passover, of which they thenceforth participated, as “sons of commandment,” being fully initiated into the doctrines and ceremonies of the Jewish church, probably after examination by the doctors. This accounts for the circumstance of his being found among them, both hearing, and asking them questions. STACKHOUSE{FNS, Hist. N. T. ch. i.; BLOOMFIELD{FNS

<sup>100</sup> Luke ii. 44; *in the company*. All who came, not only from the same city, but from the same canton or district, made one company. They carried necessities along with them, and tents for their lodging at night. Such companies they now call *caravans*, and in several places have houses fitted up for their reception, called *caravanseries*. This account of their manner of travelling furnishes a ready answer to the question, How could Joseph and Mary make a day's journey, without discovering, before night, that Jesus was not in the company? In the day-time, we may reasonably presume, the travellers would mingle with different parties of their friends and acquaintance; but in the evening, when they were about to encamp, every one would join the family to which he belonged. CAMPBELL{FNS, *in loc.*

The book of the generation of Jesus Christ, the son of David, the son of Abraham.

2 Abraham begat Isaac; and Isaac begat Jacob; and Jacob begat Judas and his brethren;

3 And Judas begat Phares and Zara of Thamar; and Phares begat Esrom; and Esrom begat Aram;

4 And Aram begat Aminadab; and Aminadab begat Naasson; and Naasson begat Salmon;

5 And Salmon begat Booz of Rachab; and Booz begat Obed of Ruth; and Obed begat Jesse;

6 And Jesse begat David the king; and David the king begat Solomon of her *that had been the wife* of Urias;

7 And Solomon begat Roboam; and Roboam begat Abia; and Abia begat Asa;

8 And Asa begat Josaphat; and Josaphat begat Joram; and Joram begat Ozias;

9 And Ozias begat Joatham; and Joatham begat Achaz; and Achaz begat Ezekias;

10 And Ezekias begat Manasses; and Manasses begat Amon; and Amon begat Josias;

11 And Josias begat Jechonias and his brethren, about the time they were carried away to Babylon;

12 And after they were brought to Babylon, Jechonias begat Salathiel; and Salathiel begat Zorobabel;

13 And Zorobabel begat Abiud; and Abiud begat Eliakim; and Eliakim begat Azor;

14 And Azor begat Sadoc; and Sadoc begat Achim; and Achim begat Eliud;

15 And Eliud begat  
Eleazar; and Eleazar  
begat Matthan; and  
Matthan begat Jacob;

16 And Jacob begat  
Joseph the husband of  
Mary, of whom was  
born Jesus, who is  
called Christ.

17 So all the gener-  
ations from Abraham  
to David *are* fourteen  
generations; and from  
David until the carry-  
ing away into Babylon  
*are* fourteen genera-  
tions; and from the car-  
rying away into Baby-  
lon unto Christ *are*  
fourteen generations.

Luke.

CH. III. 23-38, IN-  
VERTED.<sup>101</sup>

---

<sup>0</sup> The Genealogy of Jesus, as given by Luke, is here inverted for the sake of more convenient comparison with that given by Matthew.

The apparent discrepancies in these accounts are reconciled by Dr. Robinson, in the following manner:

“I. In the genealogy given by Matthew, considered by itself, some difficulties present themselves.

“1. There is some diversity among commentators in making out the three divisions, each of fourteen generations, v. 17. It is, however, obvious, that the first division begins with Abraham and ends with David. But does the second begin with David, or with Solomon? Assuredly with the former; because, just

38 *The son of God,  
the son of Adam, the  
son of Seth, the son of  
Enos,*

37 *The son of Cainan,  
the son of Maleleel, the  
son of Jared, the son  
of Enoch, the son of  
Mathusala,*

36 *The son of Lamech,  
the son of Noe, the  
son of Sem, the son  
of Arphaxad, the son  
of Cainan,*

---

as the first begins *apo Abraham*, so the second also is said to begin *apo David*. The first extends *heos David*, and includes him; the second extends to an epoch and not to a person; and therefore the persons who are mentioned as coeval with this epoch are not reckoned before it. After the epoch the enumeration begins again with Jechoniah, and ends with Jesus. In this way the three divisions are made out thus:—

1. Abraham.
2. Isaac.
3. Jacob.
4. Judah.
5. Phares.
6. Esrom.
7. Aram.
8. Aminadab.
9. Naasson.
10. Salmon.
11. Boaz.
12. Obed.
13. Jesse.
14. David.
1. David.

35 *The son of Sala,  
the son of Heber, the  
son of Phalec, the son  
of Ragau, the son of  
Saruch,*

34 *The son of Nachor,  
the son of Thara, the  
son of Abraham, the  
son of Isaac, the son of  
Jacob,*

33 *The son of Juda, the  
son of Phares, the son  
of Esrom, the son of  
Aram, the son of Ami-  
nadab,*

- 
2. Solomon.
  3. Roboam.
  4. Abiah.
  5. Asa.
  6. Josaphat.
  7. Joram.
  8. Uzziah (Ozias).
  9. Jotham.
  10. Ahaz.
  11. Hezekiah.
  12. Manasseh.
  13. Amon.
  14. Josiah.

1. Jechoniah.
2. Salathiel.
3. Zorobabel.
4. Abiud.
5. Eliakim.
6. Azor.
7. Sadoc.
8. Achim.

32 *The son of Naasson,  
the son of Salmon, the  
son of Booz, the son of  
Obed, the son of Jesse,*  
31 *The son of David,  
the son of Nathan, the  
son of Mattatha, the  
son of Menan, the son  
of Melea,*  
30 *The son of Eliakim,  
the son of Jonan, the  
son of Joseph, the son  
of Juda, the son of  
Simeon,*

---

9. Eliud.

10. Eleazar.

11. Matthan.

12. Jacob.

13. Joseph.

14. Jesus.

“2. Another difficulty arises from the fact, that between Joram and Ozias, in v. 8, three names of Jewish kings are omitted, viz. Ahaziah, Joash, and Amaziah; see 2 K. 8, 25 and Chr. 22, 1. 2 K. 11, 2. 21 and 2 Chr. 22, 11. 2 K. 12, 21. 14, 1 and 2 Chr. 24, 27. Further, between Josiah and Jechoniah in v. 11, the name of Jehoiakim is also omitted; 2 K. 23, 34. 2 Chr. 36, 4. comp. 1 Chr. 3, 15, 16. If these four names are to be reckoned, then the second division, instead of fourteen generations, will contain eighteen, in contradiction to v. 17. To avoid this difficulty, Newcome and some others have regarded v. 17 as a mere gloss, ‘a marginal note taken into the text.’ This indeed is in itself possible; yet all the external testimony of manuscripts and versions is in favour of the genuineness of that verse. It is better therefore to regard these names as having been customarily omitted in the current genealogical tables, from which Matthew copied. Such omissions of particular generations did sometimes actually occur, ‘propterea quod malæ essent et impiæ,’ according to R. Sal. Jarchi; Lightfoot, Hor. Heb. in Matth. 1, 8. A striking example of



29 *The son of Levi,  
the son of Matthat, the  
son of Joram, the son  
of Eliezer, the son of  
Jose,*

28 *The son of Er, the  
son of Elmodam, the  
son of Cosam, the son  
of Addi, the son of  
Melchi,*

27 *The son of Neri, the  
son of Salathiel, the  
son of Zorobabel, the  
son of Rhesa, the son  
of Joanna,*

---

an omission of this kind, apparently without any such reason, is found in Ezra 7, 1-5, compared with 1 Chr. 6, 3-15. This latter passage contains the lineal descent of the high-priests from Aaron to the captivity; while Ezra, in the place cited, in tracing back his own genealogy through the very same line of descent, omits at least six generations. A similar omission is necessarily implied in the genealogy of David, as given Ruth 4, 20-22. 1 Chr. 2, 10-12. Matth. 1, 5, 6. Salmon was contemporary with the capture of Jericho by Joshua, and married Rahab. But from that time until David, an interval of at least four hundred and fifty years (Acts 13, 20,) there intervened, according to the list, only four generations, averaging of course more than one hundred years to each. But the highest average in point of fact is *three* generations to a century; and if reckoned by the eldest sons they are usually shorter, or three generations for every seventy-five or eighty years. See Sir I. Newton's Chronol. p. 53. Lond. 1728.

“We may therefore rest in the necessary conclusion, that as our Lord's regular descent from David was always asserted, and was never denied even by the Jews; so Matthew, in tracing this admitted descent, appealed to genealogical tables, which were public and acknowledged in the family and tribe from which Christ sprang. He could not indeed do otherwise. How much stress was laid by the Jews upon lineage in general, and how much care and attention were bestowed upon such tables, is well known. See Lightfoot, Hor. Heb. in Matth.

26 *The son of Juda, the son of Joseph, the son of Semei, the son of Mattathias, the son of Maath,*

25 *The son of Nagge, the son of Esli, the son of Naum, the son of Amos, the son of Mattathias,*

24 *The son of Joseph, the son of Janna, the son of Melchi, the son of Levi, the son of Matthat,*

---

1, 1. Comp. Phil. 3, 4, 5.

“II. Other questions of some difficulty present themselves, when we compare together the two genealogies.

“1. Both tables at first view purport to give the lineage of our Lord through Joseph. But Joseph cannot have been the son by natural descent of both Joseph and Heli (Eli), Matth. 1, 16. Luke 3, 23. Only one of the tables therefore can give his true lineage by generation. This is done apparently in that of Matthew; because, beginning at Abraham, it proceeds by natural descent, as we know from history, until after the exile; and then continues on in the same mode of expression until Joseph. Here the phrase is changed; and it is no longer Joseph who ‘begat’ Jesus, but Joseph ‘the husband of Mary, of whom was born Jesus who is called the Christ.’ See Augustine, de Consensu Evangel. II. 5.

“2. To whom then does the genealogy in Luke chiefly relate? If in any way to Joseph, as the language purports, then it must be because he in some way bore the legal relation of son to Heli, either by adoption or by marriage. If the former simply, it is difficult to comprehend why, along with his true personal lineage as traced by Matthew up through the royal line of Jewish kings to David, there should be given also another subordinate genealogy, not personally his own, and running back through a different and inferior line to the same great ancestor. If, on the other hand, as is most probable, this relation to Heli came by marriage with his daughter, so that Joseph was truly

23 *The son of Heli, the  
son of Joseph,—And  
Jesus himself ... being  
(as was supposed)—*

[081]

---

called the son (descendant) of Manasseh. In like manner, in Ezra, 2, 61, and Neh. 7, 63, a certain family is spoken of as 'the children of Barzillai;' because their ancestor 'took a wife of the daughters of Barzillai the Gileadite, and was called after their name.'

"3. A question is raised as to the identity, in the two genealogies, of the Salathiel and Zorobabel named as father and son, Matth. 1, 12. Luke 3, 27. The Zorobabel of Matthew is no doubt the chief, who led back the first band of captives from Babylon, and rebuilt the temple, Ezra c. 2-6. He is also called the son of Salathiel in Ezra 3, 2. Neb. 12, 1. Hagg. 1, 1. 2, 2. 23. Were then the Salathiel and Zorobabel of Luke the same persons? Those who assume this, must rest solely on the identity of the names; for there is no other possible evidence to prove, either that they were contemporary, or that they were not different persons. On the other hand, there are one or two considerations, of some force, which go to show that they were probably not the same persons.

"First, if Salathiel and Zorobabel are indeed the same in both genealogies, then Salathiel who, according to Matthew, was the son of Jechoniah by natural descent, must have been called the son of Neri in Luke either from adoption or marriage. In that case, his connection with David through Nathan, as given by Luke, was not his own personal genealogy. It is difficult, therefore, to see Luke, after tracing back the descent of Jesus to Salathiel, should abandon the true personal lineage in the royal line of kings, and turn aside again to a merely

---

collateral and humbler line. If the mother of Jesus was in fact descended from the Zorobabel and Salathiel of Matthew, she, like them, was descended also from David through the royal line. Why rob her of this dignity, and ascribe to her only a descent through an inferior lineage? See Spanheim *Dubia Evangel.* I. p. 108, sq.

“Again, the mere identity of names under these circumstances, affords no proof; for nothing is more common even among contemporaries. Thus we have two Ezras; one in Neh. 12, 1. 13, 33; from whom Ezra the scribe is expressly distinguished in v. 36. We have likewise two Nehemiahs; one who went up with Zorobabel, Ezra 2, 2; and the other the governor who went later to Jerusalem, Neh. 2, 9, sq. So too, as contemporaries, Joram son of Ahab, king of Israel, and Joram (Jehoram,) son of Jehoshaphat, king of Judah; 2 K. 8, 16, coll. v. 23, 24. Also Joash king of Judah, and Joash king of Israel; 2 K. 13, 9, 10. Further, we find in succession among the descendants of Cain the following names: Enoch, Irad, Mehujael, Methusael, Lamech, Gen. 4, 17, 18; and later among the descendants of Seth these similar ones: Enoch, Methusalah, Lamech, Gen. 5, 21-25.” See Dr. Robinson's *Greek Harmony of the Gospels*, pp. 183-187.

his *son-in-law* (comp. Ruth 1, 8. 11. 12); then it follows, that the genealogy in Luke is in fact that of Mary the mother of Jesus. This being so, we can perceive a sufficient reason why this genealogy should be thus given, viz. in order to

---

show definitely, that Jesus was in the most full and perfect sense a descendant of David: not only by law in the royal line of kings, through his reputed father, but also in fact by direct personal descent through his mother.

“That Mary, like Joseph, was a descendant of David, is not indeed elsewhere expressly said in the New Testament. Yet a very strong presumption to that effect is to be drawn from the address of the angel in Luke 1, 32; as also from the language of Luke 2, 5, where Joseph, as one of the posterity of David, is said to have gone up to Bethlehem, to *enroll himself with Mary his espoused wife*. The ground and circumstances of Mary's enrolment must obviously have been the same as in the case of Joseph himself. Whether all this arose from her having been an only child and heiress, as some suppose, so that she was espoused to Joseph in accordance with Num. 36, 8, 9, it is not necessary here to inquire. See Michaelis ‘Commentaries on the Laws of Moses,’ Part II. § 78.

“It is indeed objected, that it was not customary among the Jews to trace back descent through the female line, that is, on the mother's side. There are, however, examples to show that this was sometimes done; and in the case of Jesus, as we have seen, there was a sufficient reason for it. Thus in 1 Chr. 2, 22, Jair is enumerated among the posterity of Judah by regular descent. But the grandfather of Jair had married the daughter of Machir, one of the heads of Manasseh, 1 Chr. 2, 21. 7, 14; and therefore in Num. 32, 40. 41, Jair is

## Part II. Announcement And Introduction Of Our Lord's Public Ministry.

[082]

TIME. *About one year.*

### § 14. The Ministry of John the Baptist. *The Desert. The Jordan.*

Matthew.

CH. III. 1-12.

In those days came John the Baptist, preaching in the wilderness of Judea,

2 And saying, Repent ye; for the kingdom of heaven is at hand.

3 For this is he that was spoken of by the prophet Esaias, saying, The voice of one crying in the wilderness, Prepare ye the way of the Lord, make his paths straight.

Mark.

CH. I. 1-8.

The beginning of the gospel of Jesus Christ the Son of God:

As it is written in the prophets,<sup>102</sup> Behold, I send my messenger before thy face, which shall prepare thy way before thee;

3 The voice of one crying in the wilderness, Prepare ye the way of the Lord, make his paths straight.

---

<sup>0</sup> Mal. iii. 1; Is. xl. 3.

4 And the same John had his raiment of camel's hair, and a leathern girdle about his loins; and his meat was locusts and wild honey.

5 Then went out to him Jerusalem, and all Judea, and all the region round about Jordan.

6 And were baptized of him in Jordan, confessing their sins.

7 But when he saw many of the Pharisees and Sadducees come to his baptism, he said unto them, O generation of vipers, who hath warned you to flee from the wrath to come?

4 John did baptize in the wilderness, and preach the baptism of repentance, for the remission of sins.

5 And there went out unto him all the land of Judea, and they of Jerusalem, and were all baptized of him in the river of Jordan, confessing their sins.

6 And John was clothed with camel's hair, and with a girdle of a skin about his loins; and he did eat locusts and wild honey;

7 And preached, saying, There cometh one mightier than I after me, the latchet of whose shoes I am not worthy to stoop down and unloose.

8 Bring forth therefore fruits meet for repentance:

8 I indeed have baptized you with water: but he shall baptize you with the Holy Ghost.

9 And think not to say within yourselves, We have Abraham to our father: for I say unto you, that God is able of these stones to raise up children unto Abraham.

10 And now also the axe is laid unto the root of the trees: therefore every tree which bringeth not forth good fruit is hewn down, and cast into the fire.

11 I indeed baptize you with water unto repentance: but he that cometh after me is mightier than I, whose shoes I am not worthy to bear: he shall baptize you with the Holy Ghost, and *with* fire:



12 Whose fan *is* in his hand, and he will thoroughly purge his floor, and gather his wheat into the garner; but he will burn up the chaff with unquenchable fire.

Luke.

CH. III. 1-18.

Now in the fifteenth year of the reign of Tiberius Cesar, Pontius Pilate being governor of Judea, and Herod being tetrarch of Galilee, and his brother Philip tetrarch of Iturea and of the region of Trachonitis, and Lysanias the tetrarch of Abilene.

2 Annas and Caiaphas being the high priests,<sup>103</sup> the word of God came unto John the son of Zacharias in the wilderness.

---

<sup>0</sup> In the New Testament, the same word is used for *the high priests*, and the chief priests, who were the heads of the twenty-four courses. So that the two persons whom the Roman governor considered as the chief of the priests, and

3 And he came into  
all the country about  
Jordan, preaching the  
baptism of repentance,  
for the remission of  
sins;

4 As it is writ-  
ten in the book of  
the words of Esaias  
the prophet, saying,<sup>104</sup>  
The voice of one cry-  
ing in the wilderness,  
Prepare ye the way  
of the Lord, make his  
paths straight.

5 Every valley shall  
be filled, and every  
mountain and hill shall  
be brought low; and  
the crooked shall be  
made straight, and the  
rough ways shall be  
made smooth;

6 And all flesh shall see  
the salvation of God.

---

whose names stood as such in those public registers which seem here referred to, may be intended. An irregularity had arisen out of the confusion of the times: and the ruler or prince under the Romans, though a chief priest, was a distinct person from the high priest: Annas being the one, and Caiaphas the other. Scott, *in loc.* See also Campbell, *in loc.*

<sup>0</sup> Is. xl. 3, seq.

7 Then said he to the multitude that came forth to be baptized of him, O generation of vipers, who hath warned you to flee from the wrath to come?

8 Bring forth therefore fruits worthy of repentance, and begin not to say within yourselves, We have Abraham to *our* father: for I say unto you, That God is able of these stones to raise up children unto Abraham.

9 And now also the axe is laid unto the root of the trees: every tree therefore which bringeth not forth good fruit, is hewn down, and cast into the fire.

10 And the people asked him, saying, What shall we do then?

11 He answereth and saith unto them, He that hath two coats, let him impart to him that hath none; and he that hath meat, let him do likewise.

12 Then came also publicans to be baptized, and said unto him, Master, what shall we do?

13 And he said unto them, Exact no more than that which is appointed you.

14 And the soldiers likewise demanded of him, saying, And what shall we do? And he said unto them, Do violence to no man, neither accuse *any* falsely; and be content with your wages.

15 And as the people were in expectation, and all men mused in their hearts of John, whether he were the Christ, or not;

16 John answered, saying unto *them* all, I indeed baptize you with water; but one mightier than I cometh, the latchet of whose shoes I am not worthy to unloose: he shall baptize you with the Holy Ghost, and with fire:

17 Whose fan *is* in his hand, and he will thoroughly purge his floor, and will gather the wheat into his garner; but the chaff he will burn with fire unquenchable.

18 And many other things in his exhortation preached he unto the people.

[084]

## § 15. The Baptism of Jesus. *The Jordan.*

Matthew.  
CH. III. 13-17.

Mark.  
CH. I. 9-11.

13 Then cometh Jesus from Galilee to Jordan unto John, to be baptized of him.

14 But John forbade him, saying, I have need to be baptized of thee, and comest thou to me?

15 And Jesus answering said unto him, Suffer *it to be so* now: for thus it becometh us to fulfil all righteousness. Then he suffered him.

16 And Jesus, when he was baptized, when up straightway out of the water: and lo, the heavens were opened unto him, and he saw the Spirit of God descending like a dove, and lighting upon him:

17 And lo, a voice from heaven, saying, This is my beloved Son, in whom I am well pleased.

9 And it came to pass in those days, that Jesus came from Nazareth of Galilee, and was baptized of John in Jordan.

10 And straightway coming up out of the water, he saw the heavens opened, and the Spirit like a dove descending upon him.

11 And there came a voice from heaven saying, Thou art my beloved Son, in whom I am well pleased.

Luke.

CH. III. 21-23.

21 Now, when all the people were baptized, it came to pass, that Jesus also being baptized, and praying, the heaven was opened,

22 And the Holy Ghost descended in a bodily shape like a dove upon him, and a voice came from heaven, which said, Thou art my beloved Son; in thee I am well pleased.

23 And Jesus himself began to be about thirty years of age.

[086]

## § 16. The Temptation. *Desert of Judea*

Matthew.

CH. IV. 1-11.

Then was Jesus led up of the Spirit into the wilderness to be tempted of the devil.

Mark.

CH. I. 12-13.

12 And immediately the Spirit driveth him into the wilderness.

2 And when he had fasted forty days and forty nights, he was afterward an hungered.

13 And he was there in the wilderness forty days tempted of Satan; and was with the wild beasts; and the angels ministered unto him.

3 And when the tempter came to him, he said, If thou be the Son of God, command that these stones be made bread.

4 But he answered and said, It is written<sup>105</sup> Man shall not live by bread alone, but by every word that proceedeth out of the mouth of God.

5 Then the devil taketh him up into the holy city, and setteth him on a pinnacle of the temple,

---

<sup>0</sup> Deut. viii. 3.



6 And saith unto him,  
 If thou be the Son  
 of God cast thyself  
 down, for it is writ-  
 ten<sup>106</sup> He shall give his  
 angels charge concern-  
 ing thee: and in *their*  
 hands they shall bear  
 thee up, lest at any  
 time thou dash thy foot  
 against a stone.

7 Jesus said unto him,  
 It is written again,<sup>107</sup>  
 Thou shalt not tempt  
 the Lord thy God.

8 Again, the devil  
 taketh him up into an  
 exceeding high moun-  
 tain and sheweth him  
 all the kingdoms of the  
 world, and the glory of  
 them:

9 And saith unto him,  
 All these things will I  
 give thee, if thou wilt  
 fall down and worship  
 me.

---

<sup>0</sup> Deut. vi. 16.

<sup>0</sup> Ps. xci. 11.

10 Then saith Jesus  
unto him, Get thee  
hence, Satan: for it is  
written,<sup>108</sup> Thou shalt  
worship the Lord thy  
God, and him only  
shalt thou serve.

11 Then the devil  
leaveth him, and be-  
hold, angels came and  
ministered unto him.

Luke.

CH. IV. 1-13.<sup>109</sup>

And Jesus, being full  
of the Holy Ghost,  
returned from Jordan,  
and was led by the  
Spirit into the wilder-  
ness,

2 Being forty days  
tempted of the devil.  
And in those days he  
did eat nothing: and  
when they were ended,  
he afterward hungered.

---

<sup>0</sup> Deut. vi. 13.

<sup>0</sup> There is a seeming discrepancy between Matthew and Luke, in the order of the temptations; but Luke does not affirm the order; whereas Matthew uses particles, in v. 2 and 8, which seem to fix it as he has written. NEWCOME{FNS.

3 And the devil said unto him, If thou be the Son of God, command this stone that it be made bread.

4 And Jesus answered him, saying, It is written, That man shall not live by bread alone, but by every word of God.

9 And he brought him to Jerusalem, and set him on a pinnacle of the temple, and said unto him, If thou be the Son of God, cast thyself down from hence:

10 For it is written, He shall give his angels charge over thee, to keep thee:

11 And in *their* hands they shall bear thee up, lest at any time thou dash thy foot against a stone.

12 And Jesus answering, said unto him, It is said, Thou shalt not tempt the Lord thy God.

5 And the devil,  
taking him up into  
a high mountain,  
shewed unto him, all  
the kingdoms of the  
world in a moment of  
time.

6 And the devil said  
unto him, All this  
power will I give thee,  
and the glory of them:  
for that is delivered  
unto me, and to whom-  
soever I will, I give it.

7 If thou therefore wilt  
worship me, all shall  
be thine.

8 And Jesus answered  
and said unto him, Get  
thee behind me, Satan:  
for it is written, Thou  
shalt worship the Lord  
thy God, and him only  
shalt thou serve.

13 And when the devil  
had ended all the temp-  
tation, he departed  
from him for a season.

[088]

## § 17. Preface to John's Gospel.

John.

CH. I. 1-18.

In the beginning was  
the Word, and the  
Word was with God,  
and the Word was God.

2 The same was in the  
beginning with God.

3 All things were made  
by him; and without  
him was not anything  
made that was made.

4 In him was life; and  
the life was the light of  
men.

5 And the light  
shineth in darkness;  
and the darkness com-  
prehended it not.

6 There was a man  
sent from God, whose  
name *was* John.

7 The same came for  
a witness, to bear wit-  
ness of the Light, that  
all *men* through him  
might believe.

8 He was not that  
Light, but *was sent* to  
bear witness of that  
light.

9 *That* was the true Light, which lighteth every man that cometh into the world.

10 He was in the world, and the world was made by him, and the world knew him not.

11 He came unto his own, and his own received him not.

12 But as many as received him, to them gave he power to become the sons of God, *even* to them that believe on his name:

13 Which were born, not of blood, nor of the will of the flesh, nor of the will of man, but of God.

14 And the Word was made flesh, and dwelt among us, (and we beheld his glory, the glory as of the only begotten of the Father,) full of grace and truth.

15 John bare witness of  
him, and cried, saying,  
This was he of whom I  
spake, He that cometh  
after me, is preferred  
before me; for he was  
before me.

16 And of his fulness  
have all we received,  
and grace for grace.

17 For the law was  
given by Moses, *but*  
grace and truth came  
by Jesus Christ.

18 No man hath seen  
God at any time; the  
only begotten Son,  
which is in the bosom  
of the Father, he hath  
declared *him*.

[090]

§ 18. Testimony of John the Baptist to Jesus.  
*Bethany beyond Jordan.*

John.

CH. I. 19-34.

19 And this is the record of John, when the Jews sent priests and Levites from Jerusalem, to ask him, Who art thou?

20 And he confessed, and denied not; but confessed, I am not the Christ.

21 And they asked him, What then? Art thou Elias? And he saith, I am not. Art thou that prophet? And he answered, No.<sup>110</sup>

22 Then said they unto him, Who art thou? that we may give an answer to them that sent us. What sayest thou of thyself?

---

<sup>0</sup> John means that he was not really Elias risen from the dead. But when Jesus says, (Matth. xvii. 12, and xi. 14,) that Elias was come already, he means that John had appeared *in the spirit and power of Elias*. Luke i. 17. Thus likewise, John here denies that he is one of the ancient prophets again appearing on earth: see Luke ix 19; with which our Lord's assertion that he was an eminent prophet, Luke vii. 28, seems perfectly consistent. Newcome.



23 He said,<sup>111</sup> I am  
the voice of one cry-  
ing in the wilderness,  
Make straight the way  
of the Lord, as said the  
prophet Esaias.

24 And they which  
were sent were of the  
Pharisees.

25 And they asked  
him, and said unto him,  
Why baptizest thou  
then, if thou be not that  
Christ, nor Elias, nei-  
ther that prophet?

26 John answered  
them, saying, I baptize  
with water: but there  
standeth one among  
you, whom ye know  
not.

27 He it is, who  
coming after me, is  
preferred before me,  
whose shoe's latchet I  
am not worthy to un-  
loose.

28 These things were  
done in Bethabara be-  
yond Jordan, where  
John was baptizing.

---

<sup>0</sup> Is. xl. 3.

29 The next day John seeth Jesus coming unto him, and saith, Behold the Lamb of God, which taketh away the sin of the world!

30 This is he of whom I said, After me cometh a man which is preferred before me; for he was before me.

31 And I knew him not: but that he should be made manifest to Israel, therefore am I come baptizing with water.

32 And John bare record, saying, I saw the Spirit descending from heaven like a dove, and it abode upon him.

33 And I knew him  
not: but he that sent  
me to baptize with wa-  
ter, the same said unto  
me, Upon whom thou  
shalt see the Spirit de-  
scending and remain-  
ing on him, the same  
is he which baptizeth  
with the Holy Ghost.

34 And I saw and bare  
record, that this is the  
Son of God.

[092]

## § 19. Jesus gains disciples. *The Jordan. Galilee.*

John.

CH. I. 35-51.

35 Again the next day  
after, John stood, and  
two of his disciples;

36 And looking upon  
Jesus as he walked, he  
saith, Behold the Lamb  
of God!

37 And the two disci-  
ples heard him speak,  
and they followed Je-  
sus.

38 Then Jesus turned, and saw them following, and saith unto them, What seek ye? They said unto him, Rabbi, (which is to say, being interpreted, Master,) where dwellest thou?

39 He saith unto them, Come and see. They came and saw where he dwelt, and abode with him that day: for it was about the tenth hour.

40 One of the two which heard John *speaking*, and followed him, was Andrew, Simon Peter's brother.

41 He first findeth his own brother Simon, and saith unto him, We have found the Messiah; which is, being interpreted, the Christ.

42 And he brought him to Jesus. And when Jesus beheld him, he said, Thou art Simon the son of Jona: thou shalt be called Cephas; which is, by interpretation, a stone.<sup>112</sup>

43 The day following Jesus would go forth into Galilee, and findeth Philip, and saith unto him, Follow me.

44 Now Philip was of Bethsaida, the city of Andrew and Peter.

45 Philip findeth Nathanael,<sup>113</sup> and saith unto him, We have found him of whom Moses in the law, and the prophets, did write, Jesus of Nazareth the son of Joseph.

---

<sup>0</sup> Kings and princes very often changed the names of those who held offices under them, particularly when they first attracted their notice and were taken into their employ; and when subsequently they were elevated to some new station, and crowned with additional honours. Gen. xli. 45; and xvii. 5; and xxxii. 28; and xxxv. 10; 2 Kin. xxiii. 34, 35; and xxiv. 17; Dan. i. 6. Hence a name (*a new name*) occurs topically, as a token of honour, in Phil. ii. 9; Heb. i. 4; Rev. ii. 17. See also Mark iii. 17. Jahn's Archæol. § 164.

<sup>0</sup> *Nathanael*. This apostle is supposed to be the same with *Bartholomew*, of whom John says nothing; and the others make no mention of *Nathanael*. This

46 And Nathanael said unto him, Can there any good thing come out of Nazareth? Philip saith unto him, Come and see.

47 Jesus saw Nathanael coming to him, and saith of him, Behold an Israelite indeed, in whom is no guile!

48 Nathanael saith unto him, Whence knowest thou me? Jesus answered and said unto him, Before that Philip called thee, when thou wast under the fig-tree, I saw thee.

49 Nathanael answered and saith unto him, Rabbi, thou art the Son of God; thou art the King of Israel.

---

seems to have been his proper name; since the name of *Bartholomew* is not a proper name, but only signifies *the son of Ptolomy*. *Nathanael* is also ranked among the Apostles to whom Jesus showed himself. *John* xxi. 2-4. A. Clarke, *in loc.*

50 Jesus answered and said unto him, Because I said unto thee, I saw thee under the fig-tree, believest thou? thou shalt see greater things than these.

51 And he saith unto him, Verily, verily, I say unto you, Hereafter ye shall see heaven open, and the angels of God ascending and descending upon the<sup>114</sup> Son of man.

[096]

## § 20. The Marriage at Cana of Galilee.

John.

CH. II. 1-12.

And the third day there was a marriage in Cana of Galilee; and the mother of Jesus was there.

2 And both Jesus was called, and his disciples, to the marriage.

---

<sup>0</sup> Gen. xxviii. 12.

3 And when they wanted wine, the mother of Jesus saith unto him, They have no wine.

4 Jesus saith unto her, Woman, what have I to do with thee? mine hour is not yet come.

5 His mother saith unto the servants, Whatsoever he saith unto you, do *it*.

6 And there were set there six water-pots of stone, after the manner of the purifying of the Jews, containing two or three firkins apiece.

7 Jesus saith unto them, Fill the water-pots with water. And they filled them up to the brim.

8 And he saith unto them, Draw out now, and bear unto the governor of the feast. And they bare *it*.



9 When the ruler of the feast had tasted the water that was made wine, and knew not whence it was, (but the servants which drew the water knew,) the governor of the feast called the bridegroom,

10 And saith unto him, Every man at the beginning doth set forth good wine; and when men have well drunk, then that which is worse: *but* thou hast kept the good wine until now.

11 This beginning of miracles did Jesus in Cana of Galilee, and manifested forth his glory; and his disciples believed on him.

12 After this he went down to Capernaum, he, and his mother, and his brethren, and his disciples; and they continued there not many days.

### Part III. Our Lord's First Passover, And The Subsequent Transactions Until The Second.

[100]

TIME. *One year.*

§ 21. At the Passover Jesus drives the traders out of the Temple. *Jerusalem.*

John.

CH. II. 13-25.

13 And the Jews' passover was at hand, and Jesus went up to Jerusalem.

14 And found in the temple those that sold oxen, and sheep, and doves, and the changers of money, sitting:

15 And when he had made a scourge of small cords, he drove them all out of the temple, and the sheep, and the oxen; and poured out the changers' money, and overthrew the tables;

16 And said unto them  
that sold doves, Take  
these things hence:  
make not my Father's  
house an house of mer-  
chandise.

17 And his disciples  
remembered that it was  
written,<sup>115</sup> The zeal of  
thine house hath eaten  
me up.

18 Then answered  
the Jews, and said  
unto him, What sign  
shewest thou unto us,  
seeing that thou dost  
these things?

19 Jesus answered and  
said unto them, De-  
stroy this temple, and  
in three days I will  
raise it up.

20 Then said the Jews,  
Forty and six years was  
this temple in building,  
and wilt thou rear it up  
in three days?

21 But he spake of the  
temple of his body.

---

<sup>0</sup> Ps. lxi. 9.

22 When therefore he was risen from the dead, his disciples remembered that he had said this unto them: and they believed the scripture, and the word which Jesus had said.

23 Now, when he was in Jerusalem at the passover, in the *feast-day*, many believed in his name, when they saw the miracles which he did.

24 But Jesus did not commit himself unto them, because he knew all *men*.

25 And needed not that any should testify of man: for he knew what was in man.

§ 22. Our Lord's discourse with Nicodemus.  
*Jerusalem.*

John.

CH. III. 1-21.

There was a man of the Pharisees named Nicodemus, a ruler of the Jews:

2 The same came to Jesus by night, and said unto him, Rabbi, we know that thou art a teacher come from God: for no man can do these miracles that thou doest, except God be with him.

3 Jesus answered and said unto him, Verily, verily, I say unto thee, Except a man be born again, he cannot see the kingdom of God.

4 Nicodemus saith unto him, How can a man be born when he is old? can he enter the second time into his mother's womb, and be born?

5 Jesus answered, Verily, verily, I say unto thee, Except a man be born of water, and of the Spirit, he cannot enter into the kingdom of God.

6 That which is born of the flesh, is flesh; and that which is born of the Spirit, is spirit.

7 Marvel not that I said unto thee, Ye must be born again.

8 The wind bloweth where it listeth, and thou hearest the sound thereof, but canst not tell whence it cometh, and whither it goeth: so is every one that is born of the Spirit.

9 Nicodemus answered and said unto him, How can these things be?

10 Jesus answered and said unto him, Art thou a master of Israel, and knowest not these things?

11 Verily, verily, I say unto thee, We speak that we do know, and testify that we have seen; and ye receive not our witness.

12 If I have told you earthly things, and ye believe not, how shall ye believe if I tell you *of* heavenly things?

13 And no man hath ascended up to heaven, but he that came down from heaven, *even* the Son of man which is in heaven.

14 And as<sup>116</sup> Moses lifted up the serpent in the wilderness, even so must the Son of man be lifted up:

15 That whosoever believeth in him should not perish, but have eternal life.

16 For God so loved the world, that he gave his only begotten Son, that whosoever believeth in him, should not perish, but have everlasting life.

---

<sup>0</sup> Numb. xxi. 8, seq.

17 For God sent not his Son into the world to condemn the world, but that the world through him might be saved.

18 He that believeth on him, is not condemned: but he that believeth not, is condemned already, because he hath not believed in the name of the only begotten Son of God.

19 And this is the condemnation, that light is come into the world, and men loved darkness rather than light, because their deeds were evil.

20 For every one that doeth evil hateth the light, neither cometh to the light, lest his deeds should be reproved.

21 But he that doeth truth, cometh to the light, that his deeds may be made manifest, that they are wrought in God.



§ 23. Jesus remains in Judea and baptizes. Further testimony of John the Baptist.

John.

CH. III. 22-36.

22 After these things came Jesus and his disciples into the land of Judea; and there he tarried with them, and baptized.

23 And John also was baptizing in Ænon, near to Salim, because there was much water there: and they came, and were baptized.

24 For John was not yet cast into prison.

25 Then there arose a question between *some* of John's disciples and the Jews, about purifying.

26 And they came unto John and said unto him, Rabbi, he that was with thee beyond Jordan, to whom thou bearest witness, behold, the same baptizeth, and all men come to him.

27 John answered and said, A man can receive nothing, except it be given him from heaven.

28 Ye yourselves bear me witness, that I said, I am not the Christ, but that I am sent before him.

29 He that hath the bride is the bridegroom: but the friend of the bridegroom, which standeth and heareth him, rejoiceth greatly, because of the bridegroom's voice: this my joy therefore is fulfilled.

30 He must increase, but I must decrease.

31 He that cometh from above, is above all: he that is of the earth is earthly, and speaketh of the earth: he that cometh from heaven is above all.

32 And what he hath seen, and heard, that he testifieth; and no man receiveth his testimony.

33 He that hath received his testimony, hath set to his seal that God is true.

34 For he whom God hath sent, speaketh the words of God: for God giveth not the Spirit by measure *unto him*.

35 The Father loveth the Son, and hath given all things into his hand.

36 He that believeth on the Son hath everlasting life: and he that believeth not the Son, shall not see life; but the wrath of God abideth on him.

§ 24. Jesus departs into Galilee after John's imprisonment.

Matthew.

CH. IV. 12.

12 Now, when Jesus had heard that John was cast into prison, he departed into Galilee.

CH. XIV. 3-5.

3 For Herod had laid hold on John, and bound him, and put *him* in prison for Herodias' sake, his brother Philip's wife.

4 For John said unto him, It is not lawful for thee to have her.

5 And when he would have put him to death, he feared the multitude, because they counted him as a prophet.

Mark.

CH. I. 14.

14 Now, after that John was put in prison, Jesus came into Galilee.

CH. VI. 17-20.

17 For Herod himself had sent forth and laid hold upon John, and bound him in prison for Herodias' sake, his brother Philip's wife: for he had married her.

18 For John had said unto Herod, It is not lawful for thee to have thy brother's wife.

19 Therefore Herodias had a quarrel against him, and would have killed him; but she could not:

20 For Herod feared John, knowing that he was a just man and an holy, and observed him: and when he heard him, he did many things, and heard him gladly.

Luke.

CH. IV. 14.

14 And Jesus returned in the power of the Spirit into Galilee:

CH. III. 19, 20.

19 But Herod the tetrarch, being reproved by him for Herodias his brother Philip's wife, and for all the evils which Herod had done,

John.

CH. IV. 1-3.

When therefore the Lord knew how the Pharisees had heard that Jesus made and baptized more disciples than John,

2 (Though Jesus himself baptized not, but his disciples,)

3 He left Judea, and departed again into Galilee.

20 Added yet this  
above all, that he shut  
up John in prison.

[108]

§ 25. Our Lord's discourse with the Samaritan woman. Many Samaritans believe on him. *Shechem* or *Neapolis*.

John.

CH. IV. 4-42.

4 And he must needs  
go through Samaria.

5 Then cometh he to a  
city of Samaria, which  
is called Sychar, near  
to the parcel of ground  
that Jacob gave to his  
son Joseph.

6 Now Jacob's well  
was there. Jesus  
therefore being wea-  
ried with *his* journey,  
sat thus on the well:  
and it was about the  
sixth hour.

7 There cometh a  
woman of Samaria to  
draw water; Jesus saith  
unto her, Give me to  
drink.

8 (For his disciples were gone away unto the city to buy meat.)

9 Then saith the woman of Samaria unto him, How is it that thou, being a Jew, askest drink of me, which am a woman of Samaria? for the Jews have no dealings with the Samaritans.

10 Jesus answered and said unto her, If thou knewest the gift of God, and who it is that saith to thee, Give me to drink; thou wouldest have asked of him, and he would have given thee living water.

11 The woman saith unto him, Sir, thou hast nothing to draw with, and the well is deep: from whence then hast thou that living water?

12 Art thou greater than our father Jacob, which gave us the well, and drank thereof himself, and his children, and his cattle?

13 Jesus answered and said unto her, Whosoever drinketh of this water, shall thirst again:

14 But whosoever drinketh of the water that I shall give him, shall never thirst; but the water that I shall give him, shall be in him a well of water springing up into everlasting life.

15 The woman saith unto him, Sir, give me this water, that I thirst not, neither come hither to draw.

16 Jesus saith unto her, Go call thy husband, and come hither.

17 The woman answered and said, I have no husband. Jesus said unto her, Thou hast well said, I have no husband:

18 For thou hast had five husbands, and he whom thou now hast, is not thy husband: in that saidst thou truly.



19 The woman saith unto him, Sir, I perceive that thou art a prophet.

20 Our fathers worshipped in this mountain; and ye say, that in Jerusalem is the place where men ought to worship.

21 Jesus saith unto her, Woman, believe me, the hour cometh, when ye shall neither in this mountain, nor yet at Jerusalem, worship the Father.

22 Ye worship ye know not what: we know what we worship, for salvation is of the Jews.

23 But the hour cometh, and now is, when the true worshippers shall worship the Father in spirit and in truth: for the Father seeketh such to worship him.

24 God is a Spirit: and they that worship him, must worship him in spirit and in truth.

25 The woman saith unto him, I know that the Messiah cometh, which is called Christ; when he is come, he will tell us all things.

26 Jesus saith unto her, I that speak unto thee am he.

27 And upon this came his disciples, and marvelled that he talked with the woman: yet no man said, What seekest thou? or, Why talkest thou with her?

28 The woman then left her waterpot, and went her way into the city, and saith to the men,

29 Come, see a man which told me all things that ever I did: is not this the Christ?

30 Then they went out of the city, and came unto him.

31 In the meanwhile  
his disciples prayed  
him, saying, Master,  
eat.

32 But he said unto  
them, I have meat to  
eat that ye not know  
of.

33 Therefore said the  
disciples one to an-  
other, Hath any man  
brought him aught to  
eat?

34 Jesus saith unto  
them, My meat is to  
do the will of him that  
sent me, and to finish  
his work.

35 Say not ye, There  
are yet four months,  
and *then* cometh har-  
vest? behold, I say  
unto you, Lift up your  
eyes, and look on the  
fields; for they are  
white already to har-  
vest.

36 And he that reapeth  
receiveth wages, and  
gathereth fruit unto life  
eternal: that both he  
that soweth, and he  
that reapeth, may re-  
joice together.

37 And herein is  
that saying true, One  
soweth, and another  
reapeth.

38 I sent you to  
reap that whereon ye  
bestowed no labour:  
other men laboured,  
and ye are entered into  
their labours.

39 And many of the  
Samaritans of that city  
believed on him for the  
saying of the woman,  
which testified, He  
told me all that ever  
I did.

40 So when the Samar-  
itans were come unto  
him, they besought  
him that he would tarry  
with them: and he  
abode there two days.

41 And many more be-  
lieved, because of his  
own word;

42 And said unto the woman, Now we believe, not because of thy saying: for we have heard *him* ourselves, and know that this is indeed the Christ, the Saviour of the world.

[112]

## § 26. Jesus teaches publicly in Galilee.

Matthew.

CH. IV. 17.

17 From that time Jesus began to preach, and to say, Repent: for the kingdom of heaven is at hand.

Mark.

CH. I. 14, 15.

preaching the gospel of the kingdom of God,

15 And saying, the time is fulfilled, and the kingdom of God is at hand; repent ye, and believe the gospel.

Luke.

CH. IV. 14, 15.

and there went out a fame of him through all the region round about.

John.

CH. IV. 43-45.

43 Now, after two days he departed thence, and went into Galilee.

15 And he taught in  
their synagogues, be-  
ing glorified of all.

44 For Jesus himself  
testified, that a prophet  
hath no honour in his  
own country.

45 Then when he  
was come into Galilee,  
the Galileans received  
him, having seen all  
the things that he did at  
Jerusalem at the feast:  
for they also went unto  
the feast.

§ 27. Jesus, again at Cana, heals the son of a  
nobleman lying ill at Capernaum. *Cana of Galilee.*

John.

CH. IV. 46-54.

46 So Jesus came again  
into Cana of Galilee,  
where he made the wa-  
ter wine. And there  
was a certain noble-  
man, whose son was  
sick at Capernaum.

47 When he heard that  
Jesus was come out  
of Judea into Galilee,  
he went unto him, and  
besought him that he  
would come down, and  
heal his son: for he was  
at the point of death.

48 Then said Jesus  
unto him, Except ye  
see signs and wonders,  
ye will not believe.

49 The nobleman saith  
unto him, Sir, come  
down ere my child die.

50 Jesus saith unto  
him, Go thy way; thy  
son liveth. And the  
man believed the word  
that Jesus had spoken  
unto him, and he went  
his way.

51 And as he was now  
going down, his ser-  
vants met him, and told  
*him*, saying, Thy son  
liveth.

52 Then inquired he of them the hour when he began to amend. And they said unto him, Yesterday at the seventh hour the fever left him.

53 So the father knew that *it was* at the same hour, in the which Jesus said unto him, Thy son liveth: and himself believed, and his whole house.

54 This *is* again the second miracle *that* Jesus did, when he was come out of Judea into Galilee.

[114]

§ 28. Jesus is rejected at Nazareth, and fixes his abode at Capernaum.

Matthew.

CH. IV. 13-16.



13 And leaving  
Nazareth, he came and  
dwelt in Capernaum,  
which is upon the  
sea-coast, in the  
borders of Zabulon  
and Napthalim;

14 That it might be  
fulfilled which was  
spoken by Esaias the  
prophet, saying,<sup>117</sup>

15 The land of Zab-  
ulon, and the land of  
Napthalim, *by* the way  
of the sea, beyond Jor-  
dan, Galilee of the  
Gentiles:

16 The people which  
sat in darkness, saw  
great light; and to them  
which sat in the region  
and shadow of death,  
light is sprung up.

(whereon their city was built,) that they might cast him down  
headlong. 30 But he, passing through the midst of them, went  
his way, 31 And came down to Capernaum, a city of Galilee,

Luke.

CH. IV. 16-31.

---

<sup>0</sup> Is. ix. 1.

16 And he came to Nazareth, where he had been brought up: and, as his custom was, he went into the synagogue on the sabbath-day, and stood up for to read.

17 And there was delivered unto him the book of the prophet Esaias. And when he had opened the book, he found the place where it was written,<sup>118</sup>

18 The Spirit of the Lord *is* upon me, because he hath anointed me to preach the gospel to the poor; he hath sent me to heal the brokenhearted, to preach deliverance to the captives, and recovering of sight to the blind, to set at liberty them that are bruised,

19 To preach the acceptable year of the Lord.

---

<sup>0</sup> Is. lxi. 1, and lviii. 6.

20 And he closed the and sat down.<sup>120</sup>

book, and he gave it

again to the minis-

ter,<sup>119</sup>

And the eyes of all them that were in the synagogue were fastened on him. 21 And he began to say unto them, This day is the scripture fulfilled in your ears. 22 And all bare him witness, and wondered at the gracious words which proceeded out of his mouth. And they said, Is not this Joseph's son? 23 And he said unto them, Ye will surely say unto me this proverb, Physician, heal thyself: whatsoever we have heard done in Capernaum, do also here in thy country. 24 And he said, Verily, I say unto you, No prophet is accepted in his own country. 25 But I tell you of a truth, many widows were in Israel in the days of Elias, when the heaven was shut up three years and six months, when great famine was throughout all the land: 26 But unto none of them was Elias sent, save unto Sarepta, a *city* of Sidon, unto a woman *that was a widow*.<sup>121</sup> 27 And many lepers were in Israel in the time of Eliseus the prophet; and none of them was cleansed, saving Naaman the Syrian.<sup>122</sup> 28 And all they in the synagogue, when they heard these things, were filled with wrath, 29 And rose up, and thrust him out of the city, and led him unto the brow of the hill,<sup>123</sup>

[118]

---

<sup>120</sup> The service of the synagogue consisted of reading the scriptures, prayer, and preaching. The posture in which the latter was performed, whether in the synagogue or elsewhere, (see *Matth.* v. 1; *Luke* v. 3,) was sitting. Accordingly when our Saviour had read the portion of scripture, in the synagogue at Nazareth, of which he was a member, having been brought up in that city, and then, instead of retiring to his place, *sat down* in the desk or pulpit, it is said "the eyes of all that were present were fastened upon him," because they perceived, by this posture, that he was about to preach to them. See also Acts xiii. 14, 15. JENNINGS{FNS, Ant. 375.

<sup>0</sup> This word denotes only a subordinate officer, who attended the minister and obeyed his orders in what concerned the more servile part of the work. Among other things he had charge of the sacred books, and delivered them to those to whom he was commanded by his superiors to deliver them. After the reading was over, he deposited them in their proper place. CAMPBELL{FNS,

§ 29. The call of Simon Peter and Andrew, and of James and John, with the miraculous draught of fishes. *Near Capernaum.*

Matthew.

CH. IV. 18-22.

18 And Jesus, walk- by the sea of Galilee, saw two brethren, Simon call-  
ing<sup>124</sup>

casting a net into the  
sea; for they were fish-  
ers.

---

*in loc.*

<sup>121</sup> 1 Kings xvii. 1, 9.

<sup>122</sup> 2 Kings v. 14.

<sup>123</sup> The accuracy of this description is attested by travellers, to this day. See ROBINSON'S {FNS Travels in Palestine, vol. iii., pp. 186, 187.

<sup>0</sup> Matthew says that the disciples were called by Christ while walking by the sea, because that calling followed the walk by the sea. "We say that a thing was done by one walking in this or that place, because he took such a walk, whether he who did the act was then walking, or sitting or standing." Spanb. dub. lxxii. v. 2. This remark reconciles "*walking*," Matth. iv. 18 with "*stood*," Luke v. 1. A like remark may be made with respect to the passages placed parallel to Luke v. 6. Jesus is concisely represented as if he had at first seen Peter and Andrew casting a net into the sea, because they were employed thus in consequence of the interview.

Luke does not deny that more than Simon were seen, nor does he affirm that Simon was seen. Indeed our Lord is said to have seen two ships by the lake. The calling of others beside Simon not only is not denied by Luke, but is sufficiently indicated in v. 11. The words of Matthew (v. 21) "going on from thence," are not to be understood as implying a great distance, but as relating to the neighbouring shore. Matthew relates the principal fact, the calling and the following; Luke has the accompanying circumstances. And there is a

19 And he saith unto them, Follow me, and I will make you fishers of men.

20 And they straightway left *their* nets, and followed him.

21 And going on from mending their nets: and he called them. thence, he saw other two brethren, James *the son* of Zebedee, and John his brother, in a ship with Zebedee their father,<sup>125</sup>

22 And they immediately left the ship, and their father, and followed him.

---

remarkable harmony between them. Matthew records the repairing of their nets by the fishermen; Luke shows how they became broken,—by the great draught they had taken. What is related by Luke, is not denied by Matthew, but omitted only. Nothing, indeed, is more common than to find the omission of some supplied by the other Evangelists. NEWCOME{FNS.

<sup>0</sup> The death of Zebedee is nowhere mentioned in the gospels; yet an undesigned coincidence, and proof of the veracity of the Evangelists, is evident by comparing this place with others, in which his death is tacitly alluded to. Thus, in Chap. viii. 21, it is related that “another of his *disciples* said unto him, Lord, suffer me first to go and *bury my father*,” and in Chap. xx. 20, it is said, “Then came to him the *mother of Zebedee’s children* with her sons, worshipping him,” &c. See also Chap. xxvii. 55. BLUNT{FNS, Veracity of the Gospels, Sec. I. 2. See note on Mark vi. 3; Post, § 55.

Luke.

CH. V. 1-11.

And it came to pass,  
that as the people  
pressed upon him to  
hear the word of God,  
he stood by the lake of  
Gennesaret,

2 And saw two ships  
standing by the lake:  
but the fishermen were  
gone out of them,  
and were washing their  
nets.

3 And he entered  
into one of the ships  
which was Simon's,  
and prayed him that he  
would thrust out a little  
from the land. And he  
sat down, and taught  
the people out of the  
ship.

4 Now, when he had  
left speaking, he said  
unto Simon, Launch  
out into the deep, and  
let down your nets for  
a draught.

---

5 And Simon, answering, said unto him, Master, we have toiled all the night, and have taken nothing; nevertheless, at thy word I will let down the net.

6 And when they had this done, they enclosed a great multitude of fishes: and their net brake.

7 And they beckoned unto *their* partners, which were in the other ship, that they should come and help them. And they came, and filled both the ships, so that they began to sink.

8 When Simon Peter saw *it*, he fell down at Jesus' knees, saying, Depart from me; for I am a sinful man, O Lord.

9 For he was astonished, and all that were with him, at the draught of the fishes which they had taken:

10 And so was  
also James and John  
the sons of Zebedee,  
which were partners  
with Simon. And Je-  
sus said unto Simon,  
Fear not: from hence-  
forth thou shalt catch  
men.

11 And when they had  
brought their ships to  
land, they forsook all,  
and followed him.

[120]

§ 30. The healing of a demoniac in the Synagogue.  
*Capernaum.*

Mark.

CH. I. 21-28.

21 And they went  
into Capernaum; and  
straightway on the  
sabbath-day he entered  
into the synagogue and  
taught.

22 And they were as-  
tonished at his doc-  
trine: for he taught  
them as one that had  
authority, and not as  
the scribes.



23 And there was in  
their synagogue a man  
with an unclean spirit;  
and he cried out,

24 Saying, Let us  
alone; what have we  
to do with thee, thou  
Jesus of Nazareth? art  
thou, come to destroy  
us? I know thee who  
thou art, the Holy One  
of God.

25 And Jesus rebuked  
him, saying, Hold thy  
peace, and come out of  
him.

26 And when the un- and cried with a loud voice, he came out of him.  
clean spirit had torn  
him,<sup>126</sup>

33 And  
gogue the  
which had  
unclean d  
cried out  
voice,

34 Sayin  
alone; w  
to do wit  
Jesus of N  
thou com  
us? I kno  
thou art, t  
of God.

35 And J  
him, sayi  
peace, an  
of him. A  
devil had  
in the mi  
out of hi  
him not.

36 And  
all ama  
spake an  
selves, sa  
word is th  
authority  
command  
clean spir  
come out.

---

<sup>0</sup> There is no inconsistency between this place and the last clause of Luke iv.  
35. The word translated *torn*, signifies to move, agitate, convulse. It occurs

27 And they were all amazed, insomuch that they questioned among themselves, saying, What thing is this? what new doctrine *is* this? for with authority commandeth he even the unclean spirits, and they do obey him.

28 And immediately his fame spread abroad throughout all the region round about Galilee.

[122]

### § 31. The healing of Peter's wife's mother and many others. *Capernaum*.

Matthew.  
CH. VIII. 14-17.

Mark.  
CH. I. 29-34.

---

only twice in the Septuagint. In 2. Sam. xxii. 8, the Hebrew signifies to be shaken, *ut in terræ motu*. In Jer. iv. 19, it is applied to commotion of mind. Here, the demoniac was violently agitated; but the agitation left no lasting bad effect; he was restored to perfect health and soundness. NEWCOME{FNS.

29 And forthwith,  
when they were come  
out of the synagogue,  
they entered into the  
house of Simon and  
Andrew, with James  
and John.

14 And when Jesus  
was come into Pe-  
ter's house, he saw his  
wife's mother laid, and  
sick of a fever.

30 But Simon's wife's  
mother lay sick of a  
fever; and anon they  
tell him of her.

15 And he touched her  
hand, and the fever left  
her: and she arose, and  
ministered unto them.

31 And he came and  
took her by the hand,  
and lifted her up; and  
immediately the fever  
left her, and she minis-  
tered unto them.

16 When the even was  
come, they brought  
unto him many that  
were possessed with  
devils: and he cast  
out the spirits with *his*  
word, and healed all  
that were sick;

32 And at even when  
the sun did set, they  
brought unto him all  
that were diseased, and  
them that were pos-  
sessed with devils.

17 That it might  
be fulfilled which  
was spoken by Esaias  
the prophet, saying,<sup>127</sup>  
Himself took our in-  
firmities, and bare *our*  
sicknesses.

33 And all the city  
was gathered together  
at the door.

34 And he healed  
many that were sick  
of divers diseases, and  
cast out many devils;  
and suffered not the  
devils to speak, be-  
cause they knew him.

Luke.

CH. IV. 38-41.

38 And he arose out  
of the synagogue, and  
entered into Simon's  
house. And Si-  
mon's wife's mother  
was taken with a great  
fever; and they be-  
sought him for her.

39 And he stood over  
her, and rebuked the  
fever; and it left her:  
and immediately she  
arose and ministered  
unto them.

---

<sup>0</sup> Is. liii. 4.

40 Now, when the sun was setting, all they that had any sick with divers diseases, brought them unto him: and he laid his hands on every one of them, and healed them.

41 And devils also came out of many, crying out, and saying, Thou art Christ the Son of God. And he, rebuking *them*, suffered them not to speak: for they knew that he was Christ.

§ 32. Jesus with his disciples goes from Capernaum throughout Galilee.

Matthew.  
CH. IV. 23-25.

Mark.  
CH. I. 35-39.  
35 And in the morning, rising up a while before day, he went out and departed into a solitary place, and there prayed.

36 And Simon, and they that were with him, followed after him.

37 And when they had found him, they said unto him, All *men* seek for thee.

38 And he said unto them, Let us go into the next towns, that I may preach there also: for therefore came I forth.

39 And he preached in their synagogues throughout all Galilee, and cast out devils.

23 And Jesus went about all Galilee, teaching in their synagogues, and preaching the gospel of the kingdom, and healing all manner of sickness, and all manner of disease among the people.

24 And his fame went  
throughout all Syria:  
and they brought unto  
him all sick people that  
were taken with divers  
diseases and torments,  
and those which were  
possessed with devils,  
and those which were  
lunatic, and those that  
had the palsy; and he  
healed them.

25 And there followed  
him great multitudes of  
people from Galilee,  
and *from* Decapolis,  
and *from* Jerusalem,  
and *from* Judea, and  
*from* beyond Jordan.

Luke.

CH. IV. 42-44.

42 And when it was he departed, and went into a desert place; and the people sought him,<sup>128</sup>  
day,

43 And he said unto  
them, I must preach  
the kingdom of God  
to other cities also, for  
therefore am I sent.

---

<sup>0</sup> This clause may be rendered "when the day was coming on," and thus be reconciled with the words of Mark, who says it was a great while before day, namely, before broad day-light. SCOTT{FNS, *in loc*

44 And he preached  
in the synagogues of  
Galilee.

[124]

### § 33. The healing of a leper. *Galilee.*

but go thy way, shew thyself to the priest, and offer the gift that Moses commanded, for a testimony unto them.<sup>130</sup> 43 And he straitly charged him, and forthwith sent him away; 44 And saith unto him, See thou say nothing to any man; but go thy way, shew thyself to the priest, and offer for thy cleansing those things which Moses commanded, for a testimony unto them. 45 But he went out, and began to publish it much, and to blaze abroad the matter, insomuch that Jesus could no more openly enter into the city, but was without in desert places: and they came to him from every quarter.

Matthew.

CH. VIII. 2-4.

2 And behold, there came a leper and worshipped him, saying, Lord, if thou wilt, thou canst make me clean.

3 And Jesus put forth *his* hand, and touched him, saying, I will; be thou clean. And immediately his leprosy was cleansed.

Mark.

CH. I. 40-45.

40 And there came a leper to him, beseeching him, and kneeling down to him, and saying unto him, If thou wilt, thou canst make me clean.

41 And Jesus, moved with compassion, put forth *his* hand, and touched him, and saith unto him, I will; be thou clean.

---

<sup>130</sup> Lev. xiv. 2, seq.



42 And as soon as he  
had spoken, immedi-  
ately the leprosy de-  
parted from him, and  
he was cleansed.

4 And Jesus saith, *in loc.*  
unto him, See thou  
tell no man:<sup>129</sup>, and  
SCOTT{FNS

Luke.

CH. V. 12-16.

12 And it came to pass,  
when he was in a cer-  
tain city, behold, a man

<sup>0</sup> "The miraculous cure of the leprosy was thought by the Jews to be characteristic of the Messiah, and therefore there was peculiar reason for enjoining this man silence." *Benson's Life of Christ*, p. 340. NEWCOME{FNS. For the consequences of a premature full manifestation of himself as the Messiah, by awakening the jealousy of the Roman government, might, humanly speaking, have impeded his ministry. Yet there was great propriety in the private examination of his priesthood, of full proof that he was the Messiah; after which their obstinacy in rejecting him was inexcusable. In this, and divers other instances, our Lord manifested his intent not to be generally known to the Jews as their Messiah, till the consummation of his ministry. A general announcement of his divine character at the outset would have been productive of division; and contrary it would have excited the malice of the Scribes, Pharisees and Herodians against him; would have favoured the conceit of the Jews that he was to be their temporal king; would have awakened the jealousy of the Roman government; and in the natural course of things, would have prevented him from giving the many miraculous proofs which he gave of his ministry, and thus laying solid foundations for faith in his divine mission; would have exposed him and his religion to the charge of ostentation, vanity, and love of power and display; and would have deprived the world of that example which he gave, of meekness, humility and patient suffering and self-denial. According to human experience, an early assumption of regal splendour, supported by the miracles he wrought, would have been successful,

14 And he charged him to tell no man: but go, and shew thyself to the priest, and offer for thy cleansing, according as Moses commanded, for a testimony unto them.

15 But so much the more went there a fame abroad of him: and great multitudes came together to hear and to be healed by him of their infirmities.

16 And he withdrew himself into the wilderness, and prayed.

[126]

### § 34. The healing of a paralytic. *Capernaum*.

Matthew.  
CH. IX. 2-8.

Mark.  
CH. II. 1-12.

---

and carried him to the throne instead of the cross; but it would have deprived the world of the great object of his mission. A sufficient number were enlightened to attest his miracles and proclaim his religion, and enough were left in their ignorance, to condemn and crucify him. See A. CLARKE{FNS

And again he entered into Capernaum, after some days; and it was noised that he was in the house.

2 And straightway many were gathered together, insomuch that there was no room to receive *them*, no, not so much as about the door: and he preached the word unto them.

2 And behold, they brought to him a man sick of the palsy, lying on a bed: and Jesus, seeing their faith, said unto the sick of the palsy, Son, be of good cheer; thy sins be forgiven thee.

3 And they come unto him, bringing one sick of the palsy, which was borne of four.

4 And when they could not come nigh unto him for the press, they uncovered the roof where he was: and when they had broken *it* up, they let down the bed wherein the sick of the palsy lay.

5 When Jesus saw their faith, he said unto the sick of the palsy, Son, thy sins be forgiven thee.

3 And behold, certain of the scribes said within themselves, This *man* blasphemeth.

6 But there were certain of the scribes sitting there, and reasoning in their hearts,

7 Why doth this man thus speak blasphemies? who can forgive sins but God only?

4 And Jesus, knowing their thoughts, said, Wherefore think ye evil in your hearts?

8 And immediately, when Jesus perceived in his spirit, that they so reasoned within themselves, he said unto them, Why reason ye these things in your hearts?

5 For whether is easier to say, *Thy* sins be forgiven thee; or to say, Arise, and walk?

9 Whether is it easier to say to the sick of the palsy, *Thy* sins be forgiven thee; or to say, Arise, and take up thy bed, and walk?

6 But that ye may know that the Son of man hath power on earth to forgive sins, (then saith he to the sick of the palsy,) Arise, take up thy bed, and go unto thy house.

7 And he arose, and departed to his house.

8 But when the multitude saw *it*, they marvelled, and glorified God, which had given such power unto men.

10 But that ye may know that the Son of man hath power on earth to forgive sins (he saith to the sick of the palsy,)

11 I say unto thee, Arise, and take up thy bed, and go thy way into thy house.

12 And immediately he arose, took up the bed, and went forth before them all; inso-much that they were all amazed, and glorified God, saying, We never saw it on this fashion.

Luke.

CH. V. 17-26.

17 And it came to pass on a certain day, as he was teaching, that there were Pharisees and doctors of the law sitting by, which were come out of every town of Galilee, and Judea, and Jerusalem: and the power of the Lord was *present* to heal them.

18 And behold, men brought in a bed a man which was taken with a palsy: and they sought *means* to bring him in, and to lay *him* before him.

19 And when they could not find by what way they might bring him in, because of the multitude, they went upon the house-top, and let him down through the tiling with *his* couch, into the midst before Jesus.

20 And when he saw their faith, he said unto him, Man, thy sins are forgiven thee.

21 And the scribes and the Pharisees began to reason, saying, Who is this which speaketh blasphemies? Who can forgive sins but God alone?

22 But when Jesus perceived their thoughts, he, answering, said unto them, What reason ye in your hearts?

23 Whether is easier, to say, Thy sins be forgiven thee; or to say, Rise up and walk?

24 But that ye may know that the Son of man hath power upon earth to forgive sins, (he said unto the sick of the palsy,) I say unto thee, Arise, and take up thy couch, and go unto thine house.

25 And immediately he arose up before them, and took up that whereon he lay, and departed to his own house, glorifying God.

26 And they were all  
amazed, and they glo-  
rified God, and were  
filled with fear, saying,  
We have seen strange  
things to-day.

[128]

### § 35. The call of Matthew. *Capernaum*.

Matthew.  
CH. IX. 9.

9 And as Jesus passed  
forth from thence, he  
saw a man named  
Matthew, sitting at the  
receipt of custom: and  
he saith unto him, Fol-  
low me. And he arose,  
and followed him.

Mark.  
CH. II. 13, 14.

13 And he went forth  
again by the sea-side;  
and all the multitude  
resorted unto him, and  
he taught them.

14 And as he passed  
by, he saw Levi<sup>131</sup>  
Obs. vol. iv. p. 330;  
Obs. 94.

the *son* of Alpheus, sitting at the receipt of custom, and said unto him, Follow me. And he arose, and followed him.

Luke.

---

<sup>0</sup> When a Jew became a Roman citizen, he usually assumed a Roman name. It is therefore supposed that Levi was the original Hebrew, and Matthew the assumed Roman name of this evangelist. STOWE'S {FNS Introd. 120. See also, HARMER'S {FNS



CH. V. 27, 28.

27 And after these things he went forth, and saw a publican named Levi, sitting at the receipt of custom: and he said unto him, Follow me.

28 And he left all, rose up, and followed him.

## Part IV. Our Lord's Second Passover, And The Subsequent Transactions Until The Third.

[132]

TIME. *One year.*

§ 36. The pool of Bethesda; the healing of the infirm man; and our Lord's subsequent discourse.

*Jerusalem.*

John.

CH. V. 1-47.

After this there was  
a feast of the Jews:  
and Jesus went up to  
Jerusalem.

2 Now there is at  
Jerusalem, by the  
sheep *market*, a pool,  
which is called in  
the Hebrew tongue,  
Bethesda,<sup>132</sup> having  
five porches.

---

<sup>0</sup> It is observable that though John speaks of this pool or bath as existing at the time he wrote, which was upwards of sixty years after the crucifixion, yet he speaks of the efficacy of its waters in the past tense, as something which had long ceased. This may account for the silence of Josephus concerning it; whether we suppose it to have been really a miraculous virtue, existing only in the time of our Saviour; or merely a groundless belief of the populace.

3 In these lay a great multitude of impotent folk, of blind, halt, withered, waiting for the moving of the water.

4 For an angel went down at a certain season into the pool, and troubled the water: whosoever then first after the troubling of the water stepped in, was made whole of whatsoever disease he had.

5 And a certain man was there, which had an infirmity thirty and eight years.

6 When Jesus saw him lie, and knew that he had been now a long time *in that case*, he saith unto him, Wilt thou be made whole?

7 The impotent man answered him, Sir, I have no man, when the water is troubled, to put me into the pool: but while I am coming, another steppeth down before me.

8 Jesus saith unto him, Rise, take up thy bed, and walk.

9 And immediately the man was made whole, and took up his bed, and walked: and on the same day was the sabbath.

10 The Jews therefore said unto him that was cured, It is the sabbath-day; it is not lawful for thee to carry *thy* bed.

11 He answered them, He that made me whole, the same said unto me, Take up thy bed, and walk.

12 Then asked they him, What man is that which said unto thee, Take up thy bed, and walk?

13 And he that was healed wist not who it was: for Jesus had conveyed himself away, a multitude being in *that* place.

14 Afterward Jesus findeth him in the temple, and said unto him, Behold, thou art made whole; sin no more, lest a worse thing come unto thee.

15 The man departed, and told the Jews that it was Jesus which had made him whole.

16 And therefore did the Jews persecute Jesus, and sought to slay him, because he had done things things on the sabbath-day.

17 But Jesus answered them, My Father worketh hitherto, and I work.

18 Therefore the Jews sought the more to kill him, because he not only had broken the sabbath, but said also, that God was his Father, making himself equal with God.

19 Then answered Jesus, and said unto them, Verily, verily, I say unto you, The Son can do nothing of himself, but what he seeth the Father do: for what things soever he doeth, these also doeth the Son likewise.

20 For the Father loveth the Son, and sheweth him all things that himself doeth: and he will shew him greater works than these, that ye may marvel.

21 For as the Father raiseth up the dead, and quickeneth *them*; even so the Son quickeneth whom he will.

22 For the Father judgeth no man; but hath committed all judgment unto the Son:

23 That all *men* should honour the Son, even as they honour the Father. He that honoureth not the Son, honoureth not the Father which has sent him.

24 Verily, verily, I say unto you, He that heareth my word, and believeth on him that sent me, hath everlasting life, and shall not come into condemnation; but is passed from death into life.

25 Verily, verily, I say unto you, The hour is coming, and now is, when the dead shall hear the voice of the Son of God: and they that hear shall live.

26 For as the Father hath life in himself, so hath he given to the Son to have life in himself;

27 And hath given him authority to execute judgment also, because he is the Son of man.

28 Marvel not at this: for the hour is coming, in the which all that are in the graves shall hear his voice,

29 And shall come forth; they that have done good, unto the resurrection of life; and they that have done evil, unto the resurrection of damnation.

30 I can of mine own self do nothing: as I hear, I judge: and my judgment is just; because I seek not mine own will, but the will of the Father which hath sent me.

31 If I bear witness of myself, my witness is not true.



32 There is another  
that beareth witness of  
me, and I know that the  
witness which he wit-  
nesseth of me is true.

33 Ye sent unto John,  
and he bare witness  
unto the truth.

34 But I receive not  
testimony from man:  
but these things I say,  
that ye might be saved.

35 He was a burning  
and a shining light: and  
ye were willing for a  
season to rejoice in his  
light.

36. But I have greater  
witness than that of  
John: for the works  
which the Father hath  
given me to finish, the  
same works that I do,  
bear witness of me,  
that the Father hath  
sent me.

37 And the Father him- at any time, nor seen his shape.  
self which hath sent  
me, hath borne witness  
of me. Ye have neither  
heard his voice<sup>133</sup>

---

<sup>0</sup> Spanheim, dub. evang. ii. 185, doubts how the latter part of this verse is reconcilable with Matthew iii. 17, and the parallel verses. But the voice from

38 And ye have not his  
word abiding in you:  
for whom he hath sent,  
him ye believe not.

39 Search the scrip-  
tures; for in them ye  
think ye have eternal  
life: And they are they  
which testify of me.

40 And ye will not  
come to me, that ye  
might have life.

41 I receive not honour  
from men.

42 But I know you, that  
ye have not the love of  
God in you.

43 I am come in my  
Father's name, and ye  
receive me not: if an-  
other shall come in his  
own name, him ye will  
receive.

44 How can ye believe,  
which receive honour  
one of another, and  
seek not the honour  
that *cometh* from God  
only?

---

heaven was not God's *immediate* voice; but uttered at his command, and in his person. See Deut. iv. 33; Ex. xx. 1, 2; Comp. Hebr. ii. 2; Gal. iii. 19; Acts vii. 53. NEWCOME{FNS.

45 Do not think that  
I will accuse you to  
the Father: there is  
*one* that accuseth you,  
*even Moses*, in whom  
ye trust.

46 For had ye believed  
Moses, ye would have  
believed me: for he  
wrote of me.

47 But if ye believe not  
his writings, how shall  
ye believe my words?

[138]

### § 37. The disciples pluck ears of grain on the Sabbath. *On the way to Galilee?*

the high priest, and did eat the shew-bread, which is not lawful to eat, but for the priests, and gave also to them which were with him? 5 Or have ye not read in the law how that on the sabbath-days the priests in the temple profane the sabbath, and are blameless?<sup>138</sup> 6 But I say unto you, that in this place is *one* greater than the temple. 7 But if ye had known what *this* meaneth,<sup>139</sup> I will have mercy, and not sacrifice, ye would not have condemned the guiltless. 27 And he said unto them, The sabbath was made for man, and not man for the sabbath: 8 For the Son of man is Lord even of the sabbath-day. 28 Therefore, the Son of man is Lord also of the sabbath.

Matthew.  
CH. XII. 1-8.

Mark.  
CH. II. 23-28.

<sup>138</sup> Numb. xxviii. 9, 10; xviii. 19.

<sup>139</sup> 1 Sam. xxi. 1-7.

At that time Jesus went on the sabbath-day through the corn, and his disciples were a hungered, and began to pluck the ears of corn, and to eat.<sup>134</sup>

2 But when the Pharisees saw *it*, they said unto him, Behold, thy disciples do that which is not lawful to do upon the sabbath-day.<sup>135</sup> Biblical Researches in Palestine, Vol. 2, pp. 192, 201, that this custom is still in use.

24 And the Pharisees said unto him, Behold, why do they on the sabbath-day that which is not lawful? 3 But he said unto them, Have ye not read what David did when he was a hungered, and they that were with him; 25 And he said unto them, Have ye never read what David did,<sup>136</sup> when he had need, and was a hungered, he and they that were with him? 4 How he entered into the house of God, and did eat the shew-bread, which was not lawful for him to eat; neither for them which were with him, but only for the priests? 26 How he went into the house of God, in the days of Abiathar, the high priest, and plucked the ears of corn by the hand, in another's field, was expressly permitted, by the law of Moses, Deut. xxiii. 23; but it was considered so far a species of reaping as to be servile work, and therefore not lawful to be done on the Sabbath. CAMPBELL {FNS, *in loc.* See ROBINSON'S {FNS Luke.

<sup>136</sup> Hos. vi. 6.

<sup>137</sup> It appears from 1 Sam. xxi. 1, that Abimelech was the high priest at the time referred to; but Abiathar his son was the *chief* priest under him, and probably superintended the tabernacle and its stated concerns. Abimelech was soon after slain; and Abiathar succeeded him in that office, and continued in it about forty years, until after the death of David. This circumstance, and his great eminence, above his father, may account for the use of his name rather than his father's, as illustrating the times of David and Saul. See SCOTT {FNS, *in loc.*

And it came to pass on the second sabbath after the first, that he went through the corn-fields; and his disciples plucked the ears of corn, and did eat, rubbing *them* in *their* hands.

2 And certain of the Pharisees said unto them, Why do ye that which is not lawful to do on the sabbath-days?

3 And Jesus, answering them, said, Have ye not read so much as this, what David did, when himself was a hungered, and they which were with him;

4 How he went into the house of God, and did take and eat the shew-bread, and gave also to them that were with him, which it is not lawful to eat but for the priests alone?

5 And he said unto  
them, That the Son of  
man is Lord also of the  
sabbath.

[140]

§ 38. The healing of the withered hand on the  
Sabbath. *Galilee.*

Matthew.

CH. XII. 9-14.

9 And when he was de-  
parted thence, he went  
into their synagogue.

10 And behold, there  
was a man which  
had *his* hand withered.  
And they asked him,  
saying, Is it lawful to  
heal on the sabbath-  
days? that they might  
accuse him.

Mark.

CH. III. 1-6.

And he entered again  
into the synagogue;  
and there was a man  
there which had a with-  
ered hand.

2 And they watched  
him, whether he would  
heal him on the  
sabbath-day; that they  
might accuse him.

11 And he said unto them, What man shall there be among you, that shall have one sheep, and if it fall into a pit on the sabbath-day, will he not lay hold of it, and lift *it* out?

4 And he saith unto them, Is it lawful to do good on the sabbath-days, or to do evil? to save life, or to kill? But they held their peace.

12 How much then is a man better than a sheep? wherefore it is lawful to do well on the sabbath-days.

13 Then saith he to the man, Stretch forth thy hand. And he stretched *it* forth; and *it* was restored whole, like as the other.

3 And he saith unto the man which had the withered hand, Stand forth.

5 And when he had looked round about on them with anger, being grieved for the hardness of their hearts, he saith unto the man, Stretch forth thy hand. And he stretched it out: and his hand was restored whole as the other.

6 And the Pharisees went forth, and straightway took counsel with the Herodians against him, how they might destroy him.

Luke.

CH. VI. 6-11.

6 And it came to pass also on another sabbath, that he entered into the synagogue, and taught: and there was a man whose right hand was withered:

7 And the scribes and Pharisees watched him, whether he would heal on the sabbath-day; that they might find an accusation against him.

8 But he knew their thoughts, and said to the man which had the withered hand, Rise up, and stand forth in the midst. And he arose, and stood forth.

9 Then said Jesus unto them, I will ask you one thing; Is it lawful on the sabbath-days to do good, or to do evil? to save life, or to destroy *it*?



10 And looking round  
about upon them all,  
he said unto the man,  
Stretch forth thy hand.  
And he did so: and  
his hand was restored  
whole as the other.

11 And they were  
filled with madness;  
and communed one  
with another what they  
might do to Jesus.

§ 39. Jesus arrives at the sea of Tiberias, and is  
followed by multitudes. *Lake of Galilee.*

Matthew.

CH. XII. 15-21.

15 But when Jesus  
knew *it*, he withdrew  
himself from thence:  
and great multitudes  
followed him, and he  
healed them all.

16 And charged them  
that they should not  
make him known:

17 That it might be  
fulfilled which was  
spoken by Esaias the  
prophet,<sup>140</sup> saying,

18 Behold my ser-  
vant, whom I have cho-  
sen; my beloved, in  
whom my soul is well  
pleased: I will put my  
Spirit upon him, and he  
shall shew judgment to  
the Gentiles.

19 He shall not strive,  
nor cry; neither shall  
any man hear his voice  
in the streets.

20 A bruised reed shall he not quench, till he send forth judgment un-  
der the sole of his foot; and shall he not break, and  
smoking flax,<sup>141</sup>

---

<sup>0</sup> Is. xlii. 1, seq.; Is. xi. 10.

<sup>0</sup> There may be an allusion, in these words of the prophet, to an Eastern custom, for those who were grievously afflicted to come to the sovereign for relief or redress, having pots of fire, or of burning straw, or other combustible on their heads, in token of their extreme trouble. Not one of these, the prophet seems to intimate, should go away without redress; he will certainly remove the cause of their complaints, and render truth and justice victorious over falsehood and oppression. 3 CALM{FNS. 394.

21 And in his name  
shall the Gentiles trust.

[142]

§ 40. Jesus withdraws to the Mountain and chooses  
the Twelve; multitudes follow him. *Near  
Capernaum.*

Matthew.  
CH. X. 2-4.

Mark.  
CH. III. 13-19.  
13 And he goeth up  
into a mountain, and  
called *unto him* whom  
he would: and they  
came unto him.  
14 And he ordained  
twelve, that they  
should be with him,  
and that he might send  
them forth to preach.  
15 And to have power  
to heal sicknesses, and  
to cast out devils.

2 Now the names of  
the twelve apostles are  
these; The first, Si-  
mon, who is called Pe-  
ter, and Andrew his  
brother; James *the son*  
of Zebedee, and John  
his brother;

16 And Simon he sur-  
named Peter.

17 And James the *son*  
of Zebedee, and John  
the brother of James,  
(and he surnamed them  
Boanerges, which is,  
The sons of thunder,)

3 Philip, and  
Bartholomew;  
Thomas, and Matthew  
the publican;<sup>142</sup> James  
*the son* of Alpheus,  
and Lebbeus,<sup>143</sup>

<sup>0</sup> It appears from Mark vi. 7, that the apostles were sent forth by *two and two* to preach; and this accounts for their being here and in the parallel places named in couples. Luke mentions Matthew first, as being regarded as the senior of Thomas, his companion; but Matthew modestly places his own name last. Mark is less observant of the order of the names, but he alone states that they were thus associated. The others give the names in couples, but state no reason for it. This is not the method of false witnesses; such incidental corroborations belong only to the narratives of truth.

<sup>0</sup> Thaddeus, Theudas and Judas (or Jude) are probably names of the same signification, the Greek termination being added to different forms of a Hebrew verb. "The Canaanite," Matth. x. 4, is the same with "Zelotes" in Luke. "Cognomen erat Chald. quod Lucas reddidit Zelotem." Wetstein. Thus, Thomas is rendered Didymus, or, the twin; Cephas, Peter; and Silas, Tertius. Some suppose that this name had been given to Simon on account of his religious zeal; or, because he had been of a Jewish sect called Zealots, who were addicted to the Pharisees, and justified themselves by the example

whose surname was Thaddeus; 18 And Andrew, and Philip, and Bartholomew, and James the *son* of Alpheus, and Thaddeus, and Simon the Canaanite, 4 Simon the Canaanite, and Judas Iscariot, who also betrayed him. 19 And Judas Iscariot, which also betrayed him: and they went into a house.

Luke.

CH. VI. 12-19.

12 And it came to pass in those days, that he went out into a mountain to pray, and continued all night in prayer to God.

13 And when it was day, he called *unto him*

~~his disciples: and of~~

of Phinehas, for punishing offenders without waiting for the sentence of the magistrate. NEWCOME{FNS.

~~whom also he named~~

“Between Matthew (x. 2,) and Mark (iii. 16,) we observe a strict correspondence; the catalogue in St. Luke (vi. 14,) differs from both the first-mentioned writers in two particulars. 1, ‘Simon the Canaanite,’

~~14 Simon (whom he~~

of Matthew and Mark is introduced as ‘Simon called Zelotes.’ Now if any difference was admitted in this place, we might expect it to extend no farther than to the order of the names, or the addition of a surname; as, for instance,

~~Andrew, his brother,~~

Matthew James and John Philip

~~and Bartholomew,~~

Matthew and Mark also ‘Lebbeus;’ but here we have one surname changed for another. It is indeed easy to conceive, that Simon might have been commonly distinguished by either appellative, but this we can only conjecture; neither Evangelist adds a word to explain the point. 2, The other discrepancy, however, appears more serious. The Lebbeus or Thaddeus of St.

~~15 Matthew and~~

Matthew and Mark is entirely omitted in the list of St. Luke, who substitutes ‘Judas the called Zelotes,’ Here is certainly a marked difference, for it would not seem very probable, that the Apostle in question passed by three distinct names. Nor could this be a mere oversight in St. Luke, for, in Acts i. 13,

~~Thomas, James the son~~

where a catalogue of the eleven is inserted, he mentioned this individual in exactly the same manner. Are we to suppose then that the Evangelist commits a deliberate error?

~~16 And Judas the~~

brother of James, and Judas Iscariot, which

~~also was the traitor.~~

We have distinct and satisfactory witnesses to prove that there really was an Apostle, besides Iscariot, who bore the name of Judas. Both Matthew (xiii. 55,) and Mark (vi. 3,) concur in speaking of

17 And he came down  
with them, and stood  
in the plain; and the  
company of his disci-  
ples, and a great multi-  
tude of people out of all  
Judea and Jerusalem,  
and from the sea-coast  
of Tyre and Sidon,  
which came to hear  
him, and to be healed  
of their diseases;  
18 And they that were  
vexed with unclean  
spirits: and they were  
healed.

---

James and Jude as the near relations of Christ, and part of this statement is incidentally confirmed by St. Paul, who calls James 'the Lord's brother.' (Gal. i. 19.) But farther, St. John (xiv. 22,) presents us with a remark made by 'Judas not Iscariot;' evidently one of the Apostles; and St. Jude himself, in the first verse of his Epistle, styles himself 'the brother of James.' There is thus amply sufficient evidence, that all the Gospel writers acknowledge an Apostle of this name, though St. Matthew, with his usual simplicity, familiarly mentions him by two of his appellations, omitting that of Judas, and St. Mark sees no occasion to depart from his language, in a matter of such general notoriety. Luke, on the other hand, usually studious of accuracy, distinguishes this Apostle by the name generally current in the Church, when his Gospel was written. This variation then may, upon the whole, convince us how undesignedly the writers of Scripture confirm each other's statements; yet can this only be the result of a minute examination upon our part, and upon the probability of this, a cautious writer would hardly stake his reputation for truth or exactness." See ROBERTS'S {FNS "Light shining out of Darkness," pp. 91-93.

19 And the whole multitude sought to touch him; for there went virtue out of him, and healed *them* all.

[144]

### § 41. The Sermon on the Mount. *Near Capernaum.*

2 And he opened his mouth, and taught them, saying, 20 And he lifted up his eyes on his disciples, and said, Blessed *be* ye poor; for yours is the kingdom of God. 3 Blessed *are* the poor in spirit: for theirs is the kingdom of heaven. 21 Blessed *are* ye that hunger now: for ye shall be filled. Blessed *are* ye that weep now: for ye shall laugh. 4 Blessed *are* they that mourn: for they shall be comforted. 22 Blessed *are* ye when men shall hate you, and when they shall separate you *from their company*, and shall reproach *you*, and cast out your name as evil, for the Son of man's sake. 5 Blessed *are* the meek: for they shall inherit the earth. 6 Blessed *are* they which do hunger and thirst after righteousness: for they shall be filled. 7 Blessed *are* the merciful: for they shall obtain mercy. 8 Blessed *are* the pure in heart: for they shall see God. 9 Blessed *are* the peace-makers: for they shall be called the children of God. 10 Blessed *are* they which are persecuted for righteousness' sake: for theirs is the kingdom of heaven. 11 Blessed *are* ye when *men* shall revile you, and persecute *you*, and shall say all manner of evil against you falsely, for my sake. 12 Rejoice, and be exceeding glad: for great *is* your reward in heaven: for so persecuted they the prophets which were before you. 23 Rejoice ye in that day, and leap for joy: for behold, your reward *is* great in heaven: for in the like manner did their fathers unto the prophets. 24 But wo unto you that are rich! for ye have received your consolation. 25 Wo unto you that are full! for ye shall hunger. Wo unto you that laugh now! for ye shall mourn and weep. 26 Wo unto you, when all men shall speak well of you! for so did their fathers to the false prophets. 13 Ye are the salt of the earth: but if the salt have lost his savour, wherewith shall it be salted? it is thenceforth good for nothing, but to be cast out, and to be trodden under foot of men. 14 Ye are the light of the world. A city that is set on a hill cannot be hid. 15 Neither do men light a candle, and put it under a bushel,

but on a candlestick: and it giveth light unto all that are in the house.



Matthew.

CH. V. VI. VII. VIII.

Luke.

CH. VI. 20-49.

1.

And seeing the multitudes, he went up into a mountain: and when he was set, his disciples came unto him.<sup>144</sup>.

16 let your light so shine before men, that they may see your good works, and glorify your Father which is in heaven.

---

<sup>0</sup> It may be objected that Matthew, in saying that this discourse was delivered sitting on a mountain, is contradicted by Luke, who says, that Jesus was standing on a plain. Luke vi. 17. But Dr. Clarke, on this latter place, has suggested that Jesus "being pressed with great multitudes of people, might retire from them again to the top of the hill." And Dr. Priestley observes that "Matthew's saying that Jesus was *sat down* after he had gone up the mountain, and Luke's saying that he stood on the plain, when he healed the sick before the discourse, are no inconsistencies." Harm. p. 83.

The whole picture is striking. Jesus ascends a mountain, employs the night in prayer, and having thus solemnly invoked the divine blessing, authoritatively separates the twelve apostles from the mass of his disciples. He descends, and heals, in the plain, all among a great multitude, collected from various parts by the fame of his miraculous power. Having thus created attention, he satisfies the desire of the people to hear his doctrine; and retiring first to the mountain whence he came, that his attentive hearers might follow him, and might better arrange themselves before him. *Sacro digna silentio Mirantur omnes dicere. Hor. NEWCOME*{FNS.

The different accounts of the Sermon on the Mount may be reconciled, by considering that Mathew wrote chiefly for the Hebrew Christians; and it was therefore important for him to bring out, in full, the manner in which our Lord enforced the spiritual nature of his dispensation and doctrine, in opposition to

17 Think not that I am  
 come to destroy the  
 law, or the prophets:  
 I am not come to de-  
 stroy, but to fulfil.

18 For verily, I say  
 unto you, Till heaven  
 and earth pass, one jot  
 or one tittle shall in no  
 wise pass from the law,  
 till all be fulfilled.

19 Whosoever there-  
 fore shall break one of  
 these least command-  
 ments, and shall teach  
 men so, he shall be  
 called the least in the  
 kingdom of heaven:  
 but whosoever shall  
 do, and teach *them*, the  
 same shall be called  
 great in the kingdom  
 of heaven.

---

the mere letter of the Jewish law, and the teaching and practice of Scribes and Pharisees; which he does particularly and with many examples; while Luke, on the contrary, wrote chiefly for Gentile Christians, to whom the contrast with the Jewish law was of less interest; and therefore he omits those parts of the discourse, and dwells only upon those which were of practical importance to all. ROBINSON{FNS. NEWCOME{FNS

20 For I say unto you,  
That except your righteousness shall exceed  
*the righteousness* of  
the scribes and Pharisees, ye shall in no case enter into the kingdom of heaven.

21 Ye have heard that  
it was said by them of old time, Thou shalt not kill; and whosoever shall kill, shall be in danger of the judgment:

22 But I say unto you,  
That whosoever is angry with his brother, without a cause, shall be in danger of the judgment: and whosoever shall say to his brother, Raca, shall be in danger of the council: but whosoever shall say, Thou fool, shall be in danger of hell-fire.

23 Therefore, if thou bring thy gift to the altar, and there rememberest that thy brother hath aught against thee,

24 Leave there thy gift before the altar, and go thy way, first be reconciled to thy brother, and then come and offer thy gift.

25 Agree with thine adversary quickly, while thou art in the way with him; lest at any time the adversary deliver thee to the judge, and the judge deliver thee to the officer, and thou be cast into prison.

26 Verily, I say unto thee, Thou shalt by no means come out thence, till thou hast paid the uttermost farthing.

27 Ye have heard that it was said by them of old time, Thou shalt not commit adultery:

28 But I say unto  
you, That whosoever  
looketh on a woman  
to lust after her,  
hath committed adultery  
with her already  
in his heart.

29 And if thy right eye  
offend thee, pluck it  
out, and cast *it* from  
thee: for it is profitable  
for thee that one of thy  
members should per-  
ish, and not *that* thy  
whole body should be  
cast into hell.

30 And if thy right  
hand offend thee, cut  
it off, and cast *it* from  
thee: for it is profitable  
for thee that one of thy  
members should per-  
ish, and not *that* thy  
whole body should be  
cast into hell.

31 It hath been said,  
Whosoever shall put  
away his wife, let him  
give her a writing of  
divorcement:

32 But I say unto you,  
That whosoever shall  
put away his wife, sav-  
ing for the cause of for-  
nication, causeth her to  
commit adultery: and  
whosoever shall marry  
her that is divorced,  
committeth adultery.

33 Again, ye have  
heard that it hath been  
said by them of old  
time, Thou shalt not  
forswear thyself, but  
shalt perform unto the  
Lord thine oaths:

34 But I say unto you,  
Swear not at all: nei-  
ther by heaven; for it is  
God's throne:

36 Neither shalt thou  
swear by thy head; be-  
cause thou canst not  
make one hair white or  
black.

37 But let your com-  
munication be, Yea,  
yea; Nay, nay: for  
whatsoever *is* more  
than these cometh of  
evil.

38 Ye have heard that  
it hath been said, An  
eye for an eye, and a  
tooth for a tooth.

39 But I say unto you,  
That ye resist not evil:  
but whosoever shall  
smite thee on thy right  
cheek, turn to him the  
other also.

40 And if any man will  
sue thee at the law,  
and take away thy coat,  
let him have *thy* cloak  
also.

41 And whosoever  
shall compel thee<sup>145</sup>  
Travels, Vol. i. p.  
238, 257.

to go a mile, go with him twain. 42 Give to him that asketh thee, and from him that would borrow of thee, turn not thou away. 43 Ye have heard that it hath been said, Thou shalt love thy neighbour, and hate thine enemy: 44 But I say unto you, Love your enemies, bless them that curse you, do good to them that hate you, and pray for them which despitefully use you, and persecute you; 27 But I say unto you which hear, Love your enemies, do good to them which hate you, 28 Bless them that curse you, and pray for them which despitefully use you. 29 And unto him that smiteth thee on the *one cheek*, offer also the other;

---

<sup>0</sup> The Greek word here employed is said to be derived from the Persians, among whom the king's messengers or posts were called *Angari*. These had the royal authority for pressing horses, ships, and even men, to assist them in the business on which they were sent. The word therefore signifies, to be compelled by violence to do any particular service, especially of the public kind, by the king's authority. And the sentiment is a lesson of patience and gentleness under severe exactions from man. *Lightfoot, apud* A. CLARKE{FNS, *in loc.* SIR J. CHARDIN'S{FNS

and him that taketh away thy cloak, forbid not *to take thy* coat also. 30 Give to every man that asketh of thee; and of him that taketh away thy goods ask *them* not again. 45 That ye may be the children of your Father which is in heaven: for he maketh his sun to rise on the evil and on the good, and sendeth rain on the just and on the unjust. 31 And as ye would that men should do to you, do ye also to them likewise. 46 For if ye love them which love you, what reward have ye? do not even the publicans the same? 32 For if ye love them which love you, what thank have ye? for sinners also love those that love them. 47 And if ye salute your brethren only, what do ye more *than others*? do not even the publicans so? 33 And if ye do good to them which do good to you, what thank have ye? for sinners also do even the same. 34 And if ye lend *to them* of whom ye hope to receive, what thank have ye? for sinners also lend to sinners, to receive as much again. 35 But love ye your enemies, and do good, and lend, hoping for nothing again; and your reward shall be great, and ye shall be the children of the Highest: for he is kind unto the unthankful and *to* the evil. 36 Be ye therefore merciful, as your Father also is merciful. 48 Be ye therefore perfect, even as your Father which is in heaven is perfect.

## CH. VI.

Take heed that ye do  
not your alms before  
men, to be seen of  
them: otherwise ye  
have no reward of  
your Father which is  
in heaven.



2 Therefore, when thou doest *thine* alms, do not sound a trumpet before thee, as the hypocrites do, in the synagogues, and in the streets, that they may have glory of men. Verily, I say unto you, They have their reward.

3 But when thou doest alms, let not thy left hand know what thy right hand doeth;

4 That *thine* alms may be in secret: and thy Father which seeth in secret, himself shall reward thee openly.

5 And when thou prayest, thou shalt not be as the hypocrites *are*; for they love to pray standing in the synagogues, and in the corners of the streets, that they may be seen of men. Verily, I say unto you, They have their reward.

6 But thou, when thou prayest, enter into thy closet, and when thou hast shut thy door, pray to thy Father which is in secret; and thy Father, which seeth in secret, shall reward thee openly.

7 But when ye pray, use not vain repetitions, as the heathen do: for they think that they shall be heard for their much speaking.

8 Be not yet therefore like unto them: for your Father knoweth what things ye have need of before ye ask him.

9 After this manner therefore pray ye: Our Father which art in heaven, Hallowed be thy name.

10 Thy kingdom come. Thy will be done in earth as *it is* in heaven.

11 Give us this day our daily bread.

12 And forgive us our debts, as we forgive our debtors.

13 And lead us not into temptation, but deliver us from evil. For thine is the kingdom, and the power, and the glory, for ever. Amen.

14 For, if ye forgive men their trespasses, your heavenly Father will also forgive you:

15 But, if ye forgive not men their trespasses, neither will your Father forgive your trespasses.

16 Moreover, when ye fast, be not as the hypocrites, of a sad countenance: for they disfigure their faces, that they may appear unto men to fast. Verily, I say unto you, They have their reward.

17 But thou, when thou fastest, anoint thy head, and wash thy face;

18 That thou appear  
not unto men to fast,  
but unto thy Father,  
which is in secret: and  
thy Father, which seeth  
in secret, shall reward  
thee openly.

19 Lay not up for your-  
selves treasures upon  
earth, where moth and  
rust doth corrupt, and  
where thieves break  
through and steal:

20 But lay up for  
yourselves treasures in  
heaven, where neither  
moth nor rust doth cor-  
rupt, and where thieves  
do not break through  
nor steal.

21 For where your  
treasure is, there will  
your heart be also.

22 The light of the  
body is the eye: if  
therefore thine eye be  
single, thy whole body  
shall be full of light.

23 But if thine eye be evil, thy whole body shall be full of darkness. If therefore the light that is in thee be darkness, how great *is* that darkness!

24 No man can serve two masters: for either he will hate the one, and love the other; or else he will hold to the one, and despise the other. Ye cannot serve God and mammon.

25 Therefore I say unto you, Take no thought for your life, what ye shall eat, or what ye shall drink; nor yet for your body, what ye shall put on. Is not the life more than meat, and the body than raiment?

26 Behold the fowls of the air: for they sow not, neither do they reap, nor gather into barns; yet your heavenly Father feedeth them. Are ye not much better than they?

27 Which of you by taking thought can add one cubit unto his stature?

28 And why take ye thought for raiment? Consider the lilies of the field how they grow; they toil not, neither do they spin;

29 And yet I say unto you, That even Solomon, in all his glory, was not arrayed like one of these.

30 Wherefore, if God so clothe the grass of the field, which to-day is, and to-morrow is cast into the oven, *shall he* not much more *clothe* you, O ye of little faith?

31 Therefore take no thought, saying, What shall we eat? or, what shall we drink? or, wherewithal shall we be clothed?

32 (For after all these things do the Gentiles seek) for your heavenly Father knoweth that ye have need of all these things.

33 But seek ye first the kingdom of God, and his righteousness, and all these things shall be added unto you.

34 Take therefore no thought for the morrow: for the morrow shall take thought for the things of itself. Sufficient unto the day *is* the evil thereof.

#### CH. VII.

Judge not, that ye be not judged.

2 For with what judgment ye judge, ye shall be judged: and with what measure ye mete, it shall be measured to you again.

#### CH. VI. 20-49.

37 Judge not, and ye shall not be judged: condemn not, and ye shall not be condemned: forgive, and ye shall be forgiven:

38 Give, and it shall be given unto you; good measure, pressed down, and shaken together, and running over, shall men give into your bosom. For with the same measure that ye mete withal, it shall be measured to you again.

39 And he spake a parable unto them; Can the blind lead the blind? shall they not both fall into the ditch?

40 The disciple is not above his master: but every one that is perfect, shall be as his master.

3 And why beholdest thou the mote that is in thy brother's eye, but considerest not the beam that is in thine own eye?

41 And why beholdest thou the mote that is in thy brother's eye, but perceivest not the beam that is in thine own eye?



4 Or how wilt thou say  
to thy brother, Let me  
pull out the mote out of  
thine eye; and behold  
a beam *is* in thine own  
eye?

5 Thou hypocrite, first  
cast out the beam out  
of thine own eye; and  
then shalt thou see  
clearly to cast out  
the mote out of thy  
brother's eye.

6 Give not that which  
is holy unto the dogs,  
neither cast ye your  
pearls before swine,  
lest they trample them  
under their feet, and  
turn again and rend  
you.

42 Either how canst  
thou say to thy brother,  
Brother, let me pull out  
the mote that is in thine  
eye, when thou thy-  
self beholdest not the  
beam that is in thine  
own eye? Thou hyp-  
ocrite, cast out first the  
beam out of thine own  
eye, and then shalt thou  
see clearly to pull out  
the mote that is in thy  
brother's eye.

7 Ask, and it shall be given you; seek, and ye shall find; knock, and it shall be opened unto you:

8 For every one that asketh receiveth; and he that seeketh, findeth; and to him that knocketh, it shall be opened.

9 Or what man is there of you, whom if his son ask bread, will he give him a stone?

10 Or if he ask a fish, will he give him a serpent?

11 If ye then being evil know how to give good gifts unto your children, how much more shall your Father which is in heaven give good things to them that ask him?

12 Therefore all things whatsoever ye would that men should do to you, do ye even so to them: for this is the law and the prophets.

13 Enter ye in at the strait gate; for wide *is* the gate, and broad *is* the way, that leadeth to destruction, and many there be which go in thereat:

14 Because, strait *is* the gate, and narrow *is* the way, which leadeth unto life, and few there be that find it.

15 Beware of false prophets, which come to you in sheep's clothing, but inwardly they are ravening wolves.

16 Ye shall know them by their fruits: Do men gather grapes of thorns, or figs of thistles?

17 Even so every good tree bringeth forth good fruit; but a corrupt tree bringeth forth evil fruit.

18 A good tree cannot bring forth evil fruit, neither can a corrupt tree bring forth good fruit.

43 For a good tree bringeth not forth corrupt fruit; neither doth a corrupt tree bring forth good fruit.

44 For every tree is known by his own fruit: for of thorns men do not gather figs, nor of a bramble-bush gather they grapes.

19 Every tree that  
bringeth not forth good  
fruit is hewn down, and  
cast into the fire.

20 Wherefore, by their  
fruits ye shall know  
them.

45 A good man out of  
the good treasure of his  
heart, bringeth forth  
that which is good; and  
an evil man, out of  
the evil treasure of his  
heart, bringeth forth  
that which is evil: for  
of the abundance of  
the heart his mouth  
speaketh.

21 Not every one  
that saith unto me,  
Lord, Lord, shall en-  
ter into the kingdom  
of heaven; but he  
that doeth the will of  
my father which is in  
heaven.

46 And why call ye me  
Lord, Lord, and do not  
the things which I say?

22 Many will say to me in that day, Lord, Lord, have we not prophesied in thy name? and in thy name have cast out devils? and in thy name done many wonderful works?

23 And then will I profess unto them, I never knew you: depart from me, ye that work iniquity.

24 Therefore, whosoever heareth these sayings of mine, and doeth them, I will liken him unto a wise man, which built his house upon a rock:

25 And the rain descended, and the floods came, and the winds blew, and beat upon that house, and it fell not: for it was founded upon a rock:

47 Whosoever cometh to me, and heareth my sayings, and doeth them, I will shew you to whom he is like.

48 He is like a man which built a house, and digged deep, and laid the foundation on a rock: and when the flood arose, the stream beat vehemently upon that house, and could not shake it: for it was founded upon a rock.

26 And every one that heareth these sayings of mine, and doeth them not, shall be likened unto a foolish man, which built his house upon the sand:

49 But he that heareth and doeth not, is like a man that without a foundation built a house upon the earth, against which the stream did beat vehemently, and immediately it fell, and the ruin of that house was great.

27 And the rain descended, and the floods came, and the winds blew, and beat upon that house; and it fell: and great was the fall of it.

28 And it came to pass when Jesus had ended these sayings, the people were astonished at his doctrine.

29 For he taught them as *one* having authority, and not as the scribes.

#### CH. VIII.

When he was come down from the mountain, great multitudes followed him.

§ 42. The healing of the centurion's servant.  
*Capernaum.*

Matthew.

CH. VIII. 5-13.

5 And when Jesus a centurion, beseeching him, was entered into Capernaum, there came unto him<sup>146</sup>

6 And saying, Lord, my servant lieth at home sick of the palsy, grievously tormented.

7 And Jesus saith unto him, I will come and heal him.

Luke.

CH. VII. 1-10.

Now, when he had ended all his sayings in the audience of the people, he entered into Capernaum,

2 And a certain centurion's servant, who was dear unto him, was sick, and ready to die.

3 And when he heard of Jesus, he sent unto him the elders of the Jews, beseeching him that he would come and heal his servant.

4 And when they came to Jesus, they besought him instantly, saying, That he was worthy for whom he should do this:

---

<sup>0</sup> Calvin says that Matthew, being more brief, introduces the centurion himself as speaking; and that Luke expresses more at large his sending by his friends; but that the sense of both is the same. *Harm.* p. 124.

(Toinard quotes Exod. xviii. 6, where the words related as spoken by Jethro, were evidently a message sent by him to Moses. *Harm.* 147.) Considering then the sameness of the scene, of the person, of the words, and of the transaction, I cannot but conclude with Grotius, that the miracle is one and the same, related in general by Matthew, and with greater accuracy by Luke. NEWCOME{FNS.

8 The centurion answered and said, Lord, I am not worthy that thou shouldest come under my roof: but speak the word only, and my servant shall be healed.

9 For I am a man under authority, having soldiers under me: and I say to this man, Go, and he goeth; and to another, Come, and he cometh; and to my servant, Do this, and he doeth *it*.

10 When Jesus heard *it*, he marvelled, and said to them that followed, Verily, I say unto you, I have not found so great faith, no, not in Israel.

5 For he loveth our nation, and he hath built us a synagogue.

6 Then Jesus went to them. And when he was now not far from the house, the centurion sent friends to him, saying unto him, Lord, trouble not thyself; for I am not worthy that thou shouldst enter under my roof.

8 For I also am a man set under authority, having under me soldiers, and I say unto one, Go, and he goeth; and to another, Come, and he cometh; and to my servant, Do this, and he doeth *it*.

9 When Jesus heard these things, he marvelled at him, and turned him about and said unto the people that followed him, I have not found so great faith, no, not in Israel.



11 And I say unto you,  
That many shall come  
from the east and west,  
and shall sit down with  
Abraham, and Isaac,  
and Jacob, in the king-  
dom of heaven:

12 But the children  
of the kingdom shall  
be cast out into outer  
darkness: there shall  
be weeping and gnash-  
ing of teeth.

13 And Jesus said unto  
the centurion, Go thy  
way; and as thou hast  
believed, *so* be it done  
unto thee. And his ser-  
vant was healed in the  
self-same hour.

7 Wherefore neither  
thought I myself wor-  
thy to come unto thee;  
but say in a word, and  
my servant shall be  
healed.

10 And they that were  
sent, returning to the  
house, found the ser-  
vant whole that had  
been sick.

[162]

## § 43. The raising of the widow's son. *Nain*.

Luke.

CH. VII. 11-17.

11 And it came to pass  
the day after, that he  
went into a city called  
Nain: and many of  
his disciples went with  
him, and much people.

12 Now, when he came nigh to the gate of the city, behold, there was a dead man carried out, the only son of his mother, and she was a widow: and much people of the city was with her.

13 And when the Lord saw her, he had compassion on her, and said unto her, Weep not.

14 And he came and touched the bier: and they that bare *him* stood still. And he said, Young man, I say unto thee, Arise.

15 And he that was dead sat up, and began to speak: and he delivered him to his mother.

16 And there came a fear on all: and they glorified God, saying, That a great prophet is risen up among us; and, That God hath visited his people.

17 And this rumour  
of him went forth  
throughout all Judea,  
and throughout all the  
region round about.

§ 44. John the Baptist, in prison, sends disciples to  
Jesus. *Galilee. Capernaum?*

Matthew.

CH. XI. 2-19.

2 Now when John had  
heard in the prison the  
works of Christ, he  
sent two of his disci-  
ples,

3 And said unto him. or do we look for another?  
Art thou he that should  
come,<sup>147</sup>

Luke

18 And the disciples of  
John shewed him of all  
these things.

19 And John calling  
*unto him* two of his dis-  
ciples, sent *them* to Je-  
sus, saying, Art thou he  
that should come? or  
look we for another?

---

<sup>0</sup> The nature of our Lord's ministry, as it now appeared, so unlike what John as a Jew expected, may have surprised and perplexed him. And his own misfortune, coming upon this disappointment and perplexity, would increase his doubt and embarrassment. His faith was shaken;—the question implies no more;—and he sent that his doubts might be removed, and his faith confirmed. Jesus therefore merely referred John to the miracles he was doing, and the prophecies which spake of him, and which were fulfilled by those miracles. Bp. SUMNER{FNS, in loc.

4 Jesus answered and  
said unto them, Go  
and shew John again  
those things which ye  
do hear and see:

20 When the men we  
come unto him, the  
said, John Baptist ha  
sent us unto thee, sa  
ing, Art thou he th  
should come? or loo  
we for another?

21 And in that san  
hour he cured many  
*their* infirmities, an  
plagues, and of ev  
spirits; and unto man  
*that were* blind he gav  
sight.

22 Then Jesus answer  
ing, said unto them  
Go your way, and te  
John what things y  
have seen and hear  
how that the blind se  
the lame walk, the le  
ers are cleansed, th  
deaf hear, the dead a  
raised, to the poor th  
gospel is preached.

5 The blind receive their sight, and the lame walk, the lepers are cleansed, and the deaf hear, the dead are raised up, and the poor have the gospel preached to them.<sup>148</sup>

6 And blessed is *he* whosoever shall not be offended in me.

7 And as they departed, Jesus began to say unto the multitudes concerning John, What went ye out into the wilderness to see? A reed shaken with the wind?

8 But what went ye out for to see? A man clothed in soft raiment? Behold, they that wear soft *clothing* are in kings' houses.

23 And blessed is *he*, whosoever shall not be offended in me.

24 And when the messengers of John were departed, he began to speak unto the people concerning John, What went ye out into the wilderness for to see? A reed shaken with the wind?

25 But what went ye out for to see? A man clothed in soft raiment? Behold, they which are gorgeously apparelled, and live delicately, are in kings' courts.

---

<sup>0</sup> Is. xxxv. 5, seq.

9 But what went ye out  
for to see? A prophet?  
yea, I say unto you, and  
more than a prophet.

10 For this is he of  
whom it is written,<sup>149</sup>  
Behold, I send my  
messenger before thy  
face, which shall pre-  
pare thy way before  
thee.

11 Verily, I say unto  
you, Among them that  
are born of women,  
there hath not risen  
a greater than John  
the Baptist: notwith-  
standing, he that is  
least in the kingdom of  
heaven, is greater than  
he.

26 But what went ye  
out for to see?  
prophet? Yea, I say  
unto you, and much  
more than a prophet.  
27 This is *he*, of whom  
it is written, Behold,  
I send my messenger  
before thy face, which  
shall prepare thy way  
before thee.

28 For I say unto you  
Among those that are  
born of women, there  
is not a greater prophet  
than John the Baptist;  
but he that is least  
in the kingdom of God,  
greater than he.

29 And all the peo-  
ple that heard him, and  
the publicans, justified  
God, being baptized  
with the baptism of  
John.

---

<sup>0</sup> Mal. iii. 1.

30 But the Pharisees and lawyers rejected the council of God against themselves, being not baptized of him.

12 And from the days of John the Baptist, until now, the kingdom of heaven suffereth violence, and the violent take it by force.

13 For all the prophets and the law prophesied until John.

14 And if ye will receive *it*, this is Elias which was for to come.<sup>150</sup>

15 He that hath ears to hear, let him hear.

16 But whereunto shall I liken this generation? It is like unto children sitting in the markets, and calling unto their fellows.

31 And the Lord said, Whereunto then shall I liken the men of this generation? and to what are they like?

---

<sup>0</sup> Mal. iv. 5.

17 And saying, We have piped unto you, and ye have not danced; we have mourned unto you, and ye have not lamented.

18 For John came neither eating nor drinking, and they say, He hath a devil.

19 The Son of man came eating and drinking, and they say, Behold a man gluttonous, and a wine-bibber, a friend of publicans and sinners. But Wisdom is justified of her children.

32 They are like unto children sitting in the market-place, and calling one to another, and saying, We have piped unto you, and ye have not danced; we have mourned to you, and ye have not wept.

33 For John the Baptist came neither eating bread, nor drinking wine; and ye say, He hath a devil.

34 The Son of man is come eating and drinking; and ye say, Behold a gluttonous man, and a wine-bibber, a friend of publicans and sinners!

35 But Wisdom is justified of all her children.



§ 45. Reflections of Jesus on appealing to his mighty works. *Capernaum*.

Matthew.

CH. XI. 20-30.

20 Then began he to upbraid the cities wherein most of his mighty works were done, because they repented not.

21 Wo unto thee, Chorazin! wo unto thee, Bethsaida! for if the mighty works which were done in you had been done in Tyre and Sidon, they would have repented long ago in sackcloth and ashes.

22 But I say unto you, It shall be more tolerable for Tyre and Sidon at the day of judgment, than for you.

23 And thou, Capernaum, which art exalted unto heaven, shalt be brought down to hell: for if the mighty works which have been done in thee, had been done in Sodom, it would have remained until this day.

24 But I say unto you, That it shall be more tolerable for the land of Sodom, in the day of judgment, than for thee.

25 At that time Jesus answered and said, I thank thee, O Father, Lord of heaven and earth, because thou hast hid these things from the wise and prudent, and hast revealed them unto babes.

26 Even so, Father, for so it seemed good in thy sight.

27 All things are delivered unto me of my Father; and no man knoweth the Son, but the Father; neither knoweth any man the Father, save the Son, and *he to whomsoever the Son will reveal him.*

26 Come unto me, all ye that labour, and are heavy laden, and I will give you rest.

29 Take my yoke upon you, and learn of me: for I am meek and lowly in heart; and ye shall find rest unto your souls.

30 For my yoke *is* easy, and my burden is light.

[168]

§ 46. While sitting at meat with a Pharisee, Jesus is anointed by a woman who had been a sinner.

*Capernaum?*

Luke.

CH. VII. 36-50.

36 And one of the Pharisees desired him that he would eat with him. And he went into the Pharisee's house, and sat down to meat.

37 And behold, a woman in the city, which was a sinner, when she knew that *Jesus* sat at meat in the Pharisee's house, brought an alabaster-box of ointment,

38 And stood at his feet behind *him* weeping, and began to wash his feet with tears, and did wipe *them* with the hairs of her head, and kissed his feet, and anointed *them* with the ointment.

39 Now, when the Pharisee which had bidden him, saw *it*, he spake within himself, saying, This man, if he were a prophet, would have known who, and what manner of woman *this is* that toucheth him: for she is a sinner.

40 And Jesus answering, said unto him, Simon, I have somewhat to say unto thee. And he saith, Master, say on.

41 There was a certain creditor, which had two debtors: the one owed five hundred pence, and the other fifty.

42 And when they had nothing to pay, he frankly forgave them both. Tell me, therefore, which of them will love him most?

43 Simon answered and said, I suppose that *he*, to whom he forgave most. And he said unto him, Thou hast rightly judged.

44 And he turned to the woman, and said unto Simon, Seest thou this woman? I entered into thine house, thou gavest me no water for my feet: but she hath washed my feet with tears, and wiped *them* with the hairs of her head.

45 Thou gavest me no kiss: but this woman, since the time I came in, hath not ceased to kiss my feet.

46 My head with oil thou didst not anoint: but this woman hath anointed my feet with ointment.

47 Wherefore I say  
unto thee, Her sins  
which are many, are  
forgiven; for she loved  
much: but to whom  
little is forgiven, *the*  
*same* loveth little.

48 And he said unto  
her, Thy sins are for-  
given.

49 And they that sat  
at meat with him, be-  
gan to say within them-  
selves, Who is this that  
forgiveth sins also?

50 And he said to  
the woman, Thy faith  
hath saved thee; go in  
peace.

[170]

§ 47. Jesus, with the Twelve, makes a second circuit  
in Galilee.

Luke.

CH. VIII. 1-3.

And it came to pass afterward, that he went throughout every city and village, preaching and shewing the glad tidings of the kingdom of God: and the twelve were with him.

2 And certain women, which had been healed of evil spirits and infirmities, Mary called Magdalene, out of whom went seven devils,

3 And Joanna the wife of Chuza, Herod's steward, and Susanna, and many others, which ministered unto him of their substance.

#### § 48. The healing of a demoniac. The Scribes and Pharisees blaspheme. *Galilee.*

Matthew.  
CH. XII. 22-37.

Mark.  
CH. III. 1  
19 ——— a  
into a hou



20 And the multitude  
 cometh together again  
 so that they could not  
 so much as eat bread.  
 21 And when his  
 friends heard *of it*, they  
 went out to lay hold  
 him: for they said, He  
 is beside himself.

22 Then was brought both spake and saw.  
 unto him one pos-  
 sessed with a devil,  
 blind and dumb; and  
 he healed him, inso-  
 much that the blind and  
 dumb,<sup>151</sup>

23 And all the people and said, Is not this the son of David?  
 were amazed<sup>152</sup>

---

<sup>0</sup> We here learn that the demoniac was both blind and dumb. St. Luke omits the former circumstance, but does not contradict it. NEWCOME{FNS.

<sup>0</sup> An accurate reader will observe that Matt. xii. 22, and Luke xi. 14, show the general occasion of the blasphemy against Jesus; and that Matt. xii. 23, shews the particular occasion of it, the multitude alarming the Jewish rulers by their question whether Jesus were the Christ. No cause for the absurd and impious insinuation of the Scribes and Pharisees is assigned by St. Mark: however, he suggests an important circumstance, that they came from Jerusalem to watch the conduct of Jesus. The latter part of Luke viii. 19, shows that his relations were not able to enter the house on account of the press. Thus one Evangelist is wonderfully supplemental to another by notations of time, place, and other circumstances; and the strictest propriety and agreement result from diligently comparing them. NEWCOME{FNS.

24 But when the Pharisees heard *it* they said, This *fellow* doth not cast out devils, but by Beelzebub the prince of the devils.

25 And Jesus knew their thoughts, and said unto them, Every kingdom divided against itself, is brought to desolation; and every city or house divided against itself, shall not stand.

26 And if Satan cast out Satan, he is divided against himself; how shall then his kingdom stand?

27 And if I by Beelzebub cast out devils, by whom do your children cast *them* out? therefore they shall be your judges.

22 And which of you, which come from Jerusalem, hath cast out devils, and by the name of the devil? 23 And he said unto him, They cast them in power, can Satan cast out devils?

24 And if I by Beelzebub cast out devils, how shall his kingdom be divided against itself, that it should stand?

25 And if I by Beelzebub cast out devils, how shall his kingdom be divided against itself, that it should stand?

26 And if I by Beelzebub cast out devils, how shall his kingdom be divided against itself, that it should stand but for a season?

28 But if I cast out devils by the Spirit of God, then the kingdom of he will first bind the strong man;

29 Or else, how can one enter into a strong man's house, and spoil his goods, except he first bind the strong man? and then he will spoil his house.

30 He that is not with me is against me; and he that gathereth not with me, scattereth abroad.

31 Wherefore I say unto you, All manner of sin and blasphemy shall be forgiven unto men: but the blasphemy *against* the *Holy* Ghost shall not be forgiven unto men.

27 No man can enter into a strong man's house and spoil his goods, except he will first bind the strong man; and then he will spoil his house.

28 Verily, I say unto you, All sins shall be forgiven unto the sons of men, the blasphemies wherewith soever they shall blaspheme:

29 But he that shall blaspheme against the Holy Ghost hath never forgiveness, but is in danger of eternal damnation:

30 Because they said he hath an uncle's spirit.

32 And whosoever speaketh a word against the Son of man, it shall be forgiven him: but whosoever speaketh against the Holy Ghost, it shall not be forgiven him, neither in this world, neither in the *world* to come.

33 Either make the tree good, and his fruit good; or else make the tree corrupt, and his fruit corrupt: for the tree is known by *his* fruit.

34 O generation of vipers, how can ye, being evil, speak good things? for out of the abundance of the heart the mouth speaketh.

35 A good man, out of the good treasure of the heart, bringeth forth good things: and an evil man, out of the evil treasure, bringeth forth evil things.

36 But I say unto you,  
That every idle word  
that men shall speak,  
they shall give account  
thereof in the day of  
judgment.

37 For by thy words  
thou shalt be justified,  
and by thy words thou  
shalt be condemned.

Luke.

CH. XI. 14, 15, 17-23.

14 And he was casting out a devil, and it was dumb. And it came to pass when the devil was gone out, the dumb spake; and the people wondered.

15 But some of them said, He casteth out devils through Beelzebub, the chief of the devils.

17 But he, knowing their thoughts, said unto them, Every kingdom divided against itself, is brought to desolation; and a house *divided* against a house, falleth.

18 If Satan also be divided against himself, how shall his kingdom stand? because ye say that I cast out devils through Beelzebub.

19 And if I by Beelzebub cast out devils, by whom do your sons cast *them* out? therefore shall they be your judges.

20 But if I with the finger of God cast out devils, no doubt the kingdom of God is come upon you.

21 When a strong man armed keepeth his palace, his goods are in peace:

22 But when a stronger than he shall come upon him, and overcome him, he taketh from him all his armour, wherein he trusted, and divideth his spoils.

23 He that is not with me, is against me: and he that gathereth not with me scattereth.

§ 49. The Scribes and Pharisees seek a sign. Our Lord's reflection. *Galilee.*

Matthew.

CH. XII. 38-45.

38 Then certain of the scribes and of the Pharisees answered, saying, Master, we would see a sign from thee.

39 But he answered and said to them, An evil and adulterous generation seeketh after a sign, and there shall no sign be given<sup>153</sup> to it, but the sign of the prophet Jonas.

40 For as Jonas was three days and three nights in the whale's belly,<sup>154</sup> so shall the Son of man be three days and three nights in the heart of the earth.

Luke.

CH. XI. 16, 24-36.

And others tempting *him*, sought of him a sign from heaven.

29 And when the people had gathered thick together, he began to say, This is an evil generation: they seek a sign, and there shall no sign be given it, but the sign of Jonas the prophet.

<sup>0</sup> The writer of a false narrative would either have omitted to mention the request for a sign, or would have related that it was complied with. He would never have exposed his Master to the suspicion of a want of power. See also, Matt. xvi. 1.

<sup>0</sup> Jonah i. 17.

41 The men of Nineveh shall rise in judgment with this generation, and shall condemn it: because they repented at the preaching of Jonas,<sup>155</sup> and behold, a greater than Jonas *is* here.

42 The queen of the south shall rise up in the judgment with this generation, and shall condemn it: for she came from the uttermost parts of the earth to hear the wisdom of Solomon,<sup>156</sup> and behold, a greater than Solomon *is* here.

30 For as Jonas was a sign unto the Ninevites so shall also the Son of man be to this generation.

31 The queen of the south shall rise up in the judgment with the men of this generation, and condemn them: for she came from the uttermost parts of the earth, to hear the wisdom of Solomon; and behold, a greater than Solomon *is* here

32 The men of Nineveh shall rise up in the judgment with this generation, and shall condemn it: for they repented at the preaching of Jonas; and behold, a greater than Jonas *is* here.

---

<sup>0</sup> Jonah iii. 4, 5.

<sup>0</sup> 1 Kings x. 1 seq.



33 No man when he hath lighted a candle putteth *it* in a secret place, neither under a bushel, but on a candlestick, that they which come in may see the light.

34 The light of the body is thy eye: therefore when thine eye is single, thy whole body also is full of light; but when *thine eye* is evil, thy body also *is* full of darkness.

35 Take heed therefore, that the light which is in thee be not darkness.

36 If thy whole body therefore *be* full of light, having no part dark, the whole shall be full of light; as when the bright shining of a candle doth give thee light.

43 When the unclean spirit is gone out of a man, he walketh through dry places, seeking rest, and findeth none.

44 Then he saith, I will return into my house from whence I came out; and when he is come, he findeth *it* empty, swept, and garnished.

45 Then goeth he, and taketh with himself seven other spirits more wicked than himself, and they enter in and dwell there: and the *last state* of that man is worse than the first. Even so shall it be also unto this wicked generation.

24 When the unclean spirit is gone out of a man, he walketh through dry places, seeking rest: and finding none, he saith, I will return unto my house whence I came out.

25 And when he cometh, he findeth *it* swept and garnished.

26 Then goeth he, and taketh *to him* seven other spirits more wicked than himself; and they enter in, and dwell there: and the *last state* of that man is worse than the first.

27 And it came to pass, as he spake these things, a certain woman of the company lifted up her voice, and said unto him, Blessed *is* the womb that bare thee, and the paps which thou hast sucked.

28 But he said, Yea, rather blessed are they that hear the word of God, and keep it.

[176]

§ 50. The true disciples of Christ his nearest relatives. *Galilee*.

Matthew.

CH. XII. 46-50.

46 While he yet talked to the people, behold, *his* mother and his brethren stood without, desiring to speak with him.

Mark.

CH. III. 31-35.

31 There came then his brethren and his mother, and standing without, sent unto him, calling him.

47 Then one said unto him, Behold, thy mother and thy brethren stand without, desiring to speak with thee.

48 But he answered and said unto him that told him, Who is my mother? and who are my brethren?

49 And he stretched forth his hand toward his disciples, and said, Behold my mother and my brethren!

50 For whosoever shall do the will of my Father which is in heaven, the same is my brother, and sister, and mother.

32 And the multitude sat about him; and they said unto him, Behold, thy mother and thy brethren without seek for thee.

33 And he answered them, saying, Who is my mother, or my brethren? and who are my brethren?

34 And he looked round about on them which sat about him, and said, Behold, my mother and my brethren!

35 For whosoever shall do the will of God, the same is my brother, and my sister, and mother.

Luke.

CH. VIII. 19-21.

19 Then came to him *his* mother and his brethren, and could not come at him for the press.

20 And it was told him  
*by certain*, which said,  
 Thy mother and thy  
 brethren stand without,  
 desiring to see thee.

21 And he answered  
 and said unto them,  
 My mother and my  
 brethren are these  
 which hear the word of  
 God, and do it.

§ 51. At a Pharisee's table, Jesus denounces woes  
 against the Pharisees and others. *Galilee*.

Luke.

CH. XI. 37-54

37 And as he spake,  
 a certain Pharisee be-  
 sought him to dine  
 with him: and he went  
 in and sat down to  
 meat.

38 And when the Phar- before dinner.  
 isee saw *it*, he mar-  
 velled that he had not  
 first washed<sup>157</sup>

---

<sup>0</sup> This omission may seem inconsistent with the character of Jesus, who appears to have generally complied with all the innocent usages of his countrymen; and of course it may be adduced as an objection against the veracity of the Evangelist. Luke simply records the fact, however it may seem to make against the character of his Master, or his own veracity. But Mark,

39 And the Lord said  
unto him, Now do ye  
Pharisees make clean  
the outside of the cup  
and the platter; but  
your inward part is  
full of ravening and  
wickedness.

40 Ye fools, did not he  
that made that which  
is without, make that  
which is within also?

41 But rather give alms  
of such things as ye  
have; and behold, all  
things are clean unto  
you.

42 But wo unto you,  
Pharisees! for ye tithe  
mint, and rue, and  
all manner of herbs,  
and pass over judg-  
ment and the love of  
God: these ought ye to  
have done, and not to  
leave the other undone.

---

vii. 3-9, in a manner equally incidental and without design, discloses the truth that this washing was superstitious, and connected with the dangerous error of placing the traditions of the elders on equal footing with the commands of God. Where there was danger of his practice being misinterpreted, our Lord withheld his compliance, even in things indifferent. See Bp. SUMNER {FNS on Luke, Lect. 41.

43 Wo unto you, Pharisees! for ye love the uppermost seats in the synagogues, and greetings in the markets.

44 Wo unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! for ye are as graves which appear not, and the men that walk over *them* are not aware *of them*.

45 Then answered one of the lawyers, and said unto him, Master, thus saying, thou reproachest us also.

46 And he said, Wo unto you also, ye lawyers! for ye lade men with burdens grievous to be borne, and ye yourselves touch not the burdens with one of your fingers.

47 Wo unto you! for ye build the sepulchres of the prophets, and your fathers killed them.

48 Truly ye bear witness, that ye allow the deeds of your fathers: for they indeed killed them, and ye build their sepulchres.

49 Therefore also said the wisdom of God, I will send them prophets and apostles, and *some* of them they shall slay and persecute:

50. That the blood of all the prophets, which was shed from the foundation of the world, may be required of this generation;

51 From the blood of Abel<sup>158</sup> unto the blood of Zacharias, which perished between the altar and the temple: verily, I say unto you, It shall be required of this generation.

---

<sup>0</sup> Gen. iv. 8; 2 Chron. xxiv. 20, seq.



52 Wo unto you,  
lawyers! for ye have  
taken away the key of  
knowledge: ye entered  
not in yourselves, and  
them that were enter-  
ing in ye hindered.

53 And as he said these  
things unto them, the  
scribes and the Phar-  
isees began to urge *him*  
vehemently, and to  
provoke him to speak  
of many things;

54 Laying wait for  
him, and seeking to  
catch something out of  
his mouth, that they  
might accuse him.

[180]

§ 52. Jesus discourses to his disciples and the  
multitude. *Galilee.*

Luke.

CH. XII. 1-59.

In the mean time, when there were gathered together an innumerable multitude of people, insomuch that they trode one upon another, he began to say unto his disciples first of all, Beware ye of the leaven of the Pharisees, which is hypocrisy.

2 For there is nothing covered, that shall not be revealed; neither hid, that shall not be known.

3 Therefore, whatsoever ye have spoken in darkness, shall be heard in the light; and that which ye have spoken in the ear in closets, shall be proclaimed upon the house-tops.

4 And I say unto you, my friends, Be not afraid of them that kill the body, and after that, have no more that they can do.

5 But I will forewarn  
you whom ye shall  
fear; Fear him, which,  
after he hath killed,  
hath power to cast into  
hell; yea, I say unto  
you, Fear him.

6 Are not five sparrows  
sold for two farthings,  
and not one of them is  
forgotten before God?

7 But even the very  
hairs of your head are  
all numbered. Fear not  
therefore: ye are of  
more value than many  
sparrows.

8 Also I say unto you,  
Whosoever shall con-  
fess me before men,  
him shall the Son of  
man also confess be-  
fore the angels of God.

9 But he that denieth  
me before men, shall  
be denied before the  
angels of God.

10 And whosoever shall speak a word against the Son of man, it shall be forgiven him: but unto him that blasphemeth against the Holy Ghost, it shall not be forgiven.

11 And when they bring you unto the synagogues, and *unto magistrates*, and powers, take ye no thought how or what thing ye shall answer, or what ye shall say:

12 For the Holy Ghost shall teach you in the same hour what ye ought to say.

13 And one of the company said unto him, Master, speak to my brother, that he divide the inheritance with me.

14 And he said unto him, Man, who made me a judge, or a divider over you?

15 And he said unto them, Take heed, and beware of covetousness: for a man's life consisteth not in the abundance of the things which he possesseth.

16 And he spake a parable unto them, saying, The ground of a certain rich man brought forth plentifully:

17 And he thought within himself, saying, What shall I do, because I have no room where to bestow my fruits?

18 And he said, This will I do: I will pull down my barns, and build greater; and there will I bestow all my fruits and my goods.

19 And I will say to my soul, Soul, thou hast much goods laid up for many years; take thine ease, eat, drink, *and* be merry.

20 But God said unto him, Thou fool, this night thy soul shall be required of thee: then whose shall those things be, which thou hast provided?

21 So *is* he that layeth up treasure for himself, and is not rich toward God.

22 And he said unto his disciples, Therefore I say unto you, Take no thought for your life, what ye shall eat; neither for the body, what ye shall put on.

23 The life is more than meat, and the body *is more* than raiment.

24 Consider the ravens: for they neither sow nor reap: which neither have store-house, nor barn; and God feedeth them. How much more are ye better than the fowls?

25 And which of you  
with taking thought  
can add to his stature  
one cubit?

26 If ye then be not  
able to do that thing  
which is least, why  
take ye thought for the  
rest?

27 Consider the lilies  
how they grow: they  
toil not, they spin not;  
and yet I say unto you,  
that Solomon in all his  
glory was not arrayed  
like one of these.

28 If then God so  
clothe the grass, which  
is to-day in the field,  
and to-morrow is cast  
into the oven; how  
much more *will he*  
*clothe* you, O ye of lit-  
tle faith?

29 And seek not ye  
what ye shall eat, or  
what ye shall drink,  
neither be ye of doubt-  
ful mind.

30 For all these things  
do the nations of the  
world seek after: and  
your Father knoweth  
that ye have need of  
these things.

31 But rather seek ye  
the kingdom of God,  
and all these things  
shall be added unto  
you.

32 Fear not, little flock;  
for it is your Father's  
good pleasure to give  
you the kingdom.

33 Sell that ye have,  
and give alms: provide  
yourselves bags which  
wax not old, a trea-  
sure in the heavens that  
faileth not, where no  
thief approacheth, nei-  
ther moth corrupteth.

34 For where your  
treasure is, there will  
your heart be also.

35 Let your loins be  
girded about, and *your*  
lights burning;



36 And ye yourselves like unto men that wait for their lord, when he will return from the wedding; that, when he cometh and knocketh, they may open unto him immediately.

37 Blessed *are* those servants, whom the lord when he cometh shall find watching: verily, I say unto you, that he shall gird himself, and make them to sit down to meat, and will come forth and serve them.

38 And if he shall come in the second watch, or come in the third watch, and find *them* so, blessed are those servants.

39 And this know, that if the good man of the house had known what hour the thief would come, he would have watched, and not have suffered his house to be broken through.

40 Be ye therefore  
ready also: for the Son  
of man cometh at an  
hour when ye think  
not.

41 Then Peter said  
unto him, Lord, speak-  
est thou this parable  
unto us, or even to all?

42 And the Lord said,  
Who then is that faith-  
ful and wise stew-  
ard, whom his lord  
shall make ruler over  
his household, to give  
*them their* portion of  
meat in due season?

43 Blessed *is* that ser-  
vant, whom his lord  
when he cometh shall  
find so doing.

44 Of a truth I say unto  
you, That he will make  
him ruler over all that  
he hath.

45 But and if that ser-  
vant say in his heart,  
My lord delayeth his  
coming; and shall be-  
gin to beat the men-  
servants, and maidens,  
and to eat and drink,  
and to be drunken;

46 The lord of that servant will come in a day when he looketh not for *him*, and at an hour when he is not aware, and will cut him in sunder, and will appoint him his portion with the unbelievers.

47 And that servant which knew his lord's will, and prepared not *himself*, neither did according to his will, shall be beaten with many *stripes*.

48 But he that knew not, and did commit things worthy of stripes, shall be beaten with few *stripes*. For unto whomsoever much is given, of him shall much be required; and to whom men have committed much, of him they will ask the more.

49 I am come to send fire on the earth, and what will I, if it be already kindled?

50 But I have a baptism  
to be baptized with;  
and how am I strait-  
ened till it be accom-  
plished!

51 Suppose ye that I  
am come to give peace  
on earth? I tell you,  
Nay; but rather divi-  
sion:

52 For from hence-  
forth there shall be five  
in one house divided,  
three against two, and  
two against three.

53 The father shall  
be divided against  
the son, and the  
son against the father;  
the mother against  
the daughter, and the  
daughter against the  
mother; the mother-  
in-law against her  
daughter-in-law, and  
the daughter-in-law  
against her mother-in-  
law.

54 And he said also to straightway ye say, There cometh a shower; and so  
the people, When ye  
see a cloud rise out of  
the west,<sup>159</sup>

---

<sup>0</sup> The autumnal rains in Palestine come mostly from the west or south-west.

55 And when *ye see*  
the south wind blow,  
ye say, There will be  
heat; and it cometh to  
pass.

56 Ye hypocrites, ye  
can discern the face  
of the sky and of the  
earth; but how is it,  
that ye do not discern  
this time?

57 Yea, and why even  
of yourselves judge ye  
not what is right?

58 When thou goest  
with thine adversary to  
the magistrate, *as thou*  
*art* in the way, give  
diligence that thou  
mayest be delivered  
from him; lest he hale  
thee to the judge, and  
the judge deliver thee  
to the officer, and the  
officer cast thee into  
prison.

59 I tell thee, thou shalt  
not depart thence, till  
thou hast paid the very  
last mite.

---

ROBINSON'S{FNS Biblical Researches, vol. ii. p. 97. The incidental allusion here made to that fact, would hardly have been made by a writer of fiction.

[188]

§ 53. The slaughter of certain Galileans. Parable of the barren fig-tree. *Galilee*.

Luke.

CH. XIII. 1-9.

There were present at that season some that told him of the Galileans, whose blood Pilate had mingled with their sacrifices.

2 And Jesus answering, said unto them, Suppose ye that these Galileans were sinners above all the Galileans, because they suffered such things?

3 I tell you, Nay; but, except ye repent, ye shall all likewise perish.

4 Or those eighteen, upon whom the tower in Siloam fell, and slew them, think ye that they were sinners above all men that dwelt in Jerusalem?

5 I tell you, Nay; but,  
except ye repent, ye  
shall all likewise per-  
ish.

6 He spake also this  
parable: A certain *man*  
had a fig-tree planted  
in his vineyard; and he  
came and sought fruit  
thereon, and found  
none.

7 Then said he unto the  
dresser of his vineyard,  
Behold, these three  
years I come seeking  
fruit on this fig-tree,  
and find none: cut it  
down; why cumbereth  
it the ground?

8 And he answering,  
said unto him, Lord, let  
it alone this year also,  
till I shall dig about it,  
and dung *it*:

9 And if it bear fruit,  
*well*: and if not, *then*  
after that thou shalt cut  
it down.

[190]

§ 54. The parable of the sower. *Lake of Galilee. Near  
Capernaum?*

Matthew.

CH. XIII. 1-23.

The same day went Jesus out of the house, and sat by the sea-side.

2 And great multitudes were gathered together unto him, so that he went into a ship, and sat; and the whole multitude stood on the shore.

3 And he spake many things unto them in parables, saying, Behold, a sower went forth to sow;

4 And when he sowed, some *seeds* fell by the way-side, and the fowls came and devoured them up:

Mark.

CH. IV. 1-25.

And he began again to teach by the sea-side: and there was gathered unto him a great multitude, so that he entered into a ship, and sat in the sea; and the whole multitude was by the sea, on the land.

2 And he taught them many things by parables, and said unto them in his doctrine,

3 Hearken; Behold, there went out a sower to sow.

4 And it came to pass as he sowed, some fell by the way-side, and the fowls of the air came and devoured it up.



5 Some fell upon stony places where they had not much earth: and forthwith they sprung up, because they had no deepness of earth:

6 And when the sun was up, they were scorched; and because they had no root, they withered away.

7 And some fell among thorns; and the thorns sprung up, and choked them:

8 But other fell into good ground, and brought forth fruit, some a hundred-fold, some sixty-fold, some thirty-fold.

9 Who hath ears to hear, let him hear.

10 And the disciples came, and said unto him, Why speakest thou unto them in parables?

5 And some fell on stony ground, where it had not much earth; and immediately it sprang up, because it had no depth of earth:

6 But when the sun was up it was scorched; and because it had no root, it withered away.

7 And some fell among thorns, and the thorns grew up, and choked it, and it yielded no fruit.

8 And other fell on good ground, and did yield fruit that sprang up, and increased, and brought forth, some thirty, and some sixty, and some a hundred.

9 And he said unto them, He that hath ears to hear, let him hear.

10 And when he was alone, they that were about him, with the twelve, asked of him the parable.

11 He answered and said unto them, Because it is given unto you to know the mysteries of the kingdom of heaven, but to them it is not given.

12 For whosoever hath, to him shall be given, and he shall have more abundance: but whosoever hath not, from him shall be taken away even that he hath.

13 Therefore speak I to them in parables: because they seeing, see not; and hearing, they hear not; neither do they understand.

14 And in them is fulfilled the prophecy of Esaias,<sup>160</sup> which saith, By hearing ye shall hear, and shall not understand; and seeing ye shall see, and shall not perceive:

11 And he said unto them, Unto you it is given to know the mystery of the kingdom of God: but unto them that are without, all *these* things are done in parables:

12 That seeing they may see, and not perceive; and hearing they may hear, and not understand; lest at any time they should be converted, and *their* sins should be forgiven them.

---

<sup>0</sup> Is. vi. 9, 10.

15 For this people's heart is waxed gross, and *their* ears are dull of hearing, and their eyes they have closed; lest at any time they should *see* with *their* eyes, and hear with *their* ears, and should understand with *their* heart, and should be converted, and I should heal them.

16 But *blessed are* your eyes, for they see: and your ears, for they hear.

17 For, verily I say unto you, That many prophets and righteous *men* have desired to see *those things* which ye see, and have not seen *them*; and to hear *those things* which ye hear, and have not heard *them*.

18 Hear ye therefore the parable of the sower.

13 And he said unto them, Know ye not this parable? and how then will ye know all parables?

19 When any one heareth the word of the kingdom, and understandeth *it* not, then cometh the wicked *one*, and catcheth away that which was sown in his heart. This is he which received seed by the way-side.

14 The sower soweth the word.

15 And these are they by the way-side, where the word is sown; but when they have heard, Satan cometh immediately, and taketh away the word that was sown in their hearts.

20 But he that received the seed into stony places, the same is he that heareth the word, and anon with joy receiveth it;

16 And these are they likewise which are sown on stony ground; who, when they have heard the word, immediately receive it with gladness;

21 Yet hath he not root in himself, but dureth for a while: for when tribulation or persecution ariseth because of the word, by and by he is offended.

17 And have no root in themselves, and so endure but for a time: afterward, when affliction or persecution ariseth for the word's sake, immediately they are offended.

22 He also that received seed among the thorns is he that heareth the word; and the care of this world, and the deceitfulness of riches, choke the word, and he becometh unfruitful.

23 But he that received seed into the good ground is he that heareth the word, and understandeth *it*; which also beareth fruit, and bringeth forth, some a hundred-fold, some sixty, some thirty.

18 and these are they which are sown among thorns; such as hear the word,

19 And the cares of this world, and the deceitfulness of riches, and the lusts of other things entering in, choke the word, and it becometh unfruitful.

20 And these are they which are sown on good ground; such as hear the word, and receive it, and bring forth fruit, some thirty-fold, some sixty, and some a hundred.

21 And he said unto them, Is a candle brought to be put under a bushel, or under a bed? and not to be set on a candlestick?

22 For there is nothing hid, which shall not be manifested; neither was any thing kept secret, but that it should come abroad.

23 If any man have ears to hear, let him hear.

24 And he said unto them, Take heed what ye hear: With what measure ye mete, it shall be measured to you: and unto you that hear shall more be given.

25 For he that hath, to him shall be given: and he that hath not, from him shall be taken even that which he hath.

Luke.

CH. VIII. 4-18.

4 And when much people were gathered together, and were come to him out of every city, he spake by a parable:

5 A sower went out to sow his seed: and as he sowed, some fell by the way-side; and it was trodden down, and the fowls of the air devoured it.

6 And some fell upon a rock; and as soon as it was sprung up, it withered away, because it lacked moisture.

7 And some fell among thorns; and the thorns sprang up with it, and choked it.

8 And other fell on good ground, and sprang up, and bare fruit a hundred-fold. And when he had said these things, he cried, He that hath ears to hear, let him hear.

9 And his disciples asked him, saying, What might this parable be?

10 And he said, Unto you it is given to know the mysteries of the kingdom of God: but to others in parables; that seeing they might not see, and hearing they might not understand.

11 Now the parable is this: The seed is the word of God.

12 Those by the way-side, are they that hear: then cometh the devil, and taketh away the word out of their hearts, lest they should believe and be saved.

13 They on the rock *are they*, which, when they hear, receive the word with joy; and these have no root, which for a while believe, and in times of temptation fall away.



14 And that which fell among thorns, are they, which, when they have heard, go forth, and are choked with cares, and riches, and pleasures of *this* life, and bring no fruit to perfection.

15 But that on the good ground are they, which, in an honest and good heart, having heard the word, keep *it*, and bring forth fruit with patience.

16 No man, when he hath lighted a candle, covereth it with a vessel, or putteth *it* under a bed; but setteth *it* on a candlestick, that they which enter in may see the light.

17 For nothing is secret, that shall not be made manifest; neither *anything* hid, that shall not be known, and come abroad.

18 Take heed therefore how ye hear: for whosoever hath, to him shall be given: and whosoever hath not, from him shall be taken even that which he seemeth to have.

[194]

§ 55. Parable of the tares. Other parables. *Near Capernaum?*

Matthew.

CH. XIII. 24-53.

24 Another parable put he forth unto them, saying, The kingdom of heaven is likened unto a man which sowed good seed in his field:

25 But while men slept, his enemy came and sowed tares among the wheat, and went his way.

26 But when the blade was sprung up, and brought forth fruit, then appeared the tares also.

Mark.

CH. IV. 26-34.

27 So the servants of the householder came and said unto him, Sir, didst not thou sow good seed in thy field? from whence then hath it tares?

28 He said unto them, An enemy hath done this. The servant said unto him, Wilt thou then that we go and gather them up?

29 But he said, Nay; lest while ye gather up the tares, ye root up also the wheat with them.

30 Let both grow together until the harvest: and in the time of harvest I will say to the reapers, Gather ye together first the tares, and bind them in bundles to burn them: but gather the wheat into my barn.

26 And he said, So is the kingdom of God, as if a man should cast seed into the ground;

27 And should sleep, and rise night and day, and the seed should spring and grow up, he knoweth not how.

28 For the earth bringeth forth fruit of herself; first the blade, then the ear, after that the full corn in the ear.

29 But when the fruit is brought forth, immediately he putteth in the sickle, because the harvest is come.

31 Another parable put he forth unto them, saying, The kingdom of heaven is like to a grain of mustard-seed, which a man took, and sowed in his field:

32 Which indeed is the least of all seeds: but when it is grown, it is the greatest among herbs, and becometh a tree, so that the birds of the air come and lodge in the branches thereof.

33 Another parable spake he unto them; The kingdom of heaven is like unto leaven, which a woman took, and hid in three measures of meal, till the whole was leavened.

34 All these things spake Jesus unto the multitude in parables; and without a parable spake he not unto them:

30 And he said, Whereunto shall we liken the kingdom of God? or with what comparison shall we compare it?

31 It *is* like a grain of mustard-seed, which when it is sown in the earth, in less than all the seeds that be in the earth:

32 But when it is sown, it groweth up, and becometh greater than all herbs, and shooteth out great branches; so that the fowls of the air may lodge under the shadow of it.

33 And with many such parables spake he the word unto them, as they were able to hear *it*.

35 That it might be fulfilled which was spoken by the prophet,<sup>161</sup> saying, I will open my mouth in parables; I will utter things which have been kept secret from the foundation of the world.

36 Then Jesus sent the multitude away, and went into the house: and his disciples came unto him, saying, Declare unto us the parable of the tares of the field.

37 He answered and said unto them, He that soweth the good seed is the Son of man;

38 The field is the world; the good seed are the children of the kingdom; but the tares are the children of the wicked *one*;

34 But without a parable spake he not unto them: and when they were alone, he expounded all things to his disciples.

---

<sup>0</sup> Ps. lxxviii. 2.

39 The enemy that sowed them is the devil; the harvest is the end of the world; and the reapers are the angels.

40 As therefore the tares are gathered and burned in the fire; so shall it be in the end of this world.

41 The Son of man shall send forth his angels, and they shall gather out of his kingdom all things that offend, and them which do iniquity;

42 And shall cast them into a furnace of fire; there shall be wailing and gnashing of teeth.

43 Then shall the righteous shine forth as the sun in the kingdom of their Father. Who hath ears to hear, let him hear.

44 Again, The kingdom of heaven is like unto treasure hid in a field; the which when a man hath found, he hideth, and for joy thereof goeth and selleth all that he hath, and buyeth that field.

45 Again, The kingdom of heaven is like unto a merchant-man seeking goodly pearls:

46 Who, when he had found one pearl of great price, went and sold all that he had, and bought it.

47 Again, The kingdom of heaven is like unto a net, that was cast into the sea, and gathered of every kind:

48 Which, when it was full, they drew to shore, and sat down, and gathered the good into vessels, but cast the bad away.

49 So shall it be at  
the end of the world:  
the angels shall come  
forth, and sever the  
wicked from among  
the just,

50 And shall cast them  
into the furnace of fire:  
there shall be wailing  
and gnashing of teeth.

51 Jesus saith unto  
them, Have ye under-  
stood all these things?  
They say unto him,  
Yea, Lord.

52 Then said he unto  
them, Therefore ev-  
ery scribe *which is in-*  
*structed* unto the king-  
dom of heaven, is like  
unto a man *that is*  
a householder, which  
bringeth forth out of  
his treasure *things* new  
and old.

53 And it came to  
pass, *that* when Je-  
sus had finished these  
parables, he departed  
thence.



§ 56. Jesus directs to cross the lake. Incidents. The tempest stilled. *Lake of Galilee.*

Matthew.

CH. VIII. 18-27.

18 Now when Jesus saw great multitudes about him, he gave commandment to depart unto the other side.

19 And a certain scribe came, and said unto him, Master, I will follow thee whithersoever thou goest.

20 And Jesus saith unto him, The foxes have holes, and the birds of the air *have* nests; but the Son of man hath not where to lay *his* head.

21 And another of his disciples said unto him, Lord, suffer me first to go and bury my father.

22 But Jesus said unto him, Follow me; and let the dead bury their dead.

Mark.

CH. IV. 35-41.

And the same day, when the even was come, he saith unto them, Let us pass over unto the other side.

23 And when he was entered into a ship, his disciples followed him.

24 And behold, there arose a great tempest in the sea, insomuch that the ship was covered with the waves: but he was asleep.

25 And his disciples came to *him*, and awoke him, saying, Lord, save us: we perish.

26 And he saith unto them, Why are ye fearful, O ye of little faith? Then he arose, and rebuked the winds and the sea; and there was a great calm.

36 And when they had sent away the multitude, they took him even as he was in the ship. And there were also with him other little ships.

37 And there arose a great storm of wind, and the waves beat into the ship, so that it was now full.

38 And he was in the hinder part of the ship, asleep on a pillow: and they awake him, and say unto him, Master, carest thou not that we perish?

39 And he arose and rebuked the wind, and said unto the sea, Peace, be still: and the wind ceased, and there was a great calm.

40 And he said unto them, Why are ye so fearful? how is that ye have no faith?

27 But the men marvelled, saying, What manner of man is this, that even the winds and the sea obey him!

41 And they feared exceedingly, and said one to another, What manner of man is this, that even the wind and the sea obey him?

Luke.

CH. VIII. 22-25.

CH. IX. 57-62.

22 Now it came to pass on a certain day, that he went into a ship with his disciples: and he said unto them, Let us go over unto the other side of the lake.

CH. IX.

57 And it came to pass, that as they went in the way, a certain *man* said unto him, Lord, I will follow thee whithersoever thou goest.

58 And Jesus said unto him, Foxes have holes, and birds of the air *have* nests; but the Son of man hath not where to lay *his* head.

59 And he said unto another, Follow me. But he said, Lord, suffer me first to go and bury my father.

60 Jesus said unto him, Let the dead bury their dead: but go thou and preach the kingdom of God.

61 And another also said, Lord, I will follow thee; but let me first go bid them farewell which are at home at my house.

62 And Jesus said unto him, No man having put his hand to the plough, and looking back, is fit for the kingdom of God.

#### CH. VIII.

22 And they launched forth.

23 But as they sailed, he fell asleep: and there came down a storm of wind on the lake; and they were filled *with water*, and were in jeopardy.

24 And they came to him, and awoke him, saying, Master, Master, we perish. Then he arose, and rebuked the wind, and the raging of the water: and they ceased, and there was a calm.

25 And he said unto them, Where is your faith? And they being afraid, wondered, saying one to another, What manner of man is this! for he commandeth even the winds and water, and they obey him.

[202]

§ 57. The two demoniacs of Gadara. *S. E. coast of the Lake of Galilee.*

feeding. 31 So the devils besought him, saying If thou cast us out, suffer us to go away into the herd of swine.<sup>12</sup> And all the devils besought him, saying, Send us into the swine, that we may enter into them. 32 And he said unto them, Go. And when they were come out, they went into the herd of swine: and behold, the whole herd of swine ran violently down a steep place into the sea, and perished in the waters.<sup>13</sup> And forthwith Jesus gave them leave. And the unclean spirits went out, and entered into the swine: and the herd ran violently down a steep place into the sea, (they were about two thousand) and were choked in the sea. 33 And they that kept them, fled, and went their ways into the

city, and told everything; and what was befallen to the possessed of the devils.<sup>14</sup> And they that fed the swine fled and told *it* in the city, and in the country. And they went out to see what it was that was done. <sup>34</sup> And behold, the whole city came out to meet Jesus: and when they saw him, they besought him that he would depart out of their coasts.<sup>15</sup> And they come to Jesus, and see him that was possessed with the devil, and had the legion, sitting, and clothed, and in his right mind: and they were afraid. <sup>16</sup> And they that saw *it* told them how it befell to him that was possessed with the devil, and also concerning the swine. <sup>17</sup> And they began to pray him to depart out of their coasts.

Matthew.

Mark.

CH. VIII. 28-34.

CH. V. 1-21.

CH. IX. 1.

28 And when he was  
come to the other side,  
into the country of the

Gegesenenes,<sup>162</sup>

there met him two possessed with devils, coming out of the tombs, exceeding fierce, so that no man might pass by that way. And they came over unto the other side of the sea, into the country of the Gadarenes. <sup>2</sup> And when he was come out of the ship, immediately there met him out of the tombs a man with an unclean spirit, <sup>3</sup> Who had *his* dwelling among the tombs; and no

---

<sup>0</sup> This is made consistent with the other Evangelists, by reading "Gadarenes." If Gergasa was subordinate to Gadara, the metropolis of Perea, as Cellarius and Reland judge, and St. Mark did not write in Judea, what wonder that he chose the more general name, which was best known in the world? But Cellarius from Eusebius takes notice that some esteemed Gergasi, so Eusebius writes it, and Gadara two names of the same city; and this he thinks was the sentiment of the Syriac translator. To this Sir Richard Ellis most inclines, in his "Fortuita Sacra." TOWNSON{FNS, p. 72.

In Matthew mention is made of two demoniacs; in Mark and Luke of one only. Here Le Clerc's maxim is undoubtedly true: Qui plura narrat, pauciora complectitur: qui pauciora memorat, plura non negat. *Harm.* p. 524.

We may collect a reason from the Gospels themselves, why Mark and Luke mention only one demoniac; because, one only being grateful for the miracle, his cure only was recorded by the two Evangelists, who mention this gratitude, and who are more intent on inculcating the moral, than on magnifying our Lord's power. NEWCOME{FNS.

man could bind him, no, not with his chains: 4 Because that he had been often bound with fetters and chains, and the chains had been plucked asunder by him, and the fetters broken in pieces: neither could any *man* tame him. 5 And always, night and day, he was in the mountains, and in the tombs, crying, and cutting himself with stones. 6 But when he saw Jesus afar off, he ran and worshipped him, 7 And cried with a loud voice, and said, What have I to do with thee, Jesus, *thou* Son of the most high God? I adjure thee by God, that thou torment me not. 8 (For he said unto him, Come out of the man, *thou* unclean spirit.) 29 And behold, they cried out, saying, What have we to do with thee, Jesus, thou Son of God? art thou come hither to torment us before the time? 9 And he asked him, What *is* thy name? And he answered, saying, My name *is* Legion: for we are many. 10 And he besought him much that he would not send them away out of the country. 30 And there was a good way off<sup>163</sup> from them a herd of many swine, feeding. 11 Now there was there nigh unto the mountains a great herd of swine<sup>164</sup>

#### CH. IX.

And he entered into a ship, and passed over, and came into his own city.	18 And when he was come into the ship, he that had been pos- sessed with the devil prayed him that he might be with him.
---	---

<sup>163</sup> There is no contradiction here between Matth. and Mark. The demoniacs met Jesus on the shore, as he came out of the ship. Luke viii. 27. The swine were within sight, on the ascending ground, Luke viii. 32, at the side of the mountain, Mark v. 11, which was at some distance from the shore where they stood. Matth. viii. 30.

<sup>164</sup> Since swine were held in abhorrence by the Jews, how happened a herd of them to be feeding by the sea of Tiberias? The answer shows the accuracy of the Evangelist and his intimate knowledge of the local circumstances of Judea; for it appears from Josephus, Antiq. xvii. 11, 4, that *Gadara* was a *Grecian city*, the inhabitants of which, therefore, were not Jews. BLUNT{FNS, Veracity, &c. sect. ii. 6.

19 Howbeit Jesus suffered him not, but saith unto him, Go home to thy friends, and tell them how great things the Lord hath done for thee, and hath had compassion on thee.

20 And he departed, and began to publish in Decapolis how great things Jesus had done for him. And all *men* did marvel.

21 And when Jesus was passed over again by ship unto the other side, much people gathered unto him: and he was nigh unto the sea.

Luke.

CH. VIII. 26-40.

26 And they arrived at the country of the Gadarenes, which is over against Galilee.



27 And when he went forth to land, there met him out of the city a certain man, which had devils long time, and ware no clothes, neither abode in *any* house, but in the tombs.

28 When he saw Jesus, he cried out, and fell down before him, and with a loud voice said, What have I to do with thee, Jesus, *thou* Son of God most high? I beseech thee torment me not.

29 (For he had commanded the unclean spirit to come out of the man. For oftentimes it had caught him: and he was kept bound with chains, and in fetters; and he brake the bands, and was driven of the devil into the wilderness.)

30 And Jesus asked him, saying, What is thy name? And he said, Legion: because many devils were entered into him.

31 And they besought him, that he would not command them to go out into the deep.

32 And there was there a herd of many swine feeding on the mountain: and they besought him that he would suffer them to enter into them. And he suffered them.

33 Then went the devils out of the man, and entered into the swine: and the herd ran violently down a steep place into the lake, and were choked.

34 When they that fed *them* saw what was done, they fled, and went and told *it* in the city and in the country.

35 Then they went out to see what was done; and came to Jesus, and found the man out of whom the devils were departed, sitting at the feet of Jesus,<sup>165</sup> clothed, and in his right mind: and they were afraid.

36 They also which saw *it*, told them by what means he that was possessed of the devils was healed.

---

<sup>0</sup> Here is a reference to an Eastern custom, which affords internal evidence of the truth of the narrative. The master sat on a higher seat, and the scholars sat at his feet. Sitting at the feet, was the posture of a learner; and indicated the reverence and submission due to the teacher. Thus Moses says of the people, to whom God gave the law from Mount Sinai,—“they sat down at thy feet.” Deut. xxxiii. 3. Isaiah, speaking of Abraham, who was taught of God, says “he called him to his foot.” Is. xli. 2. Mary “sat at Jesus’s feet and heard his words.” Luke x. 39. Paul was brought up “at the feet of Gamaliel;” Acts xxii. 3; studied law with him. And the restored maniac sat down at Jesus’s feet, in the posture of a humble learner, desiring no other wisdom than to be taught of him.

37 Then the whole multitude of the country of the Gadarenes round about, besought him to depart from them; for they were taken with great fear. And he went up into the ship, and returned back again.

38 Now, the man out of whom the devils were departed, besought him that he might be with him. But Jesus sent him away, saying,

39 Return to thine own house, and shew how great things God hath done unto thee. And he went his way and published throughout the whole city, how great things Jesus had done unto him.

40 And it came to pass, that, when Jesus was returned, the people *gladly* received him: for they were all waiting for him.

§ 58. Levi's feast. *Capernaum*.

Matthew.

CH. IX. 10-17.

10 And it came to pass, behold, many publicans and sinners came and sat down with  
as Jesus sat at meat in  
the house,<sup>166</sup>

11 And when the Phar-  
isees saw *it*, they  
said unto his disciples,  
Why eateth your Mas-  
ter with publicans and  
sinners?

12 But when Jesus  
heard *that*, he said  
unto them, They that  
be whole need not a  
physician, but they that  
are sick.

---

<sup>0</sup> Both Mark and Luke state that this was in Matthew's own house; and Luke calls it a great feast, made in honour of Jesus. The omission of this fact by Matthew, not only shows his modesty and humility, but adds much to the weight of evidence in his favour, both as a man, and as a witness. See BLUNT'S {FNS Veracity of the Gospels, sect. i. 4.

13 But go ye and learn  
what *that* meaneth,<sup>167</sup>  
I will have mercy, and  
not sacrifice: for I am  
not come to call the  
righteous, but sinners  
to repentance.

14 Then came to him  
the disciples of John,  
saying, Why do we and  
the Pharisees fast oft,  
but thy disciples fast  
not?

15 And Jesus said unto  
them, Can the children  
of the bride-chamber  
mourn, as long as  
the bridegroom is with  
them? but the days will  
come, when the bride-  
groom shall be taken  
from them, and then  
shall they fast.

---

<sup>0</sup> Hos. vi. 6; 1 Sam. xv. 22.

16 No man putteth a piece of new cloth unto an old garment: for that which is put in to fill it up, taketh from the garment, and the rent is made worse.

17 Neither do men put new wine into old bottles: else the bottles break, and the wine runneth out, and the bottles perish: but they put new wine into new bottles, and both are preserved.

Luke.

CH. V. 29-39.

29 And Levi made him a great feast in his own house; and there was a great company of publicans, and of others that sat down with publicans and sinners?

30 But their scribes and Pharisees murmured against his disciples, saying, Why do you eat and drink with publicans and sinners?

31 And Jesus answering, said unto them, They that are whole need not a physician; but they that are sick.

32 I came not to call the righteous, but sinners to repentance.

33 And they said unto him, Why do the disciples of John fast often, and make prayers, and likewise *the disciples* of the Pharisees; but thine eat and drink?

34 And he said unto them, Can ye make the children of the bride-chamber fast, while the bridegroom is with them?

35 But the days will come, when the bridegroom shall be taken away from them, and then shall they fast in those days.



36 And he spake also a parable unto them; No man putteth a piece of a new garment upon an old: if otherwise, then both the new maketh a rent, and the piece that was *taken* out of the new, agreeth not with the old.

37 And no man putteth new wine into old bottles; else the new wine will burst the bottles, and be spilled, and the bottles shall perish.

38 But new wine must be put into new bottles, and both are preserved.

39 No man also having drunk old *wine*, straightway desireth new: for he saith, The old is better.

[208]

§ 59. The raising of Jairus's daughter. The woman with a bloody flux. *Capernaum*.

Matthew.  
CH. IX. 18-26.

Mark.  
CH. V. 22-43.

18 While he spake these things unto them, behold, there came a certain ruler, and worshipped him, saying, My daughter is even now dead: but come and lay thy hand upon her, and she shall live.

19 And Jesus arose, and followed him, and *so did* his disciples.

20 And behold, a woman which was diseased with an issue of blood twelve years, came behind *him*, and touched the hem of his garment.

21 For she said within herself, If I may but touch his garment, I shall be whole.

22 And behold, there cometh one of the rulers of the synagogue, Jairus by name; and when he saw him, he fell at his feet.

23 And besought him greatly, saying, My little daughter lieth at the point of death: *I pray thee*, come and lay thy hands on her, that she may be healed; and she shall live.

24 And *Jesus* went with him; and much people followed him, and thronged him.

25 And a certain woman which had an issue of blood twelve years,

22 But Jesus turned him about, and when he saw her, he said, Daughter, be of good comfort: thy faith hath made thee whole. And the woman was made whole from that hour.

26 And had suffered many things of many physicians, and had spent all that she had, and was nothing bettered, but rather grew worse,

27 When she had heard of Jesus, came in the press behind, and touched his garment:

28 For she said, If I may touch but his clothes, I shall be whole.

29 And straightway the fountain of her blood was dried up; and she felt in *her* body that she was healed of that plague.

30 And Jesus, immediately knowing in himself that virtue had gone out of him, turned him about in the press, and said, Who touched my clothes?

31 And his disciples said unto him, Thou seest the multitude thronging thee, and sayest thou, Who touched me?

32 And he looked round about to see her that had done this thing.

33 But the woman, fearing and trembling, knowing what was done in her, came and fell down before him, and told him all the truth.

34 And he said unto her, Daughter, thy faith hath made thee whole; go in peace, and be whole of thy plague.

35 While he yet spake, there came from the ruler of the synagogue's *house certain* which said, Thy daughter is dead: why troublest thou the Master any further?

- 36 As soon as Jesus heard the word that was spoken, he saith unto the ruler of the synagogue, Be not afraid, only believe.
- 37 And he suffered no man to follow him, save Peter, and James, and John the brother of James.
- 23 And when Jesus came into the ruler's house, and saw the minstrels and the people making a noise,
- 38 And he cometh to the house of the ruler of the synagogue, and seeth the tumult, and them that wept and wailed greatly.
- 24 He said unto them, Give place: for the maid is not dead, but sleepeth. And they laughed him to scorn.
- 39 And when he was come in, he saith unto them, Why make ye this ado, and weep? the damsel is not dead, but sleepeth.
- 25 But when the people were put forth, he went in, and took her by the hand, and the maid arose.
- 40 And they laughed him to scorn. But, when he had put them all out, he taketh the father and the mother of the damsel, and them that were with him, and entereth in where the damsel was lying.

26 And the fame hereof went abroad into all that land.

41 And he took the damsel by the hand, and said unto her, Talitha-cumi: which is, being interpreted, Damsel, (I say unto thee) arise.

42 And straightway the damsel arose, and walked; for she was *of the age* of twelve years. And they were astonished with a great astonishment.

43 And he charged them straitly that no man should know it; and commanded that something should be given her to eat.

Luke.

CH. VIII. 41-56.

41 And behold, there came a man named Jairus, and he was a ruler of the synagogue: and he fell down at Jesus' feet, and besought him that he would come into his house:

42 For he had one only daughter, about twelve years of age, and she lay a-dying. But as he went, the people thronged him.

43 And a woman having an issue of blood twelve years, which had spent all her living upon physicians, neither could be healed of any,

44 Came behind *him* and touched the border of his garment: and immediately her issue of blood stanchèd.

45 And Jesus said, Who touched me? When all denied, Peter, and they that were with him, said, Master, the multitude throng thee, and press *thee*, and sayest thou, Who touched me?

46 And Jesus said, Somebody hath touched me: for I perceive that virtue is gone out of me.

47 And when the woman saw that she was not hid, she came trembling, and falling down before him, she declared unto him before all the people for what cause she had touched him, and how she was healed immediately.

48 And he said unto her, Daughter, be of good comfort: thy faith hath made thee whole; go in peace.

49 While he yet spake, there cometh one from the ruler of the *synagogue's house*, saying to him, Thy daughter is dead: trouble not the Master.

50 But when Jesus heard *it*, he answered him, saying, Fear not: believe only, and she shall be made whole.



51 And when he came into the house, he suffered no man to go in, save Peter, and James, and John, and the father and the mother of the maiden.

52 And all wept and bewailed her: but he said, Weep not: she is not dead, but sleepeth.

53 And they laughed him to scorn, knowing that she was dead.

54 And he put them all out, and took her by the hand, and called, saying, Maid, arise.

55 And her spirit came again, and she arose straightway: and he commanded to give her meat.

56 And her parents were astonished: but he charged them that they should tell no man what was done.

[210]

§ 60. Two blind men healed, and a dumb spirit cast out. *Capernaum.*

Matthew.

CH. IX. 27-34.

27 And when Jesus departed thence, two blind men followed him, crying, and saying, *Thou* son of David, have mercy on us.

28 And when he was come into the house, the blind men came to him: and Jesus saith unto them, Believe ye that I am able to do this? They said unto him, Yea, Lord.

29 Then touched he their eyes, saying, According to your faith, be it unto you.

30 And their eyes were opened; and Jesus straitly charged them, saying, See *that* no man know *it*.

31 But they, when they were departed, spread abroad his fame in all that country.

32 As they went out,  
behold, they brought to  
him a dumb man pos-  
sessed with a devil.

33 And when the devil  
was cast out, the dumb  
spake: and the multi-  
tudes marvelled, say-  
ing, It was never so  
seen in Israel.

34 But the Pharisees  
said, He casteth out  
devils, through the  
prince of the devils.

[212]

## § 61. Jesus again at Nazareth, and again rejected.

Matthew.

CH. XIII. 54-58.

54 And when he was  
come into his own  
country, he taught  
them in their syna-  
gogue, insomuch that  
they were astonished,  
and said, Whence hath  
this *man* this wis-  
dom, and *these* mighty  
works?

Mark.

CH. VI. 1-6.

And he went out from  
thence, and came into  
his own county; and  
his disciples follow  
him.

55 Is not this the carpenter's son? is not his mother called Mary? and his brethren, James, and Joses, and Simon, and Judas?

56 And his sisters, are they not all with us? Whence then hath this *man* all these things?

57 And they were offended in him. But Jesus said unto them, A prophet is not without honour, save in his own country, and in his own house.

2 And when the sabbath-day was come, he began to teach in the synagogue: and many hearing *him* were astonished, saying, From whence hath this *man* these things? and what wisdom is this which is given unto him, that even such mighty works are wrought by his hands?

3 Is not this the carpenter, the brother of James, and Peter, the son of Mary,<sup>168</sup>

4 But Jesus said unto them, A prophet is not without honour, but in his own country, and among his own kin, and in his own house.

---

<sup>0</sup> Neither of the Evangelists expressly mentions the death of Joseph; yet from all four of them it may indirectly be inferred to have happened while Jesus was yet alive. Comp. Luke viii. 19, John ii. 12, and xix. 25-27. Such harmony as this could not have been the effect of concert. See BLUNT'S {FNS Veracity, &c. sect. i. 7.

5 And he could there  
do mighty work, save  
that he laid his hands  
upon a few sick folk,  
and healed *them*.  
58 And he did not many mighty works  
there, because of their  
unbelief.

6 And he marvelled be-  
cause of their unbelief.

[214]

§ 62. A third circuit in Galilee. The Twelve  
instructed and sent forth. *Galilee*.

Matthew.

CH. IX. 35-38. CH. X.  
1, 5-42.

CH. XI. 1.

35 And Jesus went  
about all the cities and  
villages, teaching in  
their synagogues, and  
preaching the gospel of  
the kingdom, and heal-  
ing every sickness, and  
every disease among  
the people.

Mark.

CH. VI. 6-13.

36 But when he saw the multitudes, he was moved with compassion on them, because they fainted, and were scattered abroad as sheep having no shepherd.

37 Then saith he unto his disciples, The harvest truly *is* plenteous, but the labourers *are* few.

38 Pray ye therefore the Lord of the harvest, that he will send forth labourers into his harvest.

#### CHAP. X.

And when he had called unto *him* his twelve disciples, he gave them power *against* unclean spirits, to cast them out, and to heal all manner of sickness, and all manner of disease.

7 And he called *unto him* the twelve, and began to send them forth by two and two, and gave them power over unclean spirits;

5 These twelve Jesus sent forth, and commanded them, saying, Go not into the way of the Gentiles, and into *any* city of the Samaritans, enter ye not.

6 But go rather to the lost sheep of the house of Israel.

7 And as ye go, preach, saying, The kingdom of heaven is at hand.

8 Heal the sick, cleanse the lepers, raise the dead, cast out devils: freely ye have received, freely give.

9 Provide neither gold, nor silver, nor brass in your purses;

10 Nor scrip for *your* journey, neither two coats, neither shoes,<sup>169</sup> nor yet staves: (for the workman is worthy of his meat.)

8 And commanded them that they should take nothing for *their* journey, save a staff only; no scrip, no bread, no money in *their* purse:

9 But *be* shod with sandals; and not put on two coats.

10 And he said unto them, In what place soever ye enter into a house, there abide till ye depart from that place.

---

<sup>0</sup> Commentators have noted two inconsistent circumstances in this section. In Matthew, *shoes* are forbidden; in Mark the Apostles are commanded to be shod with *sandals*. But the true solution seems to be this, that the Apostles should not

11 And into whatever city or town ye shall enter, inquire who in it is worthy; and there abide till ye go thence.

12 And when ye come into a house, salute it.

13 And if the house be worthy, let your peace come upon it: but if it be not worthy, let your peace return to you.

14 And whosoever shall not receive you, nor hear your words, when ye depart out of that house, or city, shake off the dust of your feet.

11 And whosoever shall not receive you, nor hear you, when ye depart thence, shake off the dust under your feet, for a testimony against them. Verify, I say unto you, it shall be more tolerable for Sodom and Gomorrah in the day of judgment, then for that city.

15 Verily, I say unto you, It shall be more tolerable for the land of Sodom and Gomorrah, in the day of judgment, than for that city.

---

furnish themselves with spare garments, and should wear the simplest covering for their feet. "Non vult ullis rebus studiose comparatis onerari." Beza. See Newcome, in loc.



16 Behold, I send you  
forth as sheep in the  
midst of wolves: be ye  
therefore wise as ser-  
pents, and harmless as  
doves.

17 But beware of men:  
for they will deliver  
you up to the coun-  
cils, and they will  
scourge you in their  
synagogues.<sup>170</sup>

18 And ye shall be  
brought before gover-  
nors and kings for my  
sake, for a testimony  
against them and the  
Gentiles.

19 But when they de-  
liver you up, take no  
thought how or what  
ye shall speak, for it  
shall be given you in  
that same hour what ye  
shall speak.

---

<sup>0</sup> The synagogues were used, not only for divine service, but for holding courts of justice, especially for ecclesiastical affairs; and the lesser punishments, such as whipping, were inflicted in the synagogue, immediately after sentence, as the burning in the hand was formerly inflicted in England, upon praying the benefit of clergy. JENNINGS{FNS, Ant. p. 376. Such an allusion as this would not be likely to have been found in a work of fiction.

20 For it is not ye that speak, but the Spirit of your Father which speaketh in you.

21 And the brother shall deliver up the brother to death, and the father the child: and the children shall rise up against *their* parents, and cause them to be put to death.

22 And ye shall be hated of all men for my name's sake: but he that endureth to the end shall be saved.

23 But when they persecute you in this city, flee ye into another: for verily I say unto you, Ye shall not have gone over the cities of Israel till the Son of man be come.

24 The disciple is not above *his* master, nor the servant above his lord.

25 It is enough for the disciple that he be as his master, and the servant as his lord: if they have called the master of the house Beelzebub, how much more *shall they call* them of his household?

26 Fear them not therefore: for there is nothing covered, that shall not be revealed; and hid, that shall not be known.

27 What I tell you in darkness, *that* speak ye in light: and what ye hear in the ear, *that* preach ye upon the house-tops.

28 And fear not them which kill the body, but are not able to kill the soul: but rather fear him which is able to destroy both soul and body in hell.

29 Are not two sparrows sold for a farthing? and one of them shall not fall on the ground without your Father.

30 But the very hairs of your head are all numbered.

31 Fear ye not therefore, ye are of more value than many sparrows.

32 Whosoever therefore shall confess me before men, him will I confess also before my Father which is in heaven.

33 But whosoever shall deny me before men, him will I also deny before my Father which is in heaven.

34 Think not that I am come to send peace on earth; I came not to send peace, but a sword.

35 For I am come  
to set a man at vari-  
ance against his fa-  
ther, and the daugh-  
ter against her mother,  
and the daughter-  
in-law against her  
mother-in-law.

36 And a man's foes  
*shall be* they of his own  
household.<sup>171</sup>

37 He that loveth fa-  
ther or mother more  
than me, is not wor-  
thy of me: and he that  
loveth son or daughter  
more than me, is not  
worthy of me.

38 And he that taketh  
not his cross, and fol-  
loweth after me, is not  
worthy of me.

39 He that findeth his  
life shall lose it: and he  
that loseth his life for  
my sake, shall find it.

40 He that receiveth  
you, receiveth me; and  
he that receiveth me,  
receiveth him that sent  
me.

---

<sup>0</sup> Mic. vii. 6.

41 He that receiveth a prophet in the name of a prophet, shall receive a prophet's reward; and he that receiveth a righteous man in the name of a righteous man, shall receive a righteous man's reward.

42 And whosoever shall give to drink unto one of these little ones, a cup of cold *water* only, in the name of a disciple, verily, I say unto you, he shall in no wise lose his reward.

#### CH. XI.

And it came to pass when Jesus had made an end of commanding his twelve disciples, he departed thence to teach and to preach in their cities.

And he went round about the villages teaching.

12 And they went out, and preached that men should repent.

13 And they cast  
out many devils, and  
anointed with oil many  
that were sick, and  
healed them.

Luke.

CH. IX. 1-6.

Then he called his  
twelve disciples to-  
gether, and gave them  
power and authority  
over all devils, and to  
cure diseases.

2 And he sent them to  
preach the kingdom of  
God, and to heal the  
sick.

3 And he said unto  
them, Take nothing  
for *your* journey, nei-  
ther staves, nor scrip,  
neither bread, neither  
money; neither have  
two coats apiece.

4 And whatsoever  
house ye enter into,  
there abide, and thence  
depart.

5 And whosoever will  
not receive you, when  
ye go out of that city,  
shake off the very dust  
from your feet for a tes-  
timony against them.

6 And they departed,  
and went through the  
towns, preaching the  
gospel, and healing ev-  
erywhere.

[220]

§ 63. Herod holds Jesus to be John the Baptist, whom  
he had just before beheaded. *Galilee? Perea.*

Matthew.

CH. XIV. 1, 2, 6-12.

At that time Herod the  
tetrarch heard of the  
fame of Jesus,



2 And said unto his ser- This is John the Baptist; he is risen from the dead; and therefore  
vants,<sup>172</sup>

6 But when Herod's the daughter of Herodias danced before them, and pleased H  
birth-day was kept,<sup>173</sup>

---

<sup>0</sup> Matth. xiv. 2, *unto his servants*. Matthew alone mentions, and without any apparent reason for such minuteness, that Herod addressed his remark to his *servants* it. Luke, in the parallel passage, says he *heard of all that was done by him*; but by referring to Luke viii. 3, and to Acts xiii. 1, we find that Christ had followers from among the household of the very prince, with whom Herod was likely to converse on a subject in which they were better informed than himself. BLUNT{FNS, Veracity, &c., sec. i. 8.

<sup>0</sup> Here is a very natural passing allusion to what we learn from Josephus was a settled custom in the family of Herod; namely, the making of a feast on his birth-day, at which the officers of his government were guests. JOSEPHUS{FNS, Ant. xix. vii. § 1.

7 Whereupon he  
promised with an oath  
to give her whatsoever  
she would ask.

8 And she, being be-  
fore instructed of her  
mother, said, Give  
me here John Baptist's  
head in a charger.

9 And the king was sorry: nevertheless for the oath's sake, and them which sat with him at meat, he commanded *it* to be given *her*.

10 And he sent, and beheaded John in the prison.

11 And his head was brought in a charger, and given to the damsel: and she brought *it* to her mother.

12 And his disciples came, and took up the body, and buried it, and went and told Jesus.

Luke.

CH. IX. 7-9.

7 Now Herod the tetrarch heard of all that was done by him: and he was perplexed, because that it was said of some, that John was risen from the dead;

8 And of some, that Elias had appeared; and of others, that one of the old prophets was risen again.

9 And Herod said, John have I beheaded; but who is this of whom I hear such things? And he desired to see him.

[222]

§ 64. The Twelve return. Jesus retires with them across the lake. Five thousand are fed. *Capernaum. N. E. coast of the lake.*

Matthew.  
CH. XIV. 13-21.

Mark.  
CH. VI. 30-44.

13 When Jesus heard *of it*, he departed thence by ship into a desert place apart: and when the people had heard *thereof*, they followed him on foot out of the cities.

14 And Jesus went forth, and saw a great multitude, and was moved with compassion toward them, and he healed their sick.

30 And the apostles gathered themselves together unto Jesus, and told him all things, both what they had done, and what they had taught.

31 And he said unto them, Come ye yourselves apart into a desert place, and rest awhile: for there were many coming and going,<sup>174</sup> and they had no leisure so much as to eat.

32 And they departed into a desert place by ship privately.

33 And the people saw them departing, and many knew him, and ran afoot thither out of all cities, and outwent them, and came together unto him.

---

<sup>0</sup> Mark incidentally mentions the great multitude coming and going, and the purpose of Jesus to withdraw *awhile*. The occasion of this great multitude of *travellers* is stated in the like incidental manner by John, vi. 4, that the *passover* was nigh at hand; and hence, if Jesus withdrew awhile, the throng would be drawn off towards Jerusalem. These undesigned coincidences tend to verify both the narratives. Blunt, Veracity, &c. sect. i. 13.

34 And Jesus, when he came out, saw much people, and was moved with compassion toward them, because they were as sheep not having a shepherd: and he began to teach them many things.

15 And when it was evening his disciples came to him, saying, This is a desert place, and the time is now past; send the multitude away, that they may go into the villages, and buy themselves victuals.

35 And when the day was now far spent, his disciples came unto him, and said, This is a desert place, and now the time *is* far passed:

36 Send them away, that they may go into the country round about, and into the villages, and buy themselves bread: for they have nothing to eat.

16 But Jesus said unto them, They need not depart; give ye them to eat.

17 And they say unto him, We have here but five loaves, and two fishes.

18 He said, Bring them hither to me.

19 And he commanded the multitude to sit down on the grass, and took the five loaves, and the two fishes, and looking up to heaven, he blessed, and brake, and gave the loaves to *his* disciples, and the disciples to the multitude.

37 He answered and said unto them, Give ye them to eat. And they say unto him, Shall we go and buy two hundred penny-worth of bread, and give them to eat?

38 He saith unto them, How many loaves have ye? go and see. And when they knew, they say, Five, and two fishes.

39 And he commanded them to make all sit down by companies upon the green grass.

40 And they sat down in ranks, by hundreds, and by fifties.

41 And when he had taken the five loaves, and the two fishes, he looked up to heaven, and blessed, and brake the loaves, and gave *them* to his disciples to set before them; and the two fishes divided he among them all.

20 And they did all eat, and were filled: and they took up of the fragments that remained twelve baskets full.

42 And they did all eat, and were filled.

43 And they took up twelve baskets full of the fragments, and of the fishes.

21 And they that had eaten were about five thousand men, besides women and children.

44 And they that did eat of the loaves, were about five thousand men.

Luke.  
CH. IX. 10-17.

John.  
CH. VI. 1-14.



10 And the apostles, when they were returned, told him all that they had done. And he took them, and went aside privately into a desert place, belonging to the city called Bethsaida.

11 And the people, when they knew *it*, followed him: and he received them, and spake unto them of the kingdom of God, and healed them that had need of healing.

After these things Jesus went over the sea of Galilee, which is *the sea* of Tiberias.

2 And a great multitude followed him, because they saw his miracles which he did on them that were diseased.

3 And Jesus went up into a mountain, and there he sat with his disciples.

4 And the passover, a feast of the Jews, was nigh.

12 And when the day began to wear away, then came the twelve, and said unto him, Send the multitude away, that they may go into the towns and country round about, and lodge, and get victuals: for we are here in a desert place.

5 When Jesus then lifted up his eyes, and saw a great company come unto him, he saith unto Philip,<sup>175</sup> Whence shall we buy bread that these may eat?

6 (And this he said to prove him: for he himself knew what he would do.)

7 Philip answered him, Two hundred penny-worth of bread is not sufficient for them, that every one of them may take a little.

---

<sup>0</sup> Why Jesus addressed this question to Philip, and why John mentioned so unimportant a fact, is not here explained. Nor does Luke indicate any reason for his own statement of the place where this miracle was wrought, namely, near Bethsaida. But John, in another place, (ch. i. 44,) with apparently as little reason, gratuitously states that Philip was of Bethsaida; and this fact renders both the others intelligible and significant. Jesus, intending to furnish bread for the multitude by a miracle, first asked Philip, who belonged to the city and was perfectly acquainted with the neighbourhood, whether bread could be procured there. His answer amounts to saying that it was not possible. These slight circumstances, thus collected together, constitute very cogent evidence of the veracity of the narrative, and evince the reality of the miracle itself. See Blunt, Veracity, &c. sect. i. 13.

13 But he said unto them, Give ye them to eat. And they said, We have no more but five loaves and two fishes; except we should go and buy meat for all this people.

14 (For they were in a company about five thousand men.) And he said to his disciples, Make them sit down by fifties<sup>176</sup>

8 One of his disciples, Andrew, Simon Peter's brother, saith unto him, 9 There is a lad here, which hath five barley loaves, and two small fishes: but what are they among so many?

10 And Jesus said, Make the men sit down. (Now there was much grass in the place.) So the men sat down in number about five thousand.

11 And Jesus took the loaves; and when he had given thanks, he distributed to the disciples, and the disciples to them that were set down; and likewise of the fishes, as much as they would.

---

<sup>0</sup> In Luke, Jesus commands that the people should be made to sit down by *fifties*. In Mark it is said that they sat down *by hundreds and by fifties*. Piscator, and Pearce, in a dissertation at the end of his comment on St. Paul's Epistles, say that they sat an hundred in front, and fifty deep; which very satisfactorily solves the seeming variation. NEWCOME{FNS.

15 And they did so,  
and made them all sit  
down.

16 Then he took the  
five loaves, and the  
two fishes, and look-  
ing up to heaven,  
he blessed them, and  
broke, and gave to the  
disciples to set before  
the multitude.

17 And they did eat,  
and were all filled:  
and there was taken up  
of fragments that re-  
mained to them twelve  
baskets.

12 When they were  
filled, he said unto his  
disciples, Gather up  
the fragments that re-  
main, that nothing be  
lost.

13 Therefore they  
gathered them to-  
gether, and filled  
twelve baskets with the  
fragments of the five  
barley loaves, which  
remained over and  
above unto them that  
had eaten.

14 Then those men,  
when they had seen  
the miracle that Jesus  
did, said, This is of a  
truth that Prophet that  
should come into the  
world.

[224]

§ 65. Jesus walks upon the water. *Lake of Galilee.*  
*Gennesaret.*

Matthew.  
Ch. XIV. 22-36.

Mark.  
CH. VI. 45-56.

22 And straightway Jesus constrained his disciples to get into a ship, and to go before him unto the other side, while he sent the multitudes away.

23 And when he had sent the multitudes away, he went up into a mountain apart to pray: and when the evening was come, he was there alone.

24 But the ship was now in the midst of the sea, tossed with waves: for the wind was contrary.

25 And in the fourth watch of the night Jesus went unto them, walking on the sea.

45 And straightway he constrained his disciples to get into the ship, and to go to the other side before unto Bethsaida, while he sent away the people.

46 And when he had sent them away, he departed into a mountain to pray.

47 And when even was come, the ship was in the midst of the sea, and he alone on the land.

48 And he saw them toiling in rowing; for the wind was contrary unto them: and about the fourth watch of the night he cometh unto them, walking upon the sea, and would have passed by them.

26 And when the disciples saw him walking on the sea, they were troubled, saying, It is a spirit; and they cried out for fear.

27 But straightway Jesus spake unto them, saying, Be of good cheer; it is I; be not afraid.

28 And Peter answered him and said, Lord, if it be thou, bid me come unto thee on the water.

29 And he said, Come. And when Peter was come down out of the ship, he walked on the water, to go to Jesus.

30 But when he saw the wind boisterous, he was afraid; and beginning to sink, he cried, saying, Lord, save me.

49 But when they saw him walking upon the sea, they supposed it had been a spirit, and cried out.

50 (For they all saw him, and were troubled.) And immediately he talked with them, and saith unto them, Be of good cheer: it is I; be not afraid.

51 And he went up unto them into the ship; and the wind ceased; and they were sore amazed in themselves beyond measure, and wondered.

31 And immediately  
 Jesus stretched forth  
*his* hand, and caught  
 him, and said unto him,  
 O thou of little faith,  
 wherefore didst thou  
 doubt?

32 And when they  
 were come into the  
 ship, the wind ceased.

33 Then they that were  
 in the ship came and  
 worshipped him, say-  
 ing, Of a truth thou art  
 the Son of God.

34 And when they  
 were gone over, they  
 came into the land of  
 Gennesaret.

52 For they considered  
 not *the miracle* of the  
 loaves; for their heart  
 was hardened.

53 And when they had  
 passed over, they came  
 into the land of Gen-  
 nesaret, and drew to  
 the shore.

54 And when they  
 were come out of the  
 ship, straightway they  
 knew him,

55 And ran through  
 that whole region  
 round about, and be-  
 gan to carry about in  
 beds those that were  
 sick, where they heard  
 he was.

35 And when the men of that place had knowledge of him, they sent out into all that country round about, and brought unto him all that were diseased;

56 And whithersoever he entered, into villages, or cities, or country, they laid the sick in the streets, and besought him that they might touch, if it were but the border of his garment: and as many as touched him were made whole.

36 And besought him that they might only touch the hem of his garment: and as many as touched him were made perfectly whole.

John.

CH. VI. 15-21.

When Jesus therefore perceived that they would come and take him by force, to make him a king, he departed again into a mountain himself alone.

16 And when even was *now* come, his disciples went down unto the sea,



17 And entered into a ship, and went over the sea toward Capernaum. And it was now dark, and Jesus was not come to them.

18 And the sea arose by reason of a great wind that blew.

19 So when they had rowed about five and twenty or thirty furlongs, they see Jesus walking on the sea, and drawing nigh unto the ship: and they were afraid.

20 But he saith unto them, It is I; be not afraid.

21 Then they willingly received him into the ship: and immediately the ship was at the land whither they went.

[228]

§ 66. Our Lord's discourse in the Synagogue at Capernaum. Many disciples turn back. Peter's profession of faith. *Capernaum*.

John.

CH. VI. 22-71. CH.

VII. 1.

22 The day following, when the people which stood on the other side of the sea saw that there was none other boat there, save that one whereinto his disciples were entered, and that Jesus went not with his disciples into the boat, but *that* his disciples were gone away alone;

23 (Howbeit there came other boats from Tiberias nigh unto the place where they did eat bread, after that the Lord had given thanks:)

24 When the people therefore saw that Jesus was not there, neither his disciples, they also took shipping, and came to Capernaum, seeking for Jesus.

25 And when they  
 had found him on the  
 other side of the sea,  
 they said unto him,  
 Rabbi, when camest  
 thou hither?<sup>177</sup>  
 26 Jesus answered  
 them and said, Verily,  
 verily, I say unto you,  
 Ye seek me, not be-  
 cause ye saw the mir-  
 acles, but because ye  
 did eat of the loaves,  
 and were filled.

---

<sup>0</sup> This seemingly idle inquiry becomes important as a note of veracity in the narrator, when compared with the account of Matthew. John indeed tells us, v. 18, that the wind blew a gale, but he does not state from what quarter. He also says that there were boats from Tiberias, near the place where the miracle of bread was wrought, v. 23, but this does not at all explain the inquiry of the people how Jesus came to Capernaum. But Matthew states that “the wind was contrary,” that is, west, Matth. xiv. 22. This fact, and the geographical position of the places, explains the whole. The miracle was wrought near Bethsaida, on the east side of the lake. The people saw the disciples take the only boat which was there, and depart for Capernaum, which was on the west side of the lake, and saw that Jesus was not with them. In the night it blew a tempest from the west. In the morning, the storm being over, the people crossed over to Capernaum and found Jesus already there. Well might they ask him, with astonishment, how he came thither. For though there were boats over from Tiberias, which was also on the west side of the lake, yet he could not have returned in one of them, for the wind would not have permitted them to cross the lake. BLUNT{FNS, Veracity of the Gospels, sect. i. 17.

27 Labour not for the meat which perisheth, but for that meat which endureth unto everlasting life, which the Son of man shall give unto you: for him hath God the Father sealed.

28 Then said they unto him, What shall we do, that we might work the works of God?

29 Jesus answered and said unto them, This is the work of God, that ye believe on him whom he hath sent.

30 They said therefore unto him, What sign shewest thou then, that we may see, and believe thee? what dost thou work?

31 Our fathers did eat manna in the desert; as it is written,<sup>178</sup> He gave them bread from heaven to eat.

---

<sup>0</sup> Ps. lxxviii. 24. Ex. xvi. 15.

32 Then Jesus said unto them, Verily, verily, I say unto you, Moses gave you not that bread from heaven; but my Father giveth you the true bread from heaven.

33 For the bread of God is he which cometh down from heaven, and giveth life unto the world.

34 Then said they unto him, Lord, evermore give us this bread.

35 And Jesus said unto them, I am the bread of life: he that cometh to me, shall never hunger; and he that believeth on me, shall never thirst.

36 But I said unto you, That ye also have seen me, and believe not.

37 All that the Father giveth me, shall come to me; and him that cometh to me, I will in no wise cast out.

38 For I came down from heaven, not to do mine own will, but the will of him that sent me.

39 And this is the Father's will which hath sent me, that of all which he hath given me, I should lose nothing, but should raise it up again at the last day.

40 And this is the will of him that sent me, that every one which seeth the Son, and believeth on him, may have everlasting life: and I will raise him up at the last day.

41 The Jews then murmured at him, because he said, I am the bread which came down from heaven.

42 And they said, Is not this Jesus the son of Joseph, whose father and mother we know? how is it then that he saith, I came down from heaven?

43 Jesus therefore answered and said unto them, Murmur not among yourselves.

44 No man can come to me, except the Father which hath sent me draw him: and I will raise him up at the last day.

45 It is written in the prophets,<sup>179</sup> And they shall be all taught of God. Every man therefore that hath heard, and hath learned of the Father, cometh unto me.

46 Not that any man hath seen the Father, save he which is of God, he hath seen the Father.

47 Verily, verily, I say unto you, He that believeth on me hath everlasting life.

48 I am that bread of life.<sup>180</sup>

---

<sup>0</sup> Isa. liv. 13. Jer. xxxi. 33, seq.

<sup>0</sup> Ex. xvi. 15.

49 Your fathers did eat manna in the wilderness, and are dead.

50 This is the bread which cometh down from heaven, that a man may eat thereof, and not die.

51 I am the living bread which came down from heaven: if any man eat of this bread, he shall live for ever: and the bread that I will give is my flesh, which I will give for the life of the world.

52 The Jews therefore strove among themselves, saying, How can this man give us *his* flesh to eat?

53 Then Jesus said unto them, Verily, verily, I say unto you, Except ye eat the flesh of the Son of man, and drink his blood, ye have no life in you.



54 Whoso eateth my  
flesh, and drinketh my  
blood, hath eternal life;  
and I will raise him up  
at the last day.

55 For my flesh is meat  
indeed, and my blood  
is drink indeed.

56 He that eateth my  
flesh, and drinketh my  
blood, dwelleth in me,  
and I in him.

57 As the living Father  
hath sent me, and I live  
by the Father: so he  
that eateth me, even he  
shall live by me.

58 This is that bread  
which came down  
from heaven: not as  
your fathers did eat  
manna, and are dead:  
he that eateth of this  
bread shall live for  
ever.

59 These things said he  
in the synagogue, as he  
taught in Capernaum.

60 Many therefore of  
his disciples, when  
they had heard *this*,  
said, This is a hard say-  
ing; who can hear it?

61 When Jesus knew in himself that his disciples murmured at it, he said unto them, Doth this offend you?

62 *What* and if ye shall see the Son of man ascend up where he was before?

63 It is the Spirit that quickeneth; the flesh profiteth nothing: the words that I speak unto you, *they* are spirit, and *they* are life.

64 But there are some of you that believe not. For Jesus knew from the beginning who they were that believe not, and who should betray him.

65 And he said, Therefore said I unto you, that no man can come unto me, except it were given unto him of my Father.

66 From that *time*  
 many of his disci-  
 ples went back,<sup>181</sup> and  
 walked no more with  
 him.

67 Then said Jesus  
 unto the twelve, Will  
 ye also go away?

68 Then Simon Peter  
 answered him, Lord,  
 to whom shall we go?  
 thou hast the words of  
 eternal life.

69 And we believe, and  
 are sure that thou art  
 that Christ, the Son of  
 the living God.

70 Jesus answered  
 them, Have not I cho-  
 sen you twelve, and  
 one of you is a  
 devil?<sup>182</sup>

---

<sup>0</sup> The truth of the Gospels has been argued from the *confessions* they contain. On this verse Paley asks, "Was it the part of a writer, who dealt in suppression and disguise, to put down *this* anecdote?" *Evid.* 255.

<sup>0</sup> The admission of Judas Iscariot into the domestic and confidential circle of our Lord, was the result of profound and even of divine wisdom. It showed that Jesus was willing to throw open his most secret actions, discourses, and views not merely to his devoted friends, but to a sagacious and hardened enemy. If Judas had ever discovered the least fault in the character or conduct of Jesus, he certainly would have disclosed it;—he would not have publicly confessed that he had betrayed innocent blood, and have sunk down in insupportable anguish and despair. See TAPPIN'S {FNS Lect. on Eccl. Hist. ii.

71 He spake of Judas  
Iscariot *the son* of Si-  
mon: for he it was that  
should betray him, be-  
ing one of the twelve.

CH. VII.

After these things Je-  
sus walked in Galilee:  
for he would not walk  
in Jewry, because the  
Jews sought to kill  
him.

## Part V. From Our Lord's Third Passover, Until His Final Departure From Galilee, At The Festival Of Tabernacles.

TIME. *Six months.*

[238]

§ 67. Our Lord justifies his Disciples for eating with  
unwashen hands. Pharisaic traditions. *Capernaum.*

Matthew.

CH. XV. 1-20.

Then came to Jesus scribes and Pharisees, which were of Jerusalem, saying,

2 Why do thy disciples transgress the tradition of the elders?<sup>183</sup> for they wash not their hands when they eat bread.

Mark.

CH. VII. 1-23.

Then came together unto him the Pharisees, and certain of the scribes, which came from Jerusalem.

2 And when they saw some of his disciples eat bread with defiled (that is to say, with unwashen) hands, they found fault.

---

<sup>0</sup> The traditions of the elders were unwritten ordinances of indefinite antiquity, the principal of which, as the Pharisees alleged, were delivered to Moses in the mount, and all of which were transmitted through the High Priests and Prophets, down to the members of the great Sanhedrim in their own times; and from these, as the Jews say, they were handed down to Gamaliel, and ultimately to Rabbi Jehudah, by whom they were digested and committed to writing, toward the close of the second century. This collection is termed the Mishna; and in many cases it is esteemed among the Jews as of higher authority than the law itself. In like manner, there are said to be many Christians, at the present day, who receive ancient traditionary usages and opinions as authoritative

3 For the Pharisees,  
and all the Jews, except  
they wash *their* hands  
oft, eat not, holding the  
tradition of the elders.

---

exponents of Christian doctrine. They say that the preached gospel was before the written gospel; and that the testimony of those who heard it is entitled to equal credit with the written evidence of the Evangelists; especially as the latter is but a brief record, while the oral preaching was a more full and copious announcement of the glad tidings.

These traditions, both of the Jewish and the Christian Church, seem to stand *in pari ratione*, the arguments in favour of the admissibility and effect of the one, applying with the same force, in favour of the other. All these arguments may be resolved into two grounds, namely, contemporaneous practice subsequently and uniformly continued; and contemporaneous declarations, as part of the *res gestæ*, faithfully transmitted to succeeding times. It is alleged that those to whom the law of God was first announced, best knew its precise import and meaning, and that therefore their interpretation and practice, coming down concurrently with the law itself, is equally obligatory.

But this argument assumes what cannot be admitted; for it still remains to be shown that those who first heard the law, when orally announced, had any better means of understanding it than those to whom the same words were afterwards read. The Ten Commandments were spoken in the hearing of Aaron and all the congregation of Israel; immediately after which they made and worshipped a golden calf. Surely this will not be adduced as a valid contemporaneous exposition of the second commandment. The error of the argument lies in the

---

nature of the subject. The human doctrine of contemporaneous exposition is applicable only to human laws and the transactions of men, as equals, and not to the laws of God. Among men, when *their own* language is doubtful and ambiguous, *their own* practice is admissible, to expound it; because both the language and the practice are but the outward and visible signs of the meaning and intention of one and the same mind and will, which inward meaning and intention is the thing sought after. It is on the same ground, that, where a statute, capable of divers interpretations, has uniformly been acted upon in a certain way, this is held a sufficient exposition of its true intent. In both cases it is the conduct of *the parties* themselves which is admitted to interpret their own language; expressed, in cases of contract, by themselves in person, and in statutes, through the medium of the legislators, who were their agents and representatives; and in both cases, it is merely the interpretation of what a man says, by what he does. But this rule has never been applied, in the law, to the language of any other person than the party himself; never, to the command or direction of his superior or employer. And even the language of the *parties*, when it is contained in a sealed instrument, is at this day held incapable of being expounded by their actions, on account of the greater solemnity of the instrument. See *Baynham v. Guy's Hospital*, 3 Vesey's Rep. 295. *Eaton v. Lyon*, *Ibid.* 690, 694. The practice of men, therefore, can be no just exponent of the law of God. If they have mistaken the meaning of his command from

---

the beginning, the act of contravention remains a sin in the last transgressor, as well as the first; for the word of God cannot be changed or affected by the gloss of human interpretation.

The other ground, namely, that the testimony of those who heard Jesus and his apostles preach, is of equal authority with the Scriptures, being contemporaneous declarations, and parts of the *res gestae*, and therefore admissible in aid of the exposition of the written word, is equally inconsistent with the sound and settled rules of law respecting writings. When a party has deliberately committed his intention and meaning to writing, the law regards the writing as the sole repository of his mind and intention, and does not admit any oral testimony to alter, add to, or otherwise affect it. The reasons for this rule are two; first, because the writing is the more solemn act, by the party himself, designed to prevent mistake, and to remain as the perpetual memorial of his intention; and, secondly, because of the great uncertainty and weakness of any secondary evidence. For no one can tell whether the by-standers heard precisely what was said, nor whether they heard it all, nor whether they continued to remember it with accuracy until the time when they wrote it down, or communicated it to those who wrote it; to say nothing of the danger of their mixing up the language of the speaker with what was said by others, or with their own favourite theories. And where the witnesses were not the original auditors of what was said, no one knows how much the truth may



---

have suffered from the many channels through which it has passed, in coming from the first speaker to the last writer or witness. On all these accounts, the law rejects oral testimony of what the parties said, in regard to anything that has already been solemnly committed to writing by the parties themselves, and rejects the secondary evidence of hearsay, when evidence of a higher degree, as, for example, a written declaration of the party, can be obtained.

Now, inasmuch as the writings of the Evangelists and Apostles were penned under the inspiration of the Holy Spirit, why should not the documentary evidence of the Gospel, thus drawn up by them, be treated with at least as much respect as other written documents? If they were inspired to write down those great truths for a perpetual memorial to after ages, then this record is the primary evidence of those truths. It is the word of God, penned by his own dictation, and sealed, as it were, with his own seal. If it were a man's word and will, thus solemnly written, no verbal or secondary evidence could be admitted, by the common law, to explain, add to, or vary it; nothing could be engrafted upon it; nor could any person be admitted to testify what he heard the party say, in regard to what was written. The courts would at once reject all such attempts, and confine themselves strictly to the writing before them, the only inquiry being as to the meaning of the language contained in that document, and not as to what the party may elsewhere have spoken. The law presumes that the writing alone is the source to which he intended that resort should

4 And *when they come* from the market, except they wash, they eat not. And many other things there be, which they have received to hold, as the washing of cups, and pots, and brazen vessels, and tables.<sup>184</sup>

5 Then the Pharisees and scribes asked him, Why walk not thy disciples according to the tradition of the elders, but eat bread with unwashen hands?

---

be had, in order to ascertain his meaning. But by calling in the fathers, with their traditions, to prove what Christ and his Apostles taught, beyond what is solemnly recorded in the Scriptures, the principle of this plain and sound rule of law is violated; resort is had to secondary evidence of the truths of our religion, when the primary evidence is already at hand; and the pure fountain is deserted for the muddy stream.

<sup>0</sup> Matthew was not only a Jew himself, but it is evident, from the whole structure of his Gospel, especially from his numerous references to the Old Testament, that he wrote for Jewish readers.—*Paley*. But the explanation here given by Mark is an additional evidence of the fact asserted by Jerome and Clement of Alexandria, that he wrote at Rome, for the benefit chiefly of the converts of that nation.

3 But he answered and said unto them, Why do ye also transgress the commandment of God by your tradition?

4 For God commanded,<sup>185</sup> saying, Honour thy father and mother: and, He that curseth father or mother, let him die the death.

5 But ye say, Whosoever shall say to *his* father or *his* mother, *It is* a gift, by whatsoever thou mightest be profited by me;

6 And honour not his father or his mother, *he shall be free*. Thus ye made the commandment of God of none effect by your tradition.

6 He answered and said unto them, Well hath Esaias prophesied of you hypocrites, as it is written, This people honoureth me with *their* lips, but their heart is far from me.

7 Howbeit, in vain do they worship me, teaching *for* doctrines the commandments of men.

8 For, laying aside the commandment of God, ye hold the tradition of men, *as* the washing of pots and cups: and many other such like things ye do.

9 And he said unto them, Full well ye reject the commandment of God, that ye may keep your own tradition.

---

<sup>0</sup> Ex. xxii 12. Ex. xxi. 17. Deut. v. 16.

7 *Ye* hypocrites, well  
did Esaias prophesy of  
you,<sup>186</sup> saying,

8 This people draweth  
nigh unto me with their  
mouth, and honoureth  
me with *their* lips; but  
their heart is far from  
me.

9 But in vain they do  
worship me, teaching  
*for* doctrines the com-  
mandments of men.

10 And he called the  
multitude, and said  
unto them, Hear, and  
understand:

10 For Moses said,  
Honour thy father  
and thy mother; and,  
Whoso curseth father  
or mother, let him die  
the death.

11 But ye say, If a  
man shall say to his  
father or mother, *It is*  
Corban, that is to say,  
a gift, by whatsoever  
thou mightest be prof-  
ited by me; *he shall be*  
*free*.

12 And ye suffer him  
no more to do aught  
for his father or his  
mother;

13 Making the word  
of God of none effect  
through your tradition,  
which ye have deliv-  
ered: and many such  
like things do ye.

14 And when he had  
called all the people  
*unto him*, he said unto  
them, Harken unto  
me every one *of you*,  
and understand.

---

<sup>0</sup> Is. xxix. 13.

11 Not that which goeth into the mouth defileth a man; but that which cometh out of the mouth, this defileth a man.

12 Then came his disciples, and said unto him, Knowest thou that the Pharisees were offended after they heard this saying?

13 But he answered and said, Every plant, which my heavenly Father hath not planted, shall be rooted up.

14 Let them alone: they be blind leaders of the blind. And if the blind lead the blind, both shall fall into the ditch.

15 Then answered Peter and said unto him, Declare unto us this parable.

15 There is nothing from without a man, that entering into him, can defile him: but the things which come out of him, those are they that defile the man.

16 If any man have ears to hear, let him hear.

17 And when he was entered into the house from the people, his disciples asked him concerning the parable.

16 And Jesus said, Are ye also yet without understanding?

18 And he saith unto them, Are ye so without understanding also? Do ye not perceive, that whatsoever thing from without entereth into the man, *it* cannot defile him:

17 Do not ye yet understand, that whatsoever entereth in at the mouth goeth into the belly, and is cast out into the draught?

18 But those things which proceed out of the mouth come forth from the heart; and they defile the man.

19 Because it entereth not into his heart, but into the belly, and goeth out into the draught, purging all meats?

19 For out of the heart proceed evil thoughts, murders, adulteries, fornications, thefts, false witness, blasphemies:

20 And he said, That which cometh heart of the man, that defileth the man.

20 These *are the things* which defile a man: but to eat with unwashen hands defileth not a man.

21 For from within, out of the heart of men, proceed evil thoughts, adulteries, fornications, murders,

22 Thefts, covetousness, wickedness, deceit, lasciviousness, an evil eye, blasphemy, pride, foolishness;

23 All these evil things come from within, and defile the man.

[242]

§ 68. The daughter of a Syrophenician woman is healed. *Region of Tyre and Sidon.*

Matthew.

CH. XV. 21-28.

21 Then Jesus went thence, and departed into the coasts of Tyre and Sidon.

22 And behold, a woman of Canaan came out of the same coasts, and cried unto him, saying, Have mercy on me, O Lord, *thou* son of David; my daughter is grievously vexed with a devil.

Mark.

CH. VII. 24-30.

24 And from thence he arose, and went into the borders of Tyre and Sidon, and entered into a house, and would have no man know *it*: but he could not be hid.

25 For a *certain* woman, whose young daughter had an unclean spirit, heard of him, and came and fell at his feet:

23 But he answered her not a word. And his disciples came and besought him, saying, Send her away; for she crieth after us.	26 (The woman was a Greek, a Syropheni- cian <sup>187</sup> , Obs. on our Lord. p. 165. Bp. Horsley's Sermons on this subject, Ser- mon xxxvii. and xxxviii. p. 444-464.
--	---

by nation,) and she besought him that he would cast forth the devil out of her daughter. 24 But he answered and said, I am not sent but unto the lost sheep of the house of Israel. 27 But Jesus said unto her, Let the children first be filled: for it is not meet to take the children's bread, and to cast it unto the dogs. 25 Then came she and worshipped him, saying, Lord, help me. 26 But he answered and said, It is not meet to take the children's bread and to cast it to dogs. 28 And she answered and said unto him, Yes, Lord: yet the dogs under the table eat of the children's crumbs. 27 And she said, Truth, Lord: yet the dogs eat of the crumbs which fall from their master's table. 29 And he said unto her, For this saying, go thy way; the devil is gone out of thy daughter. 28 Then Jesus answered and said unto her, O woman, great is thy faith: be it unto thee even as thou wilt. And her daughter was made whole from that very hour. 30 And when she was come to her house, she found the devil gone out, and her daughter laid upon the bed.

[244]

---

<sup>0</sup> Mark designates the woman by the country where she dwelt; Matthew calls her a woman of Canaan, because of the people to whom she belonged. Thus they do not contradict each other. The treatment of this woman by our Lord has been the subject of remark, as evasive and insincere. But it was far otherwise. He had a twofold object; to call the attention of his disciples to the fact of her being a foreigner, in order to show them that his ministry, though primarily and chiefly to the Jews, was in truth designed for the benefit of the Gentiles also; and to draw out, as it were, the great faith of the woman, in order to teach them the effect of faithful and persevering supplication. To attain these objects, he took the direct and most obvious method. In this instance also, as in those of the centurion, (Matth. viii. 5-13,) and of the Samaritan leper, (Luke xvii. 16-18,) he indicated that the gospel would be more readily received by the Gentiles than by the Jews. See A. CLARKE{FNS, *in loc.* NEWCOME{FNS



§ 69. A deaf and dumb man healed; also many others. Four thousand are fed. *The Decapolis.*

Matthew.

CH. XV. 29-38.

29 And Jesus departed from thence, and came nigh unto the sea of Galilee; and went up into a mountain, and sat down there.

30 And great multitudes came unto him, having with them *those that were* lame, blind, dumb, maimed, and many others, and cast them down at Jesus' feet; and he healed them:

Mark.

CH. VII. 31-37. CH. VIII. 1-9.

31 And again departing from the coasts of Tyre and Sidon, he came unto the sea of Galilee, through the midst of the coasts of Decapolis.

32 And they bring unto him one that was deaf, and had an impediment in his speech; and they beseech him to put his hand upon him.

33 And he took him aside from the multitude, and put his fingers into his ears, and he spit, and touched his tongue:

34 And looking up to heaven, he sighed, and saith unto him, Ephphatha, that is, Be opened.

35 And straightway his ears were opened, and the string of his tongue was loosed, and he spake plain.

36 And he charged them that they should tell no man: but the more he charged them, so much the more a great deal they published *it*;

31 Insomuch that the multitude wondered, when they saw the dumb to speak, the maimed to be whole, the lame to walk, and the blind to see: and they glorified the God of Israel.

37 And were beyond measure astonished, saying, He hath done all things well; he maketh both the deaf to hear, and the dumb to speak.

#### CH. VIII.

32 Then Jesus called his disciples *unto him*, and said, I have compassion on the multitude, because they continue with me now three days, and have nothing to eat: and I will not send them away fasting, lest they faint in the way.

In those days the multitude being very great, and having nothing to eat, Jesus called his disciples *unto him*, and saith unto them,

2 I have compassion on the multitude, because they have now been with me three days, and have nothing to eat:

3 And if I send them away fasting to their own houses, they will faint by the way: for divers of them came from far.

33 And his disciples say unto him, Whence should we have so much bread in the wilderness, as to fill so great a multitude?

4 And his disciples answered him, From whence can a man satisfy these *men* with bread here in the wilderness?

34 And Jesus saith unto them, How many loaves have ye? And they said, Seven, and a few little fishes.

5 And he asked them, How many loaves have ye? And they said, Seven.

35 And he commanded the multitude to sit down on the ground.

6 And he commanded the people to sit down on the ground: and he took the seven loaves, and gave thanks, and brake, and gave to his disciples to set before *them*; and they did set *them* before the people.

- |   |  |
|---|--|
| <p>36 And he took the seven loaves and the fishes, and gave thanks, and brake <i>them</i>, and gave to his disciples, and the disciples to the multitude.</p> <p>37 And they did all eat, and were filled: and they took up of the broken <i>meat</i> that was left seven baskets full.</p> <p>38 And they that did eat were four thousand men, besides women and children.</p> | <p>7 And they had a few small fishes: and he blessed, and commanded to set them also before <i>them</i>.</p> <p>8 So they did eat, and were filled: and they took up of the broken <i>meat</i> that was left, seven baskets.</p> <p>9 And they that had eaten were about four thousand: and he sent them away.</p> |
|---|--|

[246]

§ 70. The Pharisees and Sadducees again require a sign. *Near Magdala.*

- |  |  |
|--|--|
| <p>Matthew.<br/>CH. XV. 39. CH. XVI.<br/>1-4.<br/>39 And he sent away the multitude, and took ship, and came into the coasts of Magdala.<sup>188</sup></p> | <p>Mark.<br/>CH. VIII. 10-12.<br/>10 And straightway he entered into a ship with his disciples, and came into the parts of Dalmanutha.</p> |
|--|--|

---

<sup>0</sup> Cellarius and Lightfoot think that Dalmanutha and Magdala were neighbouring towns. See Calmet, voc. Dalmanutha. It is probable that Dalmanutha

The Pharisees also with the Sadducees came, and, tempting, desired him that he would shew them a sign from heaven.

2 He answered and said unto them, When it is evening, ye say, *It will be* fair weather: for the sky is red.

3 And in the morning, *It will be* foul weather to-day: for the sky is red and lowering. O ye hypocrites, ye can discern the face of the sky; but can ye not discern the signs of the times?

4 A wicked and adulterous generation seeketh after a sign; and there shall no sign be given unto it, but the sign of the prophet Jonas.

11 And the Pharisees came forth, and began to question with him, seeking of him a sign from heaven, tempting him.

12 And he sighed deeply in his spirit, and saith, Why doth this generation seek after a sign? Verily I say unto you, There shall no sign be given unto this generation.

[248]

---

and Magdala were in Gaulanitis, towards the south-east part of the lake. See Matth. xv. 21; Mark vii. 24. NEWCOME{FNS.

§ 71. The disciples cautioned against the leaven of the Pharisees, &c. *N. E. coast of the lake of Galilee.*

Matthew.

CH. XVI. 4-12.

4 And he left them, and departed.

5 And when his disciples were come to the other side, they had forgotten to take bread.

6 Then Jesus said unto them, Take heed and beware of the leaven of the Pharisees and of the Sadducees.

7 And they reasoned among themselves, saying, *It is* because we have taken no bread.

8 *Which* when Jesus perceived, he said unto them, O ye of little faith, why reason ye among yourselves, because ye have brought no bread?

Mark.

CH. VIII. 13-21.

13 And he left them, and entering into the ship again, departed to the other side.

14 Now *the disciples* had forgotten to take bread, neither had they in the ship with them more than one loaf.

15 And he charged them, saying, Take heed, beware of the leaven of the Pharisees, and *of* the leaven of Herod.

16 And they reasoned among themselves, saying, *It is* because we have no bread.

17 And when Jesus knew *it*, he saith unto them, Why reason ye, because ye have no bread? perceive ye not yet, neither understand? have ye your heart yet hardened?

- 18 Having eyes, see ye not? and having ears, hear ye not? and do ye not remember?
- 9 Do ye not yet understand, neither remember the five loaves of the five thousand, and how many baskets ye took up?
- 10 Neither the seven loaves of the four thousand, and how many baskets ye took up?
- 11 How is it that ye do not understand that I spake *it* not to you concerning bread, that ye should beware of the leaven of the Pharisees and of the Sadducees?
- 19 When I brake the five loaves among five thousand, how many baskets full of fragments took ye up? They say unto him, Twelve.
- 20 And when the seven among four thousand, how many baskets full of fragments took ye up? And they said, Seven.<sup>189</sup>
- 21 And he said unto them, How is it that ye do not understand?

---

<sup>0</sup> Our Lord's words, Matth. xvi. 8, 10, and Mark viii. 17, 20, are the same in substance, though differently modified. The evangelists are not scrupulous in adhering to the precise words used by Christ. They often record them in a general manner, non numerantes, sed tanquam appendentes; regarding their purport, and not superstitiously detailing them. However, in this place, after uttering what Matthew relates, Jesus may have asked the questions recorded by Mark. NEWCOME.{FNS

12 Then understood  
they how that he bade  
*them* not beware of the  
leaven of bread, but  
of the doctrine of the  
Pharisees and of the  
Sadducees.

[250]

§ 72. A blind man healed. *Bethsaida. (Julias.)*

Mark.

CH. VIII. 22-26.

22 And he cometh to  
Bethsaida; and they  
bring a blind man unto  
him, and besought him  
to touch him.

23 And he took the  
blind man by the hand,  
and led him out of the  
town;<sup>190</sup> and when he  
had spit on his eyes,  
and put his hands upon  
him, he asked him if he  
saw aught.

---

<sup>0</sup> The notice of this circumstance affords a proof of the veracity of the evangelist; for he barely states a fact having no apparent connexion with any other in his narrative. The reason of it is found in facts stated by the other evangelists. The people of Bethsaida had already witnessed the miracles of our Lord, but these only served to increase their rage against him; and they were therefore abandoned to the consequences of their of their unbelief. Matth. xi. 21.



24 And he looked up,  
and said, I see men as  
trees walking.

25 After that, he put  
*his* hands again upon  
his eyes, and made him  
look up: and he was re-  
stored, and saw every  
man clearly.

26 And he sent him  
away to his house, say-  
ing, Neither go into the  
town, nor tell *it* to any  
in the town.

§ 73. Peter and the others again profess their faith in  
Christ. *Region of Cesarea Philippi.*

Matthew.

CH. XVI. 13-20.

13 When Jesus came  
into the coasts of  
Cesarea Philippi, he  
asked his disciples,  
saying, Whom do men  
say that I, the Son of  
man, am?

Mark.

CH. VIII. 27-30.

27 And Jesus went out,  
and his disciples, into  
the towns of Cesarea  
Philippi: and by the  
way he asked his disci-  
ples, saying unto them,  
Whom do men say that  
I am?

14 And they said,  
Some *say that thou*  
*art* John the Baptist:  
some, Elias; and oth-  
ers, Jeremias, or one of  
the prophets.

15 He saith unto them,  
But whom say ye that  
I am?

16 And Simon Pe-  
ter answered and said,  
Thou art the Christ, the  
Son of the living God.

17 And Jesus answered  
and said unto him,  
Blessed art thou, Si-  
mon Bar-jona: for  
flesh and blood hath  
not revealed *it* unto  
thee, but my Father  
which is in heaven.

18 And I say also  
unto thee, That thou  
art Peter, and upon this  
rock I will build my  
church: and the gates  
of hell shall not prevail  
against it.

28 And they answered,  
John the Baptist: but  
some *say*, Elias; and  
others, One of the  
prophets.

29 And he saith unto  
them, But whom say  
ye that I am? And Pe-  
ter answereth and saith  
unto him, Thou art the  
Christ.

19 And I will give unto thee the keys of the kingdom of heaven: and whatsoever thou shalt bind on earth, shall be bound in heaven; and whatsoever thou shalt loose on earth, shall be loosed in heaven.

20 Then charged he his disciples that they should tell no man that he was Jesus the Christ.

30 And he charged them that they should tell no man of him.

Luke.

CH. IX. 18-21.

18 And it came to pass, as he was alone praying, his disciples were with him; and he asked them, saying, Whom say the people that I am?

19 They, answering, said, John the Baptist; but some *say*, Elias; and others say, That one of the old prophets is risen again.

20 He said unto them,  
But whom say ye that  
I am? Peter, answer-  
ing, said, The Christ of  
God.

[252]

§ 74. Our Lord foretells his own death and  
resurrection, and the trials of his followers. *Region of  
Cesarea Philippi.*

Matthew.  
CH. XVI. 21-28.

Mark.  
CH. VIII. 31-38. CH.  
IX. 1.

21 From that time forth  
began Jesus to shew  
unto his disciples, how  
that he must go unto  
Jerusalem, and suffer  
many things of the el-  
ders, and chief priests,  
and scribes, and be  
killed, and be raised  
again the third day.<sup>191</sup>

<sup>0</sup> The phrase *three days and three nights* is equivalent to *three days*, three natural days of twenty-four hours. Gen. i. 5; Dan. viii. 14. Comp. Gen. vii. 4. 17.

(It is a received rule among the Jews, *that a part of a day is put for the whole*; so that whatsoever is done in any part of the day, is properly said to be done that day. 1 Kings xx. 29; Esth. iv. 16. "When eight days were accomplished for the circumcision of the child," &c. Yet the day of his birth

31 And he began to teach them, that the Son of man must suffer many things, and be rejected of the elders, and *of* the chief priests, and scribes, and be killed, and after three days rise again. 22 Then Peter took him, and began to rebuke him, saying, Be it far from thee, Lord: this shall not be unto thee. 32 And he spake that saying openly And Peter took him, and began to rebuke him. 23 But he turned, and said unto Peter, Get thee behind me, Satan; thou art an offence unto me: for thou savourest not the things that be of God, but those that be of men. 33 But when he had turned about, and looked on his disciples, he rebuked Peter, saying, Get thee behind me, Satan: for thou savourest not the things that be of God, but the things that be of men. 24 Then said Jesus unto his disciples If any *man* will come after me, let him deny himself, and take up his cross, and follow me. 34 And when he had called the people *unto him*, with his disciples also, he said unto them, Whosoever will come after me, let him deny himself, and take up his cross, and follow me. 25 For whosoever will save his life, shall lose it: and whosoever will lose his life for my sake, shall find it. 35 For whosoever will save his life, shall lose it; but whosoever shall lose his life for my sake and the gospel's, the same shall save it. 26 For what is a man profited, if he shall gain the whole world, and lose his own soul? or what shall a man give in exchange for his soul? 36 For what shall it profit a man, if he shall gain the whole world, and lose his own soul? 37 Or what shall a man give in exchange for his soul? 27 For the Son of man shall come in the glory of his Father, with his angels; and then he shall reward every man according to his works. 38 Whosoever therefore shall be ashamed of me, and of my words, in this adulterous and sinful generation, of him also shall the Son

---

and of his circumcision were two of these eight days. *Whitby*, quoted by SCOTT{FNS, on Matth. xii. 40.) Grotius establishes this way of reckoning the *parts* of the first and third days for *two days*, by Aben Ezra on Lev. xii. 3.

(In proof that the phrase "*after three days*," is sometimes equivalent to "*on the third day*," compare Deut. xiv. 28 with xxvi. 12; 1 Sam. xx. 12 with v. 19; 2 Chron. x. 5 with v. 12; Matth. xxvi. 2 with xxvii. 63, 64; Luke ii. 21 with i. 59.)

St. Luke omits our Lord's sharp reproof of Peter, and the occasion of it; though he records the discourse in consequence of it. Le Clerc's 12th canon is "*Qui pauciora habet, non negat plura dicta aut facta; modo ne ulla sit exclusionis nota.*" Perhaps the disciple and companion of that apostle who had withstood Peter to his face, Gal. ii. 11, willingly made this omission, as he omits some aggravating circumstances in Peter's denial of Christ, Luke xxii. 60, though he carefully records the greatness of his sorrow, v. 62. NEWCOME{FNS.

of man be ashamed, when he cometh in the glory of his Father with the holy angels. 28 Verily I say unto you, There be some standing here, which shall not taste of death, till they see the Son of man coming in his kingdom.<sup>1</sup> And he said unto them, Verily, I say unto you, That there be some of them that stand here which shall not taste of death, till they have seen the kingdom of God come with power.

Luke.

CH. IX. 22-27.

22 Saying, The Son of man must suffer many things, and be rejected of the elders, and chief priests, and scribes, and be slain, and be raised the third day.

23 And he said to *them* all, If any *man* will come after me, let him deny himself, and take up his cross daily, and follow me.

24 For whosoever will save his life, shall lose it: but whosoever will lose his life for my sake, the same shall save it.

25 For what is a man advantaged, if he gain the whole world, and lose himself, or be cast away?

26 For whosoever shall be ashamed of me, and of my words, of him shall the Son of man be ashamed, when he shall come in his own glory, and *in his* Father's, and of the holy angels.

27 But I tell you of a truth, there be some standing here which shall not taste of death till they see the Kingdom of God.

[254]

§ 75. The Transfiguration. Our Lord's subsequent discourse. with the three disciples. *Region of Cesarea Philippi*.

Matthew.

CH. XVII. 1-13.

And after six days,<sup>192</sup> Jesus taketh Peter, James, and John his brother, and

2 And was transfigured  
before them: and his  
face did shine as the  
sun, and his raiment  
was white as the light.

3 And behold there  
appeared unto them  
Moses and Elias talk-  
ing with him.

---

<sup>0</sup> It has been shown, § 74, that “*after six days*” may signify on the sixth day. But we are not hence to conclude that the phrase has *always* such a signification. Here it means six days complete, after the discourse recorded in § 74. The eight days mentioned by St. Luke include that of Peter's reproof and of the transfiguration; which two days Matthew and Mark exclude. Macknight furnishes us with the following apposite reference to Tacitus: Hist. i. 29. Piso says, *Sextus dies agitur—ex quo—Cæsar adscitus sum*; and yet, § 48 of the same book, Tacitus speaks of Piso as *quatrduo Cæsar*.

Grotius on Matth. xvii. 1, has another solution; Quod Lucas dicit, tale est quale cum vulgò dicimus *post septimanam circiter*. Nam Judæos octo dies appellasse id quod ab uno sabbato est ad alterum apparet, Joan. 20, 26, &c. NEWCOME{FNS.



4 Then answered Peter, and said unto Jesus, Lord, it is good for us to be here: if thou wilt, let us make here three tabernacles; one for thee, and one for Moses, and one for Elias.

5 While he yet spake, behold, a bright cloud overshadowed them: and behold, a voice out of the cloud, which said, This is my beloved Son, in whom I am well pleased: hear ye him.

6 And when the disciples heard *it*, they fell on their face, and were sore afraid.

7 And Jesus came and touched them, and said, Arise, and be not afraid.

8 And when they had  
lifted up their eyes,  
they saw no man, save  
Jesus only.

9 And as they came  
down from the moun-  
tain, Jesus charged  
them, saying, Tell the  
vision to no man, until  
the Son of man be risen  
again from the dead.

10 And his disci-  
ples asked him, say-  
ing, Why then say the  
scribes, that Elias must  
first come?

11 And Jesus answered  
and said unto them,  
Elias truly shall first  
come, and restore all  
things:

12 But I say unto you,  
That Elias is come already, and they knew him not, but have done unto him whatsoever they listed: likewise shall also the Son of man suffer of them.

13 Then the disciples understood that he spake unto them of John the Baptist.

Luke.

CH. IX. 28-36.

28 And it came to pass, about an eight days after these sayings, he took Peter, and John, and James, and went up into a mountain to pray.

29 And as he prayed, the fashion of his countenance was altered, and his raiment *was* white *and* glistening.

30 And behold, there talked with him two men, which were Moses and Elias:

31 Who appeared in glory, and spake of his decease which he should accomplish at Jerusalem.

32 But Peter and they that were with him were heavy with sleep: and when they were awake, they saw his glory, and the two men that stood with him.

33 And it came to pass, as they departed from him, Peter said unto Jesus, Master, it is good for us to be here: and let us make three tabernacles; one for thee, and one for Moses, and one for Elias: not knowing what he said.

34 While he thus spake, there came a cloud, and overshadowed them: and they feared as they entered into the cloud.

35 And there came a voice out of the cloud, saying, This is my beloved Son: hear him.

36 And when the voice was past, Jesus was found alone. And they kept *it* close, and told no man<sup>193</sup> in those days any of those things which they had seen.

[256]

§ 76. The healing of a demoniac, whom the disciples could not heal. *Region of Cesarea Philippi.*

Matthew.

CH. XVII. 14-21.

14 And when they were come to the multitude, there came to him a *certain* man kneeling down to him, and saying,

15 Lord, have mercy on my son; for he is lunatic, and sore vexed, for oft-times he falleth into the fire, and oft into the water.

Mark.

CH. IX. 14-29.

14 And when he came to *his* disciples, he saw a great multitude about them, and the scribes questioning with them.

15 And straightway all the people, when they beheld him, were greatly mazed, and, running to *him*, *saluted him.*

---

<sup>0</sup> It is remarkable that Luke assigns no reason for this extraordinary silence; leaving his narrative in this place imperfect and obscure, which an impostor would not have done. It is explained by the command of Jesus, related by Matthew and Mark.

16 And I brought him to thy disciples, and they could not cure him.

16 And he asked the scribes, What question ye with them?

17 And one of the multitude answered and said, Master, I have brought unto thee my son, which hath a dumb spirit;

18 And wheresoever he taketh him, he teareth him; and he foameth and gnasheth with his teeth, and pineth away; and I spake to thy disciples that they should cast him out, and they could not.

17 Then Jesus answered and said, O faithless and perverse generation, how long shall I be with you? how long shall I suffer you? Bring him hither to me.

19 He answereth him, and saith, O faithless generation, how long shall I be with you? how long shall I suffer you? Bring him unto me.

20 And they brought him unto him: and when he saw him, straightway the spirit tare him; and he fell on the ground, and wallowed, foaming.

21 And he asked his father, How long is it ago since this came unto him? And he said, Of a child.

22 And oft-times it hath cast him into the fire, and into the waters to destroy him: but if thou canst do any thing, have compassion on us, and help us.

23 Jesus said unto him, If thou canst believe, all things are possible to him that believeth.

24 And straightway the father of the child cried out, and said with tears, Lord, I believe: help thou mine unbelief.

25 When Jesus saw that the people came running together, he rebuked the foul spirit, saying unto him, *Thou dumb and deaf spirit, I charge thee, come out of him, and enter no more into him.*

26 And *the spirit* cried, and rent him sore, and came out of him: and he was as one dead; insomuch that many said, He is dead.

18 And Jesus rebuked the devil, and he departed out of him: and the child was cured from that very hour.

19 Then came the disciples to Jesus apart, and said, Why could not we cast him out?

27 But Jesus took him by the hand, and lifted him up; and he arose.

28 And when he was come into the house, his disciples asked him privately, Why could we not cast him out?



20 And Jesus said unto them, Because of your unbelief: for verily I say unto you, if ye have faith as a grain of mustard-seed, ye shall say unto this mountain, Remove hence to yonder place; and it shall remove; and nothing shall be impossible unto you.

21 Howbeit, this kind goeth not out, but by prayer and fasting.

29 And he said unto them, This kind can come forth by nothing, but by prayer and fasting.

Luke.

CH. IX. 37-43.

37 And it came to pass, that on the next day, when they were come down from the hill, much people met him.

38 And behold, a man of the company cried out, saying, Master, I beseech thee look upon my son: for he is mine only child.

39 And lo, a spirit taketh him, and he suddenly crieth out; and it teareth him that he foameth again, and, bruising him, hardly departeth from him.

40 And I besought thy disciples to cast him out, and they could not.

41 And Jesus, answering, said, O faithless and perverse generation, how long shall I be with you, and suffer you? Bring thy son hither.

42 And as he was yet a coming, the devil threw him down, and tare *him*. And Jesus rebuked the unclean spirit, and healed the child, and delivered him again to his father.

43 And they were all amazed at the mighty power of God.

§ 77, Jesus again foretells his own death and resurrection. (See § 74.) *Galilee*.

Matthew.

CH. xvii. 22, 23.

22 And while they abode in Galilee, Jesus said unto them, The Son of man shall be betrayed into the hands of men:

23 And they shall kill him, and the third day he shall be raised again. And they were exceeding sorry.

Mark.

CH. ix. 30-32.

30 And they departed thence, and passed through Galilee; and he would not that any man should know it.

31 For he taught his disciples, and said unto them, The Son of man is delivered into the hands of men, and they shall kill him; and after that he is killed, he shall rise the third day.

32 But they understood not that saying, and were afraid to ask him.

Luke.

CH. IX. 43-45.

43 But while they wondered every one at all things which Jesus did, he said unto his disciples,

44 Let these sayings  
sink down into your  
ears: for the Son of  
man shall be delivered  
into the hands of men.  
45 But they understood  
not this saying, and  
it was hid from them,  
that they perceived it  
not: and they feared to  
ask him of that saying.

§ 78. The tribute-money miraculously provided.  
*Capernaum.*

Matthew.  
CH. XVII. 24-27.  
24 And when they  
were come to Ca-  
pernaum, they that  
received tribute-  
money,<sup>194</sup> came to  
Peter, and said, Doth  
not your Master pay  
tribute?

Mark.  
CH. IX. 33.  
33 And he came to Ca-  
pernaum:

---

<sup>0</sup> The original word is *didrachma*, denoting, not tribute or tax in general, but a specific and particular offering which every Jew paid to God. See Josephus, Ant. xviii. x. § 1. This minute accuracy of the evangelist is worthy of note, as an indication of veracity.

25 He saith, Yes. And when he was come into the house, Jesus prevented him, saying, What thinkest thou, Simon? of whom do the kings of the earth take custom or tribute? of their own children, or of strangers?

26 Peter saith unto him, Of strangers. Jesus saith unto him, Then are the children free.

27 Notwithstanding, lest we should offend them, go thou to the sea, and cast a hook, and take up the fish that first cometh up: and when thou hast opened his mouth, thou shalt find a piece of money: that take, and give unto them for me and thee.

[262]

§ 79. The disciples contend who should be the greatest. Jesus exhorts to humility, forbearance and brotherly love. *Capernaum*.

Matthew.

CH. XVIII. 1-35.

At the same time came the disciples unto Jesus, saying, Who is the greatest in the kingdom of heaven?

2 And Jesus called a little child unto him, and set him in the midst of them,

Mark.

CH. IX. 33-50.

33 And being in the house, he asked them, What was it that ye disputed among yourselves by the way?

34 But they held their peace: for by the way they had disputed among themselves, who *should be* the greatest.

35 And he sat down, and called the twelve, and saith unto them, if any man desire to be first, *the same* shall be last of all, and servant of all.

36 And he took a child, and set him in the midst of them: and when he had taken him in his arms, he said unto them,

3 And said, Verily, I say unto you, Except ye be converted, and become as little children, ye shall not enter into the kingdom of heaven.

4 Whosoever therefore shall humble himself as this little child, the same is greatest in the kingdom of heaven.

5 And whoso shall receive one such little child in my name, receiveth me.

6 But whoso shall offend one of these little ones which believe in me, it were better for him that a millstone were hanged about his neck, and *that* he were drowned in the depth of the sea.

37 Whosoever shall receive one of such children in my name, receiveth me: and whosoever shall receive me, receiveth not me, but him that sent me.

38 And John answered him, saying, Master, we saw one casting out devils in thy name, and he followeth not us; and we forbade him, because he followeth not us.

39 But Jesus said, Forbid him not: for there is no man which shall do a miracle in my name, that can lightly speak evil of me.

40 For he that is not against us, is on our part.

7 Wo unto the world because of offences! for it must needs be that offences come; but wo to that man by whom the offence cometh:

8 Wherefore, if thy hand or thy foot offend thee, cut them off, and cast *them* from thee; it is better for thee to enter into life halt or maimed, rather than having two hands or two feet, to be cast into everlasting fire.

9 And if thine eye offend thee, pluck it out, and cast *it* from thee: it is better for thee to enter into life with one eye, rather than having two eyes, to be cast into hell-fire.

10 Take heed that ye despise not one of these little ones: for I say unto you, That in heaven their angels do always behold the face of my Father which is in heaven.

41 for whosoever shall give you a cup of water to drink in my name, because ye belong to Christ, verily I say unto you, he shall not lose his reward.

42 And whosoever shall offend one of *these* little ones that believe in me, it is better for him that a millstone were hanged about his neck, and he were cast into the sea.

43 And if thy hand offend thee, cut it off: It is better for thee to enter into life maimed, than having two hands to go into hell, into the fire that never shall be quenched:

44 Where their worm dieth not, and the fire is not quenched.



11 For the Son of man  
is come to save that  
which was lost.

12 How think ye? If  
a man have a hun-  
dred sheep, and one of  
them be gone astray,  
doth he not leave the  
ninety and nine, and  
goeth into the moun-  
tains, and seeketh that  
which is gone astray?

13 And if so be that he  
find it, verily I say unto  
you, he rejoiceth more  
of that *sheep*, than of  
the ninety and nine  
which went not astray.

14 Even so it is not  
the will of your Father  
which is in heaven, that  
one of these little ones  
should perish.

45 And if thy foot of-  
fend thee, cut it off: it  
is better for thee to en-  
ter halt into life, than  
having two feet to be  
cast into hell, into the  
fire that never shall be  
quenched.

46 Where their worm  
dieth not, and the fire  
is not quenched.

47 And if thine eye of-  
fend thee, pluck it out:  
it is better for thee to  
enter into the kingdom  
of God with one eye,  
than having two eyes,  
to be cast into hell-fire:

48 Where their worm  
dieth not, and the fire  
is not quenched.

15 Moreover, if thy brother shall trespass against thee, go and tell him his fault between thee and him alone; if he shall hear thee, thou hast gained thy brother.

16 But if he will not hear *thee*, *then* take with thee one or two more, that in the mouth of two or three witnesses every word may be established.

17 And if he shall neglect to hear them, tell *it* unto the church: but if he neglect to hear the church, let him be unto thee as a heathen man and a publican.

18 Verily, I say unto you, Whatsoever ye shall bind on earth, shall be bound in heaven: and whatsoever ye shall loose on earth, shall be loosed in heaven.

49 For every one shall be salted with fire, and every sacrifice shall be salted with salt.

50 Salt *is* good: but if the salt have lost his saltness, wherewith will ye season it? Have salt in yourselves, and have peace one with another.

19 Again I say unto you, That if two of you shall agree on earth, as touching anything that they shall ask, it shall be done for them of my Father which is in heaven.

20 For where two or three are gathered together in my name, there am I in the midst of them.

21 Then came Peter to him, and said, Lord, how oft shall my brother sin against me, and I forgive him? till seven times?

22 Jesus saith unto him, I say not unto thee, Until seven times: but, Until seventy times seven.

23 Therefore is the kingdom of heaven likened unto a certain king which would take account of his servants.

24 And when he had begun to reckon, one was brought unto him which owed him ten thousand talents.

25 But forasmuch as he had not to pay, his lord commanded him to be sold, and his wife and children, and all that he had, and payment to be made.

26 The servant therefore fell down, and worshipped him, saying, Lord, have patience with me, and I will pay thee all.

27 Then the lord of that servant was moved with compassion, and loosed him, and forgave him the debt

28 But the same servant went out, and found one of his fellow-servants, which owed him a hundred pence: and he laid hands on him, and took *him* by the throat, saying, Pay me that thou owest.

20 And his fellow-servant fell down at his feet, and besought him, saying, Have patience with me, and I will pay thee all.

30 And he would not: but went and cast him into prison, till he should pay the debt.

31 So when his fellow-servants saw what was done, they were very sorry, and came and told unto their lord all that was done.

32 Then his lord, after that he had called him, said unto him, O thou wicked servant, I forgave thee all that debt, because thou desiredst me:

33 Shouldest not thou also have had compassion on thy fellow-servant, even as I had pity on thee?

34 And his lord was wroth, and delivered him to the tormentors, till he should pay all that was due unto him.

35 So likewise shall  
my heavenly Father do  
also unto you, if ye  
from your hearts for-  
give not every one  
his brother their tres-  
passes.

Luke.

CH. IX. 46-50.

46 Then there arose  
a reasoning among  
them, which of them  
should be greatest.

47 And Jesus perceiv-  
ing the thought of their  
heart, took a child, and  
set him by him,

48 And said unto them,  
Whosoever shall re-  
ceive this child in my  
name, receiveth me;  
and whosoever shall  
receive me, receiveth  
him that sent me: for  
he that is least among  
you all, the same shall  
be great.

49 And John answered  
and said, Master, we  
saw one casting out  
devils<sup>195</sup> in thy name;  
and we forbade him,  
because he followeth  
not with us.

50 And Jesus said  
unto him, Forbid *him*  
not: for he that is not  
against us, is for us.<sup>196</sup>

[266]

§ 80. The Seventy instructed, and sent out.  
*Capernaum.*

Luke.

CH. X. 1-16.

---

<sup>0</sup> The twelve apostles and the seventy disciples were commissioned and sent forth at different times. Hence the person here alluded to may, for aught that appears, have been one of the seventy, not personally known to John and to those who were with him. *Letters on Evil Spirits*, p. 39.

<sup>0</sup> Here Jesus says, He that is not against us is for us; but in Matth. xii. 30, he says, He that is not with me is against me. Grotius regards both as proverbial sayings;—*Proverbia in utramque partem usurpata, veritatem suam habent pro materia cui aptantur*;—and alludes to similar forms in Prov. xxvi. 4, 5. NEWCOME{FNS.

After these things, the Lord appointed other seventy also, and sent them two and two before his face into every city, and place, whither he himself would come.

2 Therefore said he unto them, The harvest truly *is* great, but the labourers *are* few: pray ye therefore the Lord of the harvest, that he would send forth labourers into his harvest.

3 Go your ways: behold, I send you forth as lambs among wolves.

4 Carry neither purse, nor scrip, nor shoes: and salute no man by the way.<sup>197</sup>

5 And into whatsoever house ye enter, first say, Peace *be* to this house.

---

<sup>0</sup> 2 Kings iv. 29.



6 And if the son of peace be there, your peace shall rest upon it: if not, it shall turn to you again.

7 And in the same house remain, eating and drinking such things as they give: for the labourer *is* worthy of his hire. Go not from house to house.

8 And into whatsoever city ye enter, and they receive you, eat such things as are set before you.

9 And heal the sick that are therein, and say unto them, The kingdom of God is come nigh unto you.

10 But into whatsoever city ye enter, and they receive you not, go your ways out into the streets of the same, and say,

11 Even the very dust  
of your city which  
cleaveth on us, we do  
wipe off against you:  
notwithstanding, be ye  
sure of this, that the  
kingdom of God is  
come nigh unto you.

12 But I say unto you,  
That it shall be more  
tolerable in that day  
for Sodom than for that  
city.

13 Wo unto thee,  
Chorazin! wo unto  
thee, Bethsaida! for  
if the mighty works  
had been done in Tyre  
and Sidon, which have  
been done in you,  
they had a great while  
ago repented, sitting in  
sackcloth and ashes.

14 But it shall be more  
tolerable for Tyre and  
Sidon at the judgment,  
than for you.

15 And thou, Caper-  
naum, which art ex-  
alted to heaven, shall  
be thrust down to hell.

16 He that heareth you,  
 heareth me; and he  
 that despiseth you, de-  
 spiseth me; and he  
 that despiseth me, de-  
 spiseth him that sent  
 me.

[270]

§ 81. Jesus goes up to the feast of tabernacles. His  
 final departure from Galilee. Incidents in Samaria.

Luke.

CH. IX. 51-56.

51 And it came to pass,  
 when the time was  
 come that he should be  
 received up, he stead-  
 fastly set his face to go  
 to Jerusalem,

52 And sent messen-  
 gers before his face:  
 and they went and en-  
 tered into a village  
 of the Samaritans, to  
 make ready for him.

53 And they did not because his face was as though he would go to Jerusalem to receive him,<sup>198</sup>

54 And when his disciples James and John saw *this*, they said, Lord, wilt thou that we command fire to come down from heaven, and consume them, even as Elias did?

55 But he turned, and rebuked them, and said, Ye know not what manner of spirit ye are of.

56 For the Son of man is not come to destroy men's lives, but to save *them*. And they went to another village.

---

<sup>0</sup> This was near the passover; when Jesus, going to celebrate it at Jerusalem, plainly indicated that men ought to worship *there*; contrary to the practice of the Samaritans, who, in opposition to the Holy City, had set up a temple at Gerazim. Hence the cause of their hostility to him as well as to all others travelling in that direction *at that season*. This account perfectly harmonizes with the respectful deportment of the Samaritans towards him at the time of his interview with the woman at Jacob's well, John iv. 1-42; for he was then coming *from* Judea, and it was not the season of resorting thither for any purposes of devotion. John iv. 35. BLUNT{FNS, Veracity, &c., sect. i. 16.

§ 82. Ten lepers cleansed. *Samaria.*

Luke.

CH. XVII. 11-19.

11 And it came to pass, as he went to Jerusalem, that he passed through the midst of Samaria and Galilee.

12 And as he entered into a certain village, there met him ten men that were lepers, which stood afar off:

13 And they lifted up  
*their* voices, and said,  
Jesus, Master, have  
mercy on us.

14 And when he saw  
*them*, he said unto  
them, Go shew your-  
selves unto the priests.  
And it came to pass,  
that, as they went, they  
were cleansed.

15 And one of them,  
when he saw that he  
was healed, turned  
back, and with a loud  
voice glorified God,

16 And fell down on  
*his* face at his feet, giv-  
ing him thanks: and he  
was a Samaritan.

17 And Jesus answer-  
ing, said, Were there  
not ten cleansed? but  
where *are* the nine?

18 There are not found  
that returned to give  
glory to God, save this  
stranger.

19 And he said unto  
him, Arise, go thy way:  
thy faith hath made  
thee whole.



## Part VI. The Festival Of Tabernacles And The Subsequent Transactions, Until Our Lord's Arrival At Bethany, Six Days Before The Fourth Passover.

[276]

TIME. *Six months, less one week.*

§ 83. Jesus at the festival of Tabernacles. His public  
teaching. *Jerusalem.*

John.

CH. VII. 11-53. CH.

VIII. 1.

11 Then the Jews  
sought him at the feast,  
and said, Where is he?

12 And there was  
much murmuring  
among the people  
concerning him: for  
some said, He is a  
good man: others said,  
Nay; but he deceiveth  
the people.

13 Howbeit, no man  
spake openly of him,  
for fear of the Jews.

14 Now, about the  
midst of the feast, Je-  
sus went up into the  
temple and taught.



15 And the Jews marvelled, saying, How knoweth this man letters, having never learned?

16 Jesus answered them, and said, My doctrine is not mine, but his that sent me.

17 If any man will do his will, he shall know of the doctrine, whether it be of God, or *whether* I speak of myself.

18 He that speaketh of himself, seeketh his own glory: but he that seeketh his glory that sent him, the same is true, and no unrighteousness is in him.

19 Did not Moses give you the law, and *yet* none of you keepeth the law? Why go ye about to kill me?

20 The people answered and said, Thou hast a devil: who goeth about to kill thee?

21 Jesus answered and said unto them, I have done one work, and ye all marvel.

22 Moses therefore gave unto you circumcision, (not because it is of Moses, but of the fathers;) and ye on the sabbath-day circumcise a man.<sup>199</sup>

23 If a man on the sabbath-day receive circumcision, that the law of Moses should not be broken; are ye angry at me, because I have made a man every whit whole on the sabbath-day?

24 Judge not according to the appearance, but judge righteous judgment.

25 Then said some of them of Jerusalem, Is not this he whom they seek to kill?

---

<sup>0</sup> Lev. xii. 3.

26 But lo, he speaketh boldly, and they say nothing unto him. Do the rulers know indeed that this is the very Christ?

27 Howbeit, we know this man, whence he is: but when Christ cometh, no man knoweth whence he is.

29 But I know him; for I am from him, and he hath sent me.

30 Then they sought to take him: but no man laid hands on him, because his hour was not yet come.

31 And many of the people believed on him, and said, When Christ cometh, will he do more miracles than these which this *man* hath done?

32 The Pharisees heard that the people murmured such things concerning him: and the Pharisees and the chief priests sent officers to take him.

33 Then said Jesus  
unto them, Yet a little  
while am I with you,  
and *then* I go unto him  
that sent me.

34 Ye shall seek me,  
and shall not find *me*:  
and where I am, *thither*  
ye cannot come.

35 Then said the  
Jews among them-  
selves, Whither will he  
go, that we shall not  
find him? will he  
go unto the dispersed  
among the Gentiles,  
and teach the Gentiles?

36 What *manner* of  
saying is this that he  
said, Ye shall seek me,  
and shall not find *me*,  
and where I am, *thither*  
ye cannot come;

37 In the last day,  
that great *day* of the  
feast,<sup>200</sup>, Ant. p. 495.  
The existence of this  
custom, thus remotely  
alluded to, gives great  
truthfulness to the nar-  
rative.

---

<sup>0</sup> On this day, which was one of great joy and festivity, it was the custom of the Jews to fetch water from the pool Siloam, some of which they drank with

Jesus stood and cried, saying, If any man thirst, let him come unto me, and drink. 38 He that believeth on me, as the scripture hath said,<sup>201</sup> out of his belly shall flow rivers of living water. 39 (But this spake he of the Spirit, which they that believe on him should receive, for the Holy Ghost was not yet *given*, because that Jesus was not yet glorified.) 40 Many of the people therefore, when they heard this saying, said, Of a truth this is the Prophet. 41 Others said, This is the Christ. But some said, Shall Christ come out of Galilee? 42 Hath not the scripture said,<sup>202</sup> That Christ cometh of the seed of David, and out of the town of Bethlehem, where David was? 43 So there was a division among the people because of him. 44 And some of them would have taken him; but no man laid hands on him. 45 Then came the officers to the chief priests and Pharisees; and they said unto them, Why have ye not brought him? 46 The officers answered, Never man spake like this man. 47 Then answered them the Pharisees, Are ye also deceived? 48 Have any of the rulers, or of the Pharisees believed on him?

49 But this people who  
knoweth not the law  
are cursed.

50 Nicodemus saith  
unto them, (he that  
came to Jesus by night,  
being one of them,)

51 Doth our law judge  
*any* man before it hear  
him, and know what he  
doeth?

---

loud acclamations of joy and thanksgiving; and some they brought to the altar, in commemoration of the miraculous relief of their forefathers, when thirsting in the wilderness; and some they brought as a drink-offering to God, to pray for rain against the following seed-time. See BENSON'S {FNS Life of Christ, p. 412. JENNINGS {FNS

<sup>201</sup> Isa. lv. 1, and lviii. 11, and xliv. 3. Zech. xiii. 1, and xiv. 8.

<sup>202</sup> Ps. lxxxix. 4, and cxxxii. 11. Mic. v. 2.

52 They answered and  
said unto him, Art  
thou also of Galilee:  
Search, and look: for  
out of Galilee ariseth  
no prophet.

53 And every man  
went unto his own  
house.

CH. VIII.

Jesus went unto the  
mount of Olives:<sup>203</sup>

[282]

## § 84. The woman taken in adultery. *Jerusalem.*

John.

CH. VIII. 2-11.

2 And early in the  
morning he came again  
into the temple, and all  
the people came unto  
him; and he sat down  
and taught them.

---

<sup>0</sup> It is apparent, from various incidental allusions in the Evangelists, that it was the habit of our Lord at this period to spend his days in Jerusalem, in teaching the people and healing the sick, and his nights in the Mount of Olives, in prayer. Yet it is nowhere directly asserted; and the manner in which it is slightly mentioned or alluded to by the sacred writers, is worthy of particular notice, as a proof of their veracity, never met with, in works of fiction. Compare *Math.* xxiv. 3, and xxvi. 30; *Mark* xiii. 3, and xiv. 26; *Luke* vi. 12, and xxi. 37, 38, and xxii. 39; *John* viii. 1, 2, and xviii. 1.

3 And the scribes and Pharisees brought unto him a woman taken in adultery; and when they had set her in the midst,

4 They say unto him, Master, this woman was taken in adultery, in the very act.

5 Now Moses in the but what sayest thou? law<sup>204</sup> commanded us, that such should be stoned:<sup>205</sup>

6 This they said, tempting him, that they might have to accuse him. But Jesus stooped down, and with his finger wrote on the ground, *as though he heard them not.*

---

<sup>0</sup> Lev. xx. 10. Deut. xxii. 21.

<sup>0</sup> The Romans, in settling the provincial government of Judea, which they had conquered, deprived the Jewish tribunals of the power of inflicting capital punishments. John xviii. 31. The law of Moses, however, condemned adulterers to be stoned to death. "This woman had been caught in the very fact. Jesus must therefore determine against the law, which inflicted death; or against the Romans, who suffered them not to put any body to death, and who would still less have permitted it for such a crime as adultery, which was not capital among them.—If he condemned not the adulteress *to death* when he was alone with her, he hereby teaches us to submit to the civil laws of the places where we live." BASNAGE{FNS, *Hist. Jud.* lib. v. c. § 2.

7 So when they continued asking him, he lifted up himself, and said unto them, He that is without sin among you, let him first cast a stone<sup>206</sup>, *Histoire des Institutions de Moise, &c. Liv. iv. ch. ii. p. 76.*

at her. 8 And again he stooped down, and wrote on the ground. 9 And they which heard *it*, being convicted by their *own* conscience, went out one by one, beginning at the eldest, *even* unto the last: and Jesus was left alone, and the woman standing in the midst. 10 When Jesus had lifted up himself, and saw none but the woman, he said unto her, Woman, where are those thine accusers? hath no man condemned thee? 11 She said, No man, Lord. And Jesus said unto her, Neither do I condemn thee: go, and sin no more.

§ 85. Further public teaching of our Lord. He reproves the unbelieving Jews, and escapes from their hands. *Jerusalem.*

John.

CH. VIII. 12-59.

---

<sup>0</sup> When one was condemned to death, those witnesses, whose evidence decided the sentence, inflicted the first blows, in order to add the last degree of certainty to their evidence. DUPIN{FNS, Trial of Jesus, p. 7. SALVADOR{FNS



12 Then spake Jesus again unto them, saying, I am the light of the world: he that followeth me shall not walk in darkness, but shall have the light of life.

13 The Pharisees therefore said unto him, Thou bearest record of thyself; thy record is not true.

14 Jesus answered whence I come, and whither I go, and said unto them, Though I bear record of myself, *yet* my record is true: for I know whence I came, and whither I go: but ye cannot tell<sup>207</sup>

15 Ye judge after the flesh, I judge no man.

---

<sup>0</sup> John vii. 28, is consistent with John viii. 14. "Ye both know my transactions among you, and whence, as a man, I derive my descent; (ch. vi. 42,) and yet there is a sense in which ye know not whence I am, as I came not," &c. *Kai* is used in the same manner, Matth. ix. 19. *And yet wisdom*, &c. See also John ix. 30. In this latter sense (ch. viii. 14,) the Jews knew not whence Jesus came, knew not his divine mission, and that he would return to the Father at his ascension. NEWCOME{FNS.

16 And yet if I judge,  
my judgment is true:  
for I am not alone, but  
I and the Father that  
sent me.

17 It is also written in  
your law, that the tes-  
timony of two men is  
true.<sup>208</sup>

18 I am one that bear  
witness of myself; and  
the Father that sent me,  
beareth witness of me.

19 Then said they unto  
him, Where is thy Fa-  
ther? Jesus answered,  
Ye neither know me,  
nor my Father: if ye  
had known me, ye  
should have known my  
Father also.

20 These words spake  
Jesus in the treasury, as  
he taught in the temple:  
and no man laid hands  
on him, for his hour  
was not yet come.

---

<sup>0</sup> Deut. xvii. 6, and xix. 15.

21 Then said Jesus again unto them, I go my way, and ye shall seek me, and shall die in your sins: whither I go, ye cannot come.

22 Then said the Jews, Will he kill himself? because he saith, Whither I go, ye cannot come.

23 And he said unto them, Ye are from beneath; I am from above: ye are of this world; I am not of this world.

24 I said therefore unto you, that ye shall die in your sins: for if ye believe not that I am *he*, ye shall die in your sins.

25 Then said they unto him, Who art thou? And Jesus saith unto them, Even *the same* that I said unto you from the beginning.

26 I have many things  
to say, and to judge  
of you: but he that  
sent me, is true; and  
I speak to the world  
those things which I  
have heard of him.

27 They understood  
not that he spake to  
them of the Father.

28 Then said Jesus  
unto them, When ye  
have lifted up the Son  
of man, then shall ye  
know that I am *he*, and  
*that* I do nothing of  
myself; but as my Fa-  
ther hath taught me, I  
speak these things.

29 And he that sent me  
is with me: the Father  
hath not left me alone;  
for I do always those  
things that please him.

30 As he spake these  
words, many believed  
on him.<sup>209</sup>

---

<sup>0</sup> The Jews who are said to have believed on Jesus (John viii. 30) are not the same with those whom our Lord accuses of seeking to kill him, ver. 40, nor with those who insulted him, ver. 48, &c., although these are not distinguished from the others in the narrative of John, who always mentions the Jews indiscriminately as speaking with Jesus. Cler. Harm. 528. NEWCOME{FNS.

31 Then said Jesus to those Jews which believed on him, If ye continue in my word, *then* are ye my disciples indeed;

32 And ye shall know the truth, and the truth shall make you free.

33 They answered him, We be Abraham's seed, and were never in bondage to any man: how sayest thou, Ye shall be made free?

34 Jesus answered them, Verily, verily, I say unto you, Whosoever committeth sin, is the servant of sin.

35 And the servant abideth not in the house for ever, *but* the Son abideth ever.

36 If the Son therefore shall make you free, ye shall be free indeed.

37 I know that ye are Abraham's seed; but ye seek to kill me, because my word hath no place in you.

38 I speak that which I have seen with my Father: and ye do that which ye have seen with your father.

39 They answered and said unto him, Abraham is our father. Jesus saith unto them, If ye were Abraham's children, ye would do the works of Abraham.

40 But now ye seek to kill me, a man that hath told you the truth, which I have heard of God: this did not Abraham.

41 Ye do the deeds of your father. Then said they to him, We be not born of fornication; we have one Father, *even* God.

42 Jesus said unto them, If God were your Father, ye would love me: for I proceeded forth and came from God; neither came I of myself, but he sent me.

43 Why do ye not understand my speech? even because ye cannot hear my word.

44 Ye are of *your* father the devil, and the lusts of your father ye will do: he was a murderer from the beginning, and abode not in the truth; because there is no truth in him. When he speaketh a lie, he speaketh of his own: for he is a liar, and the father of it.

45 And because I tell you the truth, ye believe me not.

46 Which of you convinceth me of sin? And if I say the truth, why do ye not believe me?

47 He that is of God, heareth God's words: ye therefore hear *them* not, because ye are not of God.

48 Then answered the Jews, and said unto him, Say we not well that thou art a Samaritan, and hast a devil?

49 Jesus answered, I have not a devil: but I honour my Father, and ye do dishonour me.

50 And I seek not mine own glory: there is one that seeketh and judgeth.

51 Verily, verily, I say unto you, If a man keep my saying, he shall never see death.

52 Then said the Jews unto him, Now we know that thou hast a devil. Abraham is dead, and the prophets; and thou sayest, If a man keep my saying, he shall never taste of death.

53 Art thou greater than our father Abraham, which is dead! and the prophets are dead: whom makest thou thyself?



54 Jesus answered, If I honour myself, my honour is nothing: it is my Father that honoureth me, of whom ye say, that he is your God.

55 Yet ye have not known him; but I know him: and if I should say, I know him not, I shall be a liar like unto you: but I know him, and keep his saying.

56 Your father Abraham rejoiced to see my day: and he saw *it*, and was glad.

57 Then said the Jews unto him, Thou art not yet fifty years old, and hast thou seen Abraham?

58 Jesus said unto them, Verily, verily, I say unto you, Before Abraham was, I am.

59 Then took they up  
stones to cast at him:  
but Jesus hid himself,  
and went out of the  
temple, going through  
the midst of them, and  
so passed by.

[290]

§ 86. A lawyer instructed. Love to our neighbour  
defined. Parable of the Good Samaritan. *Near  
Jerusalem.*

Luke.

CH. X. 25-37.

25 And behold, a cer-  
tain lawyer stood up,  
and tempted him, say-  
ing, Master, what shall  
I do to inherit eternal  
life?

26 He said unto him,  
What is written in the  
law? how readest  
thou?

27 And he answering said, Thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy strength, and with all thy mind; and thy neighbour as thyself.<sup>210</sup>

28 And he said unto him, Thou hast answered right: this do, and thou shalt live.<sup>211</sup>

29 But he, willing to justify himself, said unto Jesus, And who is my neighbour?

---

<sup>0</sup> Deut. vi. 5. Lev. xix. 18, and xviii. 5.

<sup>0</sup> The professional reader will not fail to observe the wisdom of this reply. The lawyer sought to learn from Jesus the terms of the condition on which eternal life could be attained; and was made to answer for himself that, by the law, it was attainable by nothing short of the highest degree of love, to God and to his neighbour. The lawyer thus was reminded, out of his own code, that, this being a condition precedent, he could have no title to that which was promised, unless he fully performed every part of the condition; and that in this sense, whosoever offended in one point, or was deficient in performing any part of the condition, was guilty of all—lost the benefit of all. If he murmured at the hardship of losing the reward of all the good deeds he had done, merely for the omission to do a little more; the well-known rule of law and of reason would teach him that nothing is to be allowed for acts of past performance of a condition precedent, unless they are beneficial to the party for whom they are performed.

30 And Jesus answering, said, A certain *man* went down<sup>212</sup> from Jerusalem to Jericho, and fell among thieves, which stripped him of his raiment, and wounded *him*, and departed, leaving him *half* dead.

31 And by chance there came down a certain priest that way; and when he saw him, he passed by on the other side.

32 And likewise a Levite, when he was at the place, came and looked *on him*, and passed by on the other side.

33 But a certain Samaritan, as he journeyed, came where he was: and when he saw him, he had compassion *on him*,

---

<sup>0</sup> A note of minute accuracy in the historian, Jericho being situated in the plain or valley of Jordan, and Jerusalem being among the mountains of Judea.

34 And went to *him*,  
and bound up his  
wounds, pouring in oil  
and wine, and set him  
on his own beast, and  
brought him to an inn,  
and took care of him.

35 And on the mor-  
row, when he departed,  
he took out two pence,  
and gave *them* to the  
host, and said unto  
him, Take care of him:  
and whatsoever thou  
spendest more, when I  
come again, I will re-  
pay thee.

36 Which now of these  
three, thinkest thou,  
was neighbour unto  
him that fell among the  
thieves?

37 And he said, He that  
shewed mercy on him.  
Then said Jesus unto  
him, Go, and do thou  
likewise.

[292]

§ 87. Jesus in the house of Martha and Mary.  
*Bethany.*

Luke.

CH. X. 38-42.

38 Now it came to pass, as they went, that he entered into a certain village: and a certain woman, named Martha, received him into her house.

39 And she had a sister called Mary, which also sat at Jesus' feet, and heard his word.

40 But Martha was cumbered about much serving, and came to him, and said, Lord, dost thou not care that my sister hath left me to serve alone? bid her therefore that she help me.

41 And Jesus answered, and said unto her, Martha, Martha, thou art careful, and troubled about many things:

42 But one thing is needful; and Mary hath chosen that good part, which shall not be taken away from her.

§ 88. The disciples again taught how to pray. *Near Jerusalem.*

Luke.

CH. XI. 1-13.

And it came to pass,  
that as he was pray-  
ing in a certain place,  
when he ceased, one of  
his disciples said unto  
him, Lord, teach us  
to pray, as John also  
taught his disciples.

2 And he said unto  
them, When ye pray,  
say, Our Father which  
art in heaven, Hal-  
lowed be thy name.  
Thy kingdom come.  
Thy will be done, as  
in heaven, so in earth.

3 Give us day by day  
our daily bread.

4 And forgive us our  
sins; for we also for-  
give every one that is  
indebted to us. And  
lead us not into temp-  
tation; but deliver us  
from evil.

5 And he said unto them, Which of you shall have a friend, and shall go unto him at midnight,<sup>213</sup> and say unto him, Friend, lend me three loaves:

6 For a friend of mine in his journey is come to me, and I have nothing to set before him?

7 And he from within shall answer and say, Trouble me not: the door is now shut, and my children are with me in bed; I cannot rise and give thee.

8 I say unto you, Though he will not rise and give him, because he is his friend, yet because of his importunity he will rise and give him as many as he needeth.

---

<sup>0</sup> An incidental and very natural allusion to the well-known custom of that country. For in those hot regions, men travel in the cool of the evening and night, and rest in the daytime; looking for refreshment, if they are not among total strangers, to the hospitality of friends.



9 And I say unto you,  
Ask, and it shall be  
given you; seek, and  
ye shall find; knock,  
and it shall be opened  
unto you.

10 For every one that  
asketh receiveth; and  
he that seeketh findeth;  
and to him that knock-  
eth, it shall be opened.

11 If a son shall ask  
bread of any of you  
that is a father, will he  
give him a stone? or  
if *he ask* a fish, will he  
for a fish give him a  
serpent?

12 Or if he shall ask an  
egg, will he offer him  
a scorpion?

13 If ye then, being  
evil, know how to give  
good gifts unto your  
children, how much  
more shall *your* heav-  
enly Father give the  
Holy Spirit to them  
that ask him?

[296]

Luke.

CH. X. 17-24.

17 And the seventy returned again with joy, saying, Lord, even the devils are subject unto us through thy name.

18 And he said unto them, I beheld Satan as lightning fall from heaven.

19 Behold, I give unto you power to tread on serpents and scorpions, and over all the power of the enemy: and nothing shall by any means hurt you.

20. Notwithstanding, in this rejoice not, that the spirits are subject unto you; but rather rejoice, because your names are written in heaven.

21 In that hour Jesus rejoiced in spirit, and said, I thank thee, O Father, Lord of heaven and earth, that thou hast hid these things from the wise and prudent, and hast revealed them unto babes: even so, Father; for so it seemed good in thy sight.

22 All things are delivered to me of my Father: and no man knoweth who the Son is, but the Father; and who the Father is, but the Son, and he to whom the Son will reveal *him*.

23 And he turned him unto *his* disciples, and said privately, Blessed are the eyes which see the things that ye see.

24 For I tell you,  
That many prophets  
and kings have desired  
to see those things  
which ye see, and have  
not seen *them*; and  
to hear those things  
which ye hear, and  
have not heard *them*.

[298]

§ 90. A man born blind is healed on the Sabbath. Our  
Lord's subsequent discourses. *Jerusalem*.

John.  
CH. IX. 1-41. CH. X.  
1-21.

And as *Jesus* passed  
by, he saw a man  
which was blind from  
*his* birth.

2 And his disciples  
asked him, saying,  
Master, who did sin,  
this man, or his par-  
ents, that he was born  
blind?

3 Jesus answered, Neither hath this man sinned, nor his parents: but that the works of God should be made manifest in him.

4 I must work the works of him that sent me, while it is day: the night cometh, when no man can work.

5 As long as I am in the world, I am the light of the world.

6 When he had thus spoken, he spat on the ground, and made clay of the spittle, and he anointed the eyes of the blind man with the clay,

7 And said unto him, Go, wash in the pool of Siloam, (which is by interpretation, Sent.) He went his way therefore, and washed, and came seeing.

8 The neighbours therefore, and they which before had seen him that he was blind, said, Is not this he that sat and begged?

9 Some said, This is he: others said, He is like him: *but* he said, I am *he*.

10 Therefore said they unto him, How were thine eyes opened?

11 He answered and said, A man that is called Jesus, made clay, and anointed mine eyes, and said unto me, Go to the pool of Siloam, and wash; and I went and washed, and I received sight.

12 Then said they unto him, Where is he? He said, I know not.

13 They brought to the Pharisees him that aforetime was blind.

14 And it was the sabbath-day when Jesus made the clay, and opened his eyes.

15 Then again the Pharisees also asked him how he had received his sight. He said unto them, He put clay upon mine eyes, and I washed, and do see.

16 Therefore said some of the Pharisees, This man is not of God, because he keepeth not the sabbath-day. Others said, How can a man that is a sinner do such miracles? And there was a division among them.

17 They say unto the blind man again, What sayest thou of him, that he hath opened thine eyes? He said, He is a prophet.

18 But the Jews did not believe concerning him, that he had been blind, and received his sight, until they called the parents of him that had received his sight.

19 And they asked them, saying, Is this your son, who ye say was born blind? How then doth he now see?

20 His parents answered them and said, We know that this is our son, and that he was born blind:

21 But by what means he now seeth, we know not; or who hath opened his eyes, we know not: he is of age; ask him: he shall speak for himself.

22 These *words* spake his parents, because they feared the Jews: for the Jews had agreed already, that if any man did confess that he was Christ, he should be put out of the synagogue.

23 Therefore said his parents, He is of age; ask him.



24 Then again called they the man that was blind, and said unto him, Give God the praise: we know that this man is a sinner.

25 He answered and said, Whether he be a sinner *or no*, I know not: one thing I know, that, whereas I was blind, now I see.

26 Then said they to him again, What did he to thee? how opened he thine eyes?

27 He answered them, I have told you already, and ye did not hear: wherefore would ye hear *it* again? will ye also be his disciples?

28 Then they reviled him, and said, Thou art his disciple, but we are Moses' disciples.

29 We know that God spake unto Moses; *as for this fellow*, we know not from whence he is.

30 The man answered and said unto them, Why, herein is a marvellous thing, that ye know not from whence he is, and *yet* he hath opened mine eyes.

31 Now we know that God heareth not sinners; but if any man be a worshipper of God, and doeth his will, him he heareth.

32 Since the world began was it not heard that any man opened the eyes of one that was born blind.

33 If this man were not of God, he could do nothing.

34 They answered and said unto him, Thou wast altogether born in sins, and dost thou teach us? And they cast him out.

35 Jesus heard that they had cast him out: and when he had found him, he said unto him, Dost thou believe on the Son of God?

36 He answered and said, Who is he, Lord, that I might believe on him?

37 And Jesus said unto him, Thou hast both seen him, and it is he that talketh with thee.

38 And he said, Lord, I believe. And he worshipped him.

39 And Jesus said, For judgment I am come into this world; that they which see not might see; and that they which see might be made blind.

40 And *some* of the Pharisees which were with him heard these words, and said unto him, Are we blind also?

41 Jesus said unto them, If ye were blind, ye should have no sin: but now ye say, We see; therefore your sin remaineth.

CH. X.

Verily, verily, I say unto you, He that entereth not by the door into the sheep-fold, but climbeth up some other way, the same is a thief and a robber.

2 But he that entereth in by the door is the shepherd of the sheep.

3 To him the porter openeth; and the sheep hear his voice: and he calleth his own sheep by name, and leadeth them out.

4 And when he putteth forth his own sheep, he goeth before them, and the sheep follow him: for they know his voice.

5 And a stranger will they not follow, but will flee from him: for they know not the voice of strangers.

6 This parable spake  
Jesus unto them: but  
they understood not  
what things they were  
which he spake unto  
them.

7 Then said Jesus unto  
them again, Verily,  
verily, I say unto you,  
I am the door of the  
sheep.

8 All that ever came  
before me are thieves  
and robbers: but the  
sheep did not hear  
them.

9 I am the door: by  
me if any man enter in,  
he shall be saved, and  
shall go in and out, and  
find pasture.

10 The thief cometh  
not, but for to steal, and  
to kill, and to destroy:  
I am come that they  
might have life, and  
that they might have it  
more abundantly.

11 I am the good shep-  
herd: the good shep-  
herd giveth his life for  
the sheep.

12 But he that is a hireling, and not the shepherd, whose own the sheep are not, seeth the wolf coming, and leaveth the sheep, and fleeth; and the wolf catcheth them, and scattereth the sheep.

13 The hireling fleeth, because he is a hireling, and careth not for the sheep.

14 I am the good shepherd, and know my *sheep*, and am known of mine.

15 As the Father knoweth me, even so know I the Father: and I lay down my life for the sheep.

6 And other sheep I have, which are not of this fold: them also I must bring, and they shall hear my voice; and there shall be one fold, *and* one shepherd.

17 Therefore doth my  
 Father love me, be-  
 cause I lay down my  
 life, that I might take it  
 again.

18 No man taketh it  
 from me, but I lay it  
 down of myself. I have  
 power to lay it down,  
 and I have power to  
 take it again. This  
 commandment have I  
 received of my Father.

19 There was a di-  
 vision therefore again  
 among the Jews for  
 these sayings.

20 And many of them  
 said, He hath a devil,  
 and is mad; why hear  
 ye him?

21 Others said, These  
 are not the words of  
 him that hath a devil.  
 Can a devil open the  
 eyes of the blind?

[306]

§ 91. Jesus at Jerusalem at the feast of dedication. He  
 retires beyond Jordan. *Jerusalem. Bethany beyond  
 Jordan.*

John.

CH. X. 22-42.

22 And it was at Jerusalem the feast of the dedication, and it was winter.

23 And Jesus walked in the temple in Solomon's porch.

24 Then came the Jews round about him, and said unto him, How long dost thou make us to doubt? If thou be the Christ, tell us plainly.

25 Jesus answered them, I told you, and ye believed not: the works that I do in my Father's name, they bear witness of me.

28 But ye believe not, because ye are not of my sheep, as I said unto you.

27 My sheep hear my voice, and I know them, and they follow me:



28 And I give unto them eternal life; and they shall never perish, neither shall any pluck them out of my hand.

29 My Father, which gave *them* me, is greater than all; and none is able to pluck *them* out of my Father's hand.

30 I and *my* Father are one.

31 Then the Jews took up stones again to stone him.

32 Jesus answered them, Many good works have I shewed you from my Father; for which of those works do ye stone me?

33 The Jews answered him, saying, For a good work we stone thee not; but for blasphemy, and because that thou, being a man, makest thyself God.

34 Jesus answered them, Is it not written in your law, I said, Ye are gods?<sup>214</sup>

35 If he called them gods, unto whom the word of God came, and the scripture cannot be broken;

36 Say ye of him whom the Father hath sanctified, and sent into the world, Thou blasphemest; because I said, I am the Son of God?

37 If I do not the works of my Father, believe me not.

38 But if I do, though ye believe not me, believe the works: that ye may know and believe that the Father *is* in me, and I in him.

39 Therefore they sought again to take him; but he escaped out of their hand,

---

<sup>0</sup> Ps. lxxxii. 6. Ex. xxii. 7, seq.

40 And went away  
again beyond Jordan,  
into the place where  
John at first baptized;  
and there he abode.

41 And many resorted  
unto him, and said,  
John did no miracle;  
but all things that John  
spake of this man were  
true.

42 And many believed  
on him there.

[308]

## § 92. The raising of Lazarus. *Bethany*.

John.

CH. XI. 1-46.

Now a certain man was  
sick, named Lazarus,  
of Bethany, the town  
of Mary and her sister  
Martha.

2 (It was *that* Mary  
which anointed the  
Lord with ointment,  
and wiped his feet with  
her hair, whose brother  
Lazarus was sick.)

3 Therefore his sisters sent unto him, saying, Lord, behold, he whom thou lovest is sick.

4 When Jesus heard *that*, he said, This sickness is not unto death, but for the glory of God, that the Son of God might be glorified thereby.

5 Now Jesus loved Martha, and her sister, and Lazarus.

6 When he had heard therefore that he was sick, he abode two days still in the same place where he was.

7 Then after that saith he to *his* disciples, Let us go into Judea again.

8 *His* disciples say unto him, Master, the Jews of late sought to stone thee; and goest thou thither again?

9 Jesus answered, Are there not twelve hours in the day? If any man walk in the day, he stumbleth not, because he seeth the light of this world.

10 But if a man walk in the night, he stumbleth, because there is no light in him.

11 These things said he: and after that he saith unto them, Our friend Lazarus sleepeth; but I go that I may awake him out of sleep.

12 Then said his disciples, Lord, if he sleep, he shall do well.

13 Howbeit Jesus spake of his death: but they thought that he had spoken of taking of rest in sleep.

14 Then said Jesus unto them plainly, Lazarus is dead.

15 And I am glad for your sakes that I was not there, to the intent ye may believe; nevertheless, let us go unto him.

16 Then said Thomas, which is called Didymus, unto his fellow-disciples, Let us also go, that we may die with him.

17 Then when Jesus came, he found that he had *lain* in the grave four days already.

18 (Now Bethany was nigh unto Jerusalem, about fifteen furlongs off:)

19 And many of the Jews came to Martha and Mary, to comfort them concerning their brother.

20 Then Martha, as soon as she heard that Jesus was coming, went and met him: but Mary sat *still* in the house.

21 Then said Martha  
unto Jesus, Lord, if  
thou hadst been here,  
my brother had not  
died.

22 But I know that  
even now, whatsoever  
thou wilt ask of God,  
God will give *it* thee.

23 Jesus saith unto her,  
Thy brother shall rise  
again.

24 Martha saith unto  
him, I know that he  
shall rise again in the  
resurrection at the last  
day.

25 Jesus said unto her,  
I am the resurrection,  
and the life: he that be-  
lieveth in me, though  
he were dead, yet shall  
he live:

26 And whosoever  
liveth, and believeth in  
me, shall never die.  
Believest thou this?

27 She saith unto him,  
Yea, Lord: I believe  
that thou art the Christ,  
the Son of God, which  
should come into the  
world.

28 And when she had so said, she went her way, and called Mary her sister secretly, saying, The master is come, and calleth for thee.

29 As soon as she heard *that*, she arose quickly, and came unto him.

30 Now Jesus was not yet come into the town, but was in that place where Martha met him.

31 The Jews then which were with her in the house, and comforted her, when they saw Mary that she rose up hastily, and went out, followed her, saying, She goeth unto the grave to weep there.

32 Then when Mary was come where Jesus was, and saw him, she fell down at his feet, saying unto him, Lord, if thou hadst been here, my brother had not died.



33 When Jesus therefore saw her weeping, and the Jews also weeping which came with her, he groaned in the spirit, and was troubled,

34 And said, Where have ye laid him? They say unto him, Lord, come and see.

36 Jesus wept.

36 Then said the Jews, Behold how he loved him!

37 And some of them said, Could not this man, which opened the eyes of the blind, have caused that even this man should not have died?

38 Jesus therefore again groaning in himself, cometh to the grave. It was a cave, and a stone lay upon it.

39 Jesus said, Take ye away the stone. Martha, the sister of him that was dead, saith unto him, Lord, by this time he stinketh: for he hath been *dead* four days.

40 Jesus saith unto her, Said I not unto thee, that if thou wouldest believe, thou shouldest see the glory of God?

41 Then they took away the stone *from the place* where the dead was laid. And Jesus lifted up *his* eyes, and said, Father, I thank thee that thou hast heard me.

42 And I knew that thou hearest me always: but because of the people which stand by, I said *it*, that they may believe that thou hast sent me.

43 And when he thus had spoken, he cried with a loud voice, Lazarus, come forth.

44 And he that  
 was dead came forth,  
 bound hand and foot  
 with graveclothes: and  
 his face was bound  
 about with a napkin.  
 Jesus saith unto them,  
 Loose him, and let him  
 go.

45 Then many of the  
 Jews which came to  
 Mary, and had seen the  
 things which Jesus did,  
 believed on him.

46 But some of them  
 went their ways to  
 the Pharisees, and told  
 them what things Jesus  
 had done.

[314]

§ 93. The counsel of Caiaphas against Jesus. He  
 retires from Jerusalem. *Jerusalem. Ephraim.*

John.

CH. XI. 47-54.

47 Then gathered the  
 chief priests and the  
 Pharisees a council,  
 and said, What do  
 we? for this man doeth  
 many miracles.

48 If we let him thus alone, all *men* will believe on him: and the Romans shall come, and take away both our place and nation.

49 And one of them, *named* Caiaphas, being the high priest that same year, said unto them, Ye know nothing at all,

50 Nor consider that it is expedient for us, that one man should die for the people, and that the whole nation perish not.

51 And this spake he not of himself: but being high priest that year, he prophesied that Jesus should die for that nation;

52 And not for that nation only, but that also he should gather together in one the children of God that were scattered abroad.

53 Then from that day  
forth they took counsel  
together for to put him  
to death.

54 Jesus therefore  
walked no more  
openly among the  
Jews; but went thence  
unto a country near to  
the wilderness, into a  
city called Ephraim,  
and there continued  
with his disciples.

[316]

§ 94. Jesus, beyond Jordan, is followed by  
multitudes. The healing of the infirm woman on the  
Sabbath. *Valley of Jordan. Perea.*

Matthew.

CH. XIX. 1, 2.

And it came to pass,  
*that* when Jesus had  
finished these say-  
ings, he departed from  
Galilee, and came into  
the coasts of Judea, be-  
yond Jordan:

Mark.

CH. X. 1.

And he arose from  
thence, and cometh  
into the coasts of  
Judea, by the farther  
side of Jordan: and the  
people resort unto him  
again; and, as he was  
wont, he taught them  
again.

2 And great multitudes followed him, and he healed them there.

Luke.

CH. XIII. 10-21.

10 And he was teaching in one of the synagogues on the sabbath.

11 And behold, there was a woman which had a spirit of infirmity eighteen years, and was bowed together, and could in no wise lift up *herself*.

12 And when Jesus saw her, he called *her to him*, and said unto her, Woman, thou art loosed from thine infirmity.

13 And he laid *his* hands on her: and immediately she was made straight, and glorified God.

14 And the ruler of the synagogue answered with indignation, because that Jesus had healed on the sabbath-day, and said unto the people, There are six days in which men ought to work: in them therefore come and be healed, and not on the sabbath-day.

15 The Lord then answered him, and said, *Thou* hypocrite, doth not each one of you on the sabbath loose his ox or *his* ass from the stall, and lead *him* away to watering?

16 And ought not this woman, being a daughter of Abraham, whom Satan hath bound, lo, these eighteen years, be loosed from this bond on the sabbath-day?

17 And when he had said these things, all his adversaries were ashamed: and all the people rejoiced for all the glorious things that were done by him.

18 Then said he, Unto what is the kingdom of God like? and whereunto shall I resemble it?

19 It is like a grain of mustard-seed which a man took, and cast into his garden, and it grew, and waxed a great tree; and the fowls of the air lodged in the branches of it.

20 And again he said, Whereunto shall I liken the kingdom of God?

21 It is like leaven, which a woman took and hid in three measures of meal, till the whole was leavened.



§ 95. Our Lord goes teaching and journeying towards Jerusalem. He is warned against Herod. *Perea*.

Luke.

CH. XIII. 22-35.

22 And he went through the cities and villages, teaching, and journeying toward Jerusalem.

23 Then said one unto him, Lord, are there few that be saved? And he said unto them,

24 Strive to enter in at the strait gate: for many, I say unto you, will seek to enter in, and shall not be able.

25 When once the Master of the house is risen up, and hath shut to the door, and ye begin to stand without, and to knock at the door, saying, Lord, Lord, open unto us; and he shall answer and say unto you, I know you not whence ye are:

26 Then shall ye begin to say, We have eaten and drunk in thy presence, and thou hast taught in our streets.

27 But he shall say, I tell you, I know you not whence ye are; depart from me, all ye workers of iniquity.

28 There shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth, when ye shall see Abraham, and Isaac, and Jacob, and all the prophets, in the kingdom of God, and you *yourselves* thrust out.

29 And they shall come from the east, and *from* the west, and from the north, and *from* the south, and shall sit down in the kingdom of God.

30 And behold, there are last, which shall be first; and there are first, which shall be last.

31 The same day there came certain of the Pharisees, saying unto him, Get thee out, and depart hence; for Herod will kill thee.

32 And he said unto them, Go ye and tell that fox, Behold, I cast out devils, and I do cures to-day and to-morrow, and the third *day* I shall be perfected.

33 Nevertheless, I must work to-day and to-morrow, and the *day* following: for it cannot be that a prophet perish out of Jerusalem.

34 O Jerusalem, Jerusalem, which killest the prophets, and stonest them that are sent unto thee; how often would I have gathered thy children together, as a hen *doth gather* her brood under *her* wings, and ye would not!

35 Behold, your house  
 is left unto you desolate.<sup>215</sup> And verily,  
 I say unto you, Ye  
 shall not see me, un-  
 til *the time* come when  
 ye shall say, Blessed *is*  
 he that cometh in the  
 name of the Lord.

[320]

§ 96. Our Lord dines with a chief Pharisee on the  
 Sabbath. Incidents. *Perea*.

Luke.  
 CH. XIV. 1-24.  
 And it came to pass,  
 as he went into the  
 house of one of the  
 chief Pharisees to eat  
 bread on the sabbath-  
 day, that they watched  
 him.  
 2 And behold, there  
 was a certain man be-  
 fore him which had the  
 dropsy.

---

<sup>0</sup> Ps. lxix. 25. Jer. xii. 7, and xxii. 5.

3 And Jesus answering, spake unto the lawyers and Pharisees, saying, Is it lawful to heal on the sabbath-day?

4 And they held their peace. And he took *him*, and healed him, and let him go:

5 And answered them, saying, Which of you shall have an ass or an ox fallen into a pit, and will not straightway pull him out on the sabbath-day?

6 And they could not answer him again to these things.

7 And he put forth a parable to those which were bidden, when he marked how they chose out the chief rooms; saying unto them,

8 When thou art bidden of any *man* to a wedding, sit not down in the highest room, lest a more honourable man than thou be bidden of him;

9 And he that bade thee and him come and say to thee, Give this man place; and thou begin with shame to take the lowest room.

10 But when thou art bidden, go and sit down in the lowest room; that when he that bade thee cometh, he may say unto thee, Friend, go up higher: then shalt thou have worship in the presence of them that sit at *meat* with thee.

11 For whosoever exalteth himself shall be abased, and he that humbleth himself shall be exalted.

12 Then said he also to him that bade him, When thou makest a dinner or a supper, call not thy friends, nor thy brethren, neither thy kinsmen, nor *thy* rich neighbours; lest they also bid thee again, and a recompense be made thee.

13 But when thou makest a feast, call the poor, the maimed, the lame, the blind;

14 And thou shalt be blessed: for they cannot recompense thee: for thou shalt be recompensed at the resurrection of the just.

15 And when one of them that sat at meat with him heard these things, he said unto him, Blessed *is* he that shall eat bread in the kingdom of God.

16 Then said he unto him, A certain man made a great supper, and bade many:

17 And sent his servant at supper-time, to say to them that were bidden, Come, for all things are now ready.

18 And they all with one *consent* began to make excuse. The first said unto him, I have bought a piece of ground, and I must needs go and see it: I pray thee have me excused.

19 And another said, I have bought five yoke of oxen, and I go to prove them: I pray thee have me excused.

20 And another said, I have married a wife: and therefore I cannot come.



21 So that servant came, and shewed his lord these things. Then the master of the house being angry, said to his servant, Go out quickly into the streets and lanes of the city, and bring in hither the poor, and the maimed, and the halt, and the blind.

22 And the servant said, Lord, it is done as thou hast commanded, and yet there is room.

23 And the lord said unto the servant, Go out into the highways and hedges, and compel *them* to come in, that my house may be filled.

24 For I say unto you, that none of those men which were bidden, shall taste of my supper.

[324]

§ 97. What is required of true disciples. *Perea.*

Luke.

CH. XIV. 25-35.

25 And there were great multitudes with him: and he turned, and said unto them,

26 If any *man* come to me, and hate not his father, and mother, and wife, and children, and brethren, and sisters, yea, and his own life also, he cannot be my disciple.

27 And whosoever doth not bear his cross, and come after me, cannot be my disciple.

28 For which of you, intending to build a tower, sitteth not down first, and counteth the cost, whether he have *sufficient* to finish *it*?

29 Lest haply after he hath laid the foundation, and is not able to finish *it*, all that behold *it* begin to mock him,

30 Saying, This man began to build, and was not able to finish.

31 Or what king going,  
to make war against  
another king, sitteth  
not down first, and  
consulteth whether he  
be able with ten thou-  
sand to meet him that  
cometh against him  
with twenty thousand?

32 Or else, while the  
other is yet a great way  
off, he sendeth an am-  
bassage, and desireth  
conditions of peace.

33 So likewise, whoso-  
ever he be of you that  
forsaketh not all that he  
hath, he cannot be my  
disciple.

34 Salt *is* good: but  
if the salt have lost  
his savour, wherewith  
shall it be seasoned?

35 It is neither fit for  
the land, nor yet for the  
dunghill; *but* men cast  
it out. He that hath ears  
to hear, let him hear.

[326]

§ 98. Parables of the lost Sheep, &c. and of the  
Prodigal Son. *Perea.*

Luke.

CH. XV. 1-32.

Then drew near unto him all the publicans and sinners for to hear him.

2 And the Pharisees and scribes murmured, saying, This man receiveth sinners, and eateth with them.

3 And he spake this parable unto them, saying,

4 What man of you having a hundred sheep, if he lose one of them, doth not leave the ninety and nine in the wilderness, and go after that which is lost, until he find it?

5 And when he hath found it, he layeth *it* on his shoulders, rejoicing.

6 And when he cometh home, he calleth together *his* friends and neighbours, saying unto them, Rejoice with me; for I have found my sheep which was lost.

7 I say unto you, that likewise joy shall be in heaven over one sinner that repenteth, more than over ninety and nine just persons which need no repentance.

8 Either what woman having ten pieces of silver, if she lose one piece, doth not light a candle, and sweep the house, and seek diligently till she find *it*?

9 And when she hath found *it*, she calleth *her* friends and *her* neighbours together, saying, Rejoice with me; for I have found the piece which I had lost.

10 Likewise, I say unto you, There is joy in the presence of the angels of God over one sinner that repenteth.

11 And he said, A certain man had two sons:

12 And the younger of them said to *his* father, Father, give me the portion of goods that falleth to *me*. And he divided unto them *his* living.

13 And not many days after, the younger son gathered all together, and took his journey into a far country, and there wasted his substance with riotous living.

14 And when he had spent all, there arose a mighty famine in that land; and he began to be in want.

15 And he went and joined himself to a citizen of that country; and he sent him into his fields to feed swine.

16 And he would fain  
have filled his belly  
with the husks that the  
swine did eat; and no  
man gave unto him.

17 And when he came  
to himself, he said,  
How many hired ser-  
vants of my father's  
have bread enough and  
to spare, and I perish  
with hunger!

18 I will arise and  
go to my father, and  
will say unto him, Fa-  
ther, I have sinned  
against heaven, and  
before thee,

19 And am no more  
worthy to be called thy  
son: make me as one  
of thy hired servants.

20 And he arose, and  
came to his father. But  
when he was yet a great  
way off, his father saw  
him, and had compas-  
sion, and ran, and fell  
on his neck, and kissed  
him.

21 And the son said unto him, Father, I have sinned against heaven, and in thy sight, and am no more worthy to be called thy son.

22 But the father said to his servants, Bring forth the best robe, and put it on him; and put a ring on his hand, and shoes on *his* feet:

23 And bring hither the fatted calf, and kill *it*; and let us eat, and be merry:

24 For this my son was dead, and is alive again; he *was* lost, and is found. And they began to be merry.

25 Now his elder son was in the field: and as he came and drew nigh to the house, he heard music and dancing.

26 And he called one of the servants, and asked what these things meant.



27 And he said unto him, Thy brother is come; and thy father hath killed the fatted calf, because he hath received him safe and sound.

28 And he was angry, and would not go in; therefore came his father out, and entreated him.

29 And he, answering, said to *his* father, Lo, these many years do I serve thee, neither transgressed I at any time thy commandment; and yet thou never gavest me a kid, that I might make merry with my friends:

30 But as soon as this thy son was come, which hath devoured thy living with harlots, thou hast killed for him the fatted calf.

31 And he said unto him, Son, thou art ever with me; and all that I have is thine.

32 It was meet that  
we should make merry,  
and be glad: for this thy  
brother was dead, and  
is alive again; and was  
lost, and is found.

[330]

§ 99. Parable of the Unjust Steward. *Perea.*

Luke.

CH. XVI. 1-13.

And he said also unto  
his disciples, There  
was a certain rich man  
which had a steward;  
and the same was ac-  
cused unto him that he  
had wasted his goods.

2 And he called him,  
and said unto him,  
How is it that I hear this  
of thee? give an ac-  
count of thy steward-  
ship: for thou mayest  
be no longer steward.

3 Then the steward  
said within himself,  
What shall I do? for  
my lord taketh away  
from me the steward-  
ship: I cannot dig; to  
beg I am ashamed.

4 I am resolved what to  
do, that when I am put  
out of the stewardship,  
they may receive me  
into their houses.

5 So he called ev-  
ery one of his lord's  
debtors *unto him*, and  
said unto the first, How  
much owest thou unto  
my lord?

6 And he said, A  
hundred measures of  
oil. And he said unto  
him, Take thy bill, and  
sit down quickly, and  
write fifty.

7 Then said he to an-  
other, And how much  
owest thou? And he  
said, A hundred mea-  
sures of wheat. And  
he said unto him, Take  
thy bill, and write four-  
score.

8 And the lord commended the unjust steward, because he had done wisely: for the children of this world are in their generation wiser than the children of light.

9 And I say unto you, Make to yourselves friends of the mammon of unrighteousness; that when ye fail, they may receive you into everlasting habitations.

10 He that is faithful in that which is least, is faithful also in much; and he that is unjust in the least, is unjust also in much.

11 If therefore ye have not been faithful in the unrighteous mammon, who will commit to your trust the true *riches*?

12 And if ye have not been faithful in that which is another man's, who shall give you that which is your own?

13 No servant can serve two masters: for either he will hate the one, and love the other; or else he will hold to the one, and despise the other. Ye cannot serve God and mammon.

[332]

§ 100. The Pharisees reproved. Parable of the Rich Man and Lazarus. *Perea*.

Luke.

CH. XVI. 14-31.

14 And the Pharisees also, who were covetous, heard all these things, and they derided him.

15 And he said unto them, Ye are they which justify yourselves before men; but God knoweth your hearts: for that which is highly esteemed among men, is abomination in the sight of God.

16 The law and the prophets *were* until John: since that time the kingdom of God is preached, and every man presseth into it.

17 And it is easier for heaven and earth to pass, than one tittle of the law to fail.

18 Whosoever putteth away his wife, and marrieth another, committeth adultery; and whosoever marrieth her that is put away from *her* husband, committeth adultery.

19 There was a certain rich man, which was clothed in purple and fine linen, and fared sumptuously every day:

20 And there was a certain beggar named Lazarus, which was laid at his gate, full of sores,

21 And desiring to be fed with the crumbs which fell from the rich man's table: moreover, the dogs came and licked his sores.

22 And it came to pass, that the beggar died, and was carried by the angels into Abraham's bosom. The rich man also died, and was buried:

23 And in hell he lifted up his eyes, being in torments, and seeth Abraham afar off, and Lazarus in his bosom.

24 And he cried, and said, Father Abraham, have mercy on me, and send Lazarus, that he may dip the tip of his finger in water, and cool my tongue: for I am tormented in this flame.

25 But Abraham said, Son, remember that thou in thy lifetime receivedst thy good things, and likewise Lazarus evil things: but now he is comforted, and thou art tormented.

26 And besides all this, between us and you there is a great gulf fixed: so that they which would pass from hence to you, cannot; neither can they pass to us, that *would come* from thence.

27 Then he said, I pray thee therefore, father, that thou wouldest send him to my father's house:



28 For I have five brethren; that he may testify unto them, lest they also come into this place of torment.

29 Abraham saith unto him, They have Moses and the prophets, let them hear them.

30 And he said, Nay, father Abraham: but if one went unto them from the dead, they will repent.

31 And he said unto him, If they hear not Moses and the prophets, neither will they be persuaded, though one rose from the dead.

[336]

§ 101. Jesus inculcates forbearance, faith, humility.  
*Perea.*

Luke.

CH. XVII. 1-10.

Then said he unto his disciples, It is impossible but that offences will come: but wo *unto him* through whom they come!

2 It were better for him that a millstone were hanged about his neck, and he cast into the sea, than that he should offend one of these little ones.

3 Take heed to yourselves: If thy brother trespass against thee, rebuke him; and if he repent, forgive him.

4 And if he trespass against thee seven times in a day, and seven times in a day turn again to thee, saying, I repent; thou shalt forgive him.

5 And the apostles said unto the Lord, Increase our faith.

6 And the Lord said,  
If ye had faith as a  
grain of mustard-seed,  
ye might say unto this  
sycamine-tree, Be thou  
plucked up by the root,  
and be thou planted in  
the sea; and it should  
obey you.

7 But which of  
you having a servant  
ploughing, or feeding  
cattle, will say unto  
him by and by, when  
he is come from the  
field, Go and sit down  
to meat?

8 And will not rather  
say unto him, Make  
ready wherewith I may  
sup, and gird thy-  
self, and serve me,  
till I have eaten and  
drunken; and after-  
ward thou shalt eat and  
drink?

9 Doth he thank that  
servant, because he did  
the things that were  
commanded him? I  
trow not.

10 So likewise ye,  
when ye shall have  
done all those things  
which are commanded  
you, say, We are un-  
profitable servants: we  
have done that which  
was our duty to do.

§ 102. Christ's coming will be sudden. *Perea.*

Luke.

CH. XVII. 20-37.

20 And when he  
was demanded of  
the Pharisees, when  
the kingdom of God  
should come, he an-  
swered them and said,  
The kingdom of God  
cometh not with obser-  
vation.

21 Neither shall they  
say, Lo here! or,  
Lo there! for behold,  
the kingdom of God is  
within you.

22 And he said unto the disciples, The days will come, when ye shall desire to see one of the days of the Son of man, and ye shall not see *it*.

23 And they shall say to you, See here! or, See there! go not after *them*, nor follow *them*.

24 For as the lightning that lighteneth out of the one *part* under heaven, shineth unto the other part under heaven; so shall also the Son of man be in his day.

25 But first must he suffer many things, and be rejected of this generation.

26 And as it was in the days of Noe, so shall it be also in the days of the Son of man.

27 They did eat, they drank, they married wives, they were given in marriage, until the day that Noe entered into the ark, and the flood came, and destroyed them all.<sup>216</sup>

28 Likewise also as it was in the days of Lot: they did eat, they drank, they bought, they sold, they planted, they builded;

29 But the same day that Lot went out of Sodom, it rained fire and brimstone from heaven, and destroyed *them* all.<sup>217</sup>

30 Even thus shall it be in the day when the Son of man is revealed.

---

<sup>0</sup> Gen. vii. 4, 7.

<sup>0</sup> Gen. xix. 15, seq.

31 In that day, he which shall be upon the house-top, and his stuff in the house, let him not come down to take it away: and he that is in the field, let him likewise not return back.

32 Remember Lot's wife.<sup>218</sup>

33 Whosoever shall seek to save his life, shall lose it; and whosoever shall lose his life, shall preserve it.

34 I tell you, in that night there shall be two *men* in one bed; the one shall be taken, and the other shall be left.

35 Two *women* shall be grinding together; the one shall be taken, and the other left.

36 Two *men* shall be in the field; the one shall be taken, and the other left.

---

<sup>0</sup> Gen xix. 26.

37 And they answered  
and said unto him,  
Where, Lord? And  
he said unto them,  
Wheresoever the body  
*is*, thither will the ea-  
gles be gathered to-  
gether.

[340]

§ 103. Parables. The importunate Widow. The  
Pharisee and Publican. *Perea*.

Luke.

CH. XVIII. 1-14.

And he spake a para-  
ble unto them *to this*  
*end*, that men ought al-  
ways *to* pray, and not  
to faint;

2 Saying, There was  
in a city a judge, which  
feared not God, neither  
regarded man.

3 And there was a  
widow in that city; and  
she came unto him,  
saying, Avenge me of  
mine adversary.



4 And he would not for  
a while: but afterward  
he said within himself,  
Though I fear not God,  
nor regard man;

5 Yet, because this  
widow troubleth me, I  
will avenge her, lest by  
her continual coming  
she weary me.

6 And the Lord said,  
Hear what the unjust  
judge saith.

7 And shall not God  
avenge his own elect,  
which cry day and  
night unto him, though  
he bear long with  
them?

8 I tell you that he will  
avenge them speed-  
ily. Nevertheless,  
when the Son of man  
cometh, shall he find  
faith on the earth?

9 And he spake this  
parable unto certain  
which trusted in them-  
selves that they were  
righteous, and de-  
spised others:

10 Two men went up into the temple to pray; the one a Pharisee, and the other a publican.

11 The Pharisee stood and prayed thus with himself, God, I thank thee, that I am not as other men *are*, extortioners, unjust, adulterers, or even as this publican.

12 I fast twice in the week, I give tithes of all that I possess.

13 And the publican, standing afar off, would not lift up so much as *his* eyes unto heaven, but smote upon his breast, saying, God be merciful to me a sinner.

14 I tell you, this man went down to his house justified *rather* than the other: for every one that exalteth himself shall be abased; and he that humbleth himself shall be exalted.

§ 104. Precepts respecting divorce. *Perea.*

Matthew.

CH. XIX. 3-12.<sup>219</sup>

3 The Pharisees also came unto him, tempting him, and saying unto him, Is it lawful for a man to put away his wife for every cause?

4 And he answered and said unto them, Have ye not read,<sup>220</sup> that he which made *them* at the beginning, made them male and female,

5 And said,<sup>221</sup> For this cause shall a man leave father and mother, and shall cleave to his wife: and they twain shall be one flesh?

Mark.

CH. X. 2-12.

2 And the Pharisees came to him, and asked him, Is it lawful for a man to put away *his* wife? tempting him.

3 And he answered and said unto them, What did Moses command you?

4 And they said, Moses suffered to write a bill of divorcement, and to put *her* away.

---

<sup>0</sup> The two Evangelists go on to relate our Lord's observations about divorce and marriage; they agree in substance, which is sufficient; though they differ in the form of the dialogue, neither adhering scrupulously to the exact manner in which the words passed, though we may learn it, by comparing both. Thus Matt. v. 9, reduces to a plain assertion, what Mark informs us was a reply to an inquiry made by the disciples apart. Or, we may suppose with Le Clerc, that this assertion was first advanced to the Pharisees, and then repeated to the disciples. NEWCOME{FNS.

<sup>0</sup> Gen. i. 27.

<sup>0</sup> Gen. ii. 24.

5 And Jesus answered and said unto them, For the hardness of your heart, he wrote you this precept:

6 Wherefore they are no more twain, but one flesh. What therefore God hath joined together, let not man put asunder.

6 But from the beginning of the creation, God made them male and female.

7 They say unto him, Why did Moses then command to give a writing of divorce-ment, and to put her away?<sup>222</sup>

7 For this cause shall a man leave his father and mother, and cleave to his wife;

8 He saith unto them, Moses, because of the hardness of your hearts, suffered you to put away your wives: but from the beginning it was not so.

8 And they twain shall be one flesh: so then they are not more twain, but one flesh.

9 What, therefore, God hath joined together, let not man put asunder.

---

<sup>0</sup> Deut. xxiv. 1.

9 And I say unto you,  
Whosoever shall put  
away his wife, except *it*  
*be* for fornication, and  
shall marry another,  
committeth adultery;  
and whoso marrieth  
her which is put away,  
doth commit adultery.

10 His disciples say  
unto him, If the case  
of the man be so with  
*his* wife, it is not good  
to marry.

11 But he said unto  
them, All *men* can-  
not receive this saying,  
save *they* to whom it is  
given.

10 And in the house  
his disciples asked him  
again of the same *mat-  
ter*.

11 And he saith  
unto them, Whoso-  
ever shall put away  
his wife, and marry  
another, committeth  
adultery against her.

12 And if a woman  
shall put away her hus-  
band,<sup>223</sup> and be mar-  
ried to another, she  
committeth adultery.

---

<sup>0</sup> The practice of divorcing the husband, unwarranted by the law, had been introduced, as Josephus informs us, (Antiq. XV. vii. 10,) by Salome, sister of Herod the Great, who sent a bill of divorce to her husband Costobarus; which bad example was afterwards followed by Herodias and others. Campbell. This natural allusion to an existing illegal custom is in perfect harmony with the whole history, it being true; but it seldom if ever has a parallel in the annals of forgery.

12 For there are some eunuchs, which were so born from *their* mother's womb: and there are some eunuchs, which were made eunuchs of men: and there be eunuchs, which have made themselves eunuchs for the kingdom of heaven's sake. He that is able to receive *it*, let him receive it.

[344]

§ 105. Jesus receives and blesses little children.  
*Perea.*

Matthew.

CH. XIX. 13-15.

13 Then were there brought unto him little children, that he should put *his* hands on them, and pray: and the disciples rebuked them.

Mark.

CH. X. 13-16.

13 And they brought young children to him, that he should touch them; and *his* disciples rebuked those that brought *them*.

14 But Jesus said, Suffer little children, and forbid them not, to come unto me: for of such is the kingdom of heaven.

14 But when Jesus saw *it*, he was much displeased, and said unto them, Suffer the little children to come unto me, and forbid them not: for of such is the kingdom of God.

15 Verily I say unto you, Whosoever shall not receive the kingdom of God as a little child, he shall not enter therein.

15 And he laid *his* hands on them, and departed thence.

16 And he took them up in his arms; put *his* hands upon them, and blessed them.

Luke.

CH. XVIII. 15-17.

15 And they brought unto him also infants, that he would touch them: but when *his* disciples saw *it*, they rebuked them.

16 But Jesus called them *unto him*, and said, Suffer little children to come unto me, and forbid them not: for of such is the kingdom of God.

17 Verily, I say unto you, Whosoever shall not receive the kingdom of God as a little child, shall in no wise enter therein.

§ 106. The rich young man. Parable of the Laborers in the Vineyard. *Perea*.

Matthew.

CH. XIX. 16-30. CH. XX 1-16.

16 And behold, one came and said unto him, Good Master, what good thing shall I do that I may have eternal life?

Mark.

CH. X. 17-31.

17 And when he was gone forth into the way, there came one running, and kneeled to him, and asked him, Good Master, what shall I do that I may inherit eternal life?



17 And he said unto him, Why callest thou me good? *there is* none good but one, *that is*, God: but if thou wilt enter into life, keep the commandments.

18 He saith unto him, Which? Jesus said, Thou shalt do no murder. Thou shalt not commit adultery, Thou shalt not steal, Thou shalt not bear false witness,

19 Honour thy father and *thy* mother: and, Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself.<sup>224</sup>

20 The young man saith unto him, All these things have I kept from my youth up: what lack I yet?

18 And Jesus said unto him, Why callest thou me good? *there is* none good, but one, *that is* God.

19 Thou knowest the commandments, Do not commit adultery, Do not kill, Do not steal, Do not bear false witness, Defraud not, Honour thy father and mother.

20 And he answered and said unto him, Master, all these have I observed from my youth.

---

<sup>0</sup> Ex. xx. 12, seq. Lev. xix. 18.

21 Jesus said unto him,  
If thou wilt be perfect, go and sell that thou hast, and give to the poor, and thou shalt have treasure in heaven: and come *and* follow me.

22 But when the young man heard that saying, he went away sorrowful: for he had great possessions.

23 Then said Jesus unto his disciples, Verily, I say unto you, That a rich man shall hardly enter into the kingdom of heaven.

21 Then Jesus beholding him, loved him, and said unto him, One thing thou lackest: go thy way, sell whatsoever thou hast, and give to the poor, and thou shalt have treasure in heaven; and come, take up the cross, and follow me.

22 And he was sad at that saying, and went away grieved: for he had great possessions.

23 And Jesus looked round about, and saith unto his disciples, How hardly shall they that have riches enter into the kingdom of God!

24 And the disciples were astonished at his words. But Jesus answereth again, and saith unto them, Children, how hard is it for them that trust in riches to enter into the kingdom of God!

24 And again I say unto you, It is easier for a camel to go through the eye of a needle, than for a rich man to enter into the kingdom of God.

25 When his disciples heard *it*, they were exceedingly amazed, saying Who then can be saved?

26 But Jesus beheld *them*, and said unto them, With men this is impossible, but with God all things are possible.

27 Then answered Peter, and said unto him, Behold, we have forsaken all, and followed thee; what shall we have therefore?

25 It is easier for a camel to go through the eye of a needle, than for a rich man to enter into the kingdom of God.

26 And they were astonished out of measure, saying among themselves, Who then can be saved?

27 And Jesus, looking upon them, With men *it is* impossible, but not with God: for with God all things are possible.

28 Then Peter began to say unto him, Lo, we have left all, and have followed thee.

28 And Jesus said unto them, Verily, I say unto you, That ye which have followed me in the regeneration, when the Son of man shall sit in the throne of his glory, ye also shall sit upon twelve thrones, judging the twelve tribes of Israel.

29 And every one that hath forsaken houses, or brethren, or sisters, or father, or mother, or wife, or children, or lands, for my name's sake, shall receive a hundred-fold, and shall inherit everlasting life.

30 But many *that are* first shall be last, and the last *shall be* first.

CH. XX.

For the kingdom of heaven is like unto a man *that is* a householder, which went out early in the morning to hire labourers into his vineyard.

29 And Jesus answered and said, Verily I say unto you, There is no man that hath left house, or brethren, or sisters, or father, or mother, or wife, or children, or lands, for my sake, and the gospel's,

30 But he shall receive a hundred-fold now in this time, houses, and brethren, and sisters, and mothers, and children, and lands, with persecutions; and in the world to come, eternal life.

31 But many *that are* first shall be last; and the last first.

2 And when he had agreed with the labourers for a penny a day, he sent them into his vineyard.

3 And he went out about the third hour, and saw others standing idle in the market-place,

4 And said unto them, Go ye also into the vineyard; and whatsoever is right, I will give you. And they went their way.

5 Again he went out about the sixth and ninth hour, and did likewise.

6 And about the eleventh hour he went out, and found others standing idle, and saith unto them, Why stand ye here all the day idle?

7 They say unto him, Because no man hath hired us. He saith unto them, Go ye also into the vineyard; and whatsoever is right, *that* shall ye receive.

8 So when evening was come, the lord of the vineyard saith unto his steward, Call the labourers, and give them *their* hire, beginning from the last unto the first.

9 And when they came that *were hired* about the eleventh hour, they received every man a penny.

10 But when the first came, they supposed that they should have received more; and they likewise received every man a penny.

11 And when they had received *it*, they murmured against the good man of the house,

12 Saying, These last have wrought *but* one hour, and thou hast made them equal unto us, which have borne the burden and heat of the day.

13 But he answered one of them, and said, Friend, I do thee no wrong: didst not thou agree with me for a penny?

14 Take *that* thine *is*, and go thy way: I will give unto this last, even as unto thee.

15 Is it not lawful for me to do what I will with mine own? is thine eye evil because I am good?

16 So the last shall be first, and the first last: for many be called, but few chosen.

Luke.

CH. XVIII. 18-30.

18 And a certain ruler asked him, saying, Good Master, what shall I do to inherit eternal life?

19 And Jesus said unto him, Why callest thou me good? none *is* good, save one, *that is* God.

20 Thou knowest the commandments, Do not commit adultery, Do not kill, Do not steal, Do not bear false witness, Honour thy father and thy mother.

21 And he said, All these have I kept from my youth up.

22 Now, when Jesus heard these things, he said unto him, Yet lackest thou one thing: sell all that thou hast, and distribute unto the poor, and thou shalt have treasure in heaven: and come, follow me.

23 And when he heard this, he was very sorrowful: for he was very rich.

24 And when Jesus saw that he was very sorrowful, he said, How hardly shall they that have riches enter into the kingdom of God!



25 For it is easier for a camel to go through a needle's eye, than for a rich man to enter into the kingdom of God!

26 And they that heard *it*, said, Who then can be saved?

27 And he said, The things which are impossible with men, are possible with God.

28 Then Peter said, Lo, we have left all, and followed thee.

29 And he said unto them, Verily, I say unto you, There is no man that hath left house, or parents, or brethren, or wife, or children, for the kingdom of God's sake,

30 Who shall not receive manifold more in this present time, and in the world to come life everlasting.

[350]

§ 107. Jesus a third time foretels his Death and Resurrection. (See § 74, § 77.) *Perea*.

Matthew.

CH. XX. 17-19.

17 And Jesus, going up to Jerusalem, took the twelve disciples apart in the way, and said unto them,

18 Behold, we go up to Jerusalem; and the Son of man shall be betrayed unto the chief priests, and unto the scribes, and they shall condemn him to death,

19 And shall deliver him to the Gentiles to mock, and to scourge, and to crucify *him*: and the third day he shall rise again.

Mark.

CH. X. 32-34.

32 And they were in the way, going up to Jerusalem; and Jesus went before them: and they were amazed; and as they followed, they were afraid. And he took again the twelve, and began to tell them what things should happen unto him.

33 *Saying*, Behold, we go up to Jerusalem; and the Son of man shall be delivered unto the chief priests, and unto the scribes; and they shall condemn him to death, and shall deliver him to the Gentiles;

34 And they shall mock him, and shall scourge him, and shall spit upon him, and shall kill him: and the third day he shall rise again.

Luke.

CH. XVIII. 31-34.

31 Then he took *unto him* the twelve, and said unto them, Behold, we go up to Jerusalem, and all things that are written by the prophets concerning the Son of man shall be accomplished.

32 For he shall be delivered unto the Gentiles, and shall be mocked, and spitefully entreated, and spitted on;

33 And they shall scourge *him*, and put him to death: and the third day he shall rise again.

34 And they understood none of these things: and this saying was hid from them, neither knew they the things which were spoken.

§ 108. James and John prefer their ambitious request.  
*Perea.*

Matthew.

CH. XX. 20-28.

20 Then came to him the mother of Zebedee's children, with her sons, worshipping *him*, and desiring a certain thing of him.

21 And he said unto him, Grant that these my two sons may sit, the one on thy right hand, and the other on thy left, to eat thy bread which thou shalt eat.  
her, What wilt thou?  
She saith<sup>225</sup>

22 But Jesus answered and said, Ye know not what ye ask. Are ye able to drink of the cup that I shall drink of, and to be baptized with the baptism that I am baptized with? They say unto him, We are able.

---

<sup>0</sup> As all three came to Jesus, the action of the sons expressed, that they joined in the petition uttered by the mother. They are therefore represented as saying what was said with their consent, and probably by their suggestion. Luke xix. 11, will show how suitable this request was to the time, according to the ideas of our Lord's disciples. NEWCOME{FNS.

23 And he saith unto them, Ye shall drink indeed of my cup, and be baptized with the baptism that I am baptized with; but, to sit on my right hand, and on my left, is not mine to give, but *it shall be given to them* for whom it is prepared of my Father.

24 And when the ten heard *it*, they were moved with indignation against the two brethren.

25 But Jesus called them *unto him*, and said, Ye know that the princes of the Gentiles exercise dominion over them, and they that are great exercise authority upon them.

26 But it shall not  
be so among you:  
but whosoever will be  
great among you, let  
him be your minister;  
27 And whosoever will  
be chief among you, let  
him be your servant:

28 Even as the Son of  
man came not to be  
ministered unto, but to  
minister, and to give  
his life a ransom for  
many.

[352]

# § 109. The healing of two blind men near Jericho.

Matthew.

CH. XX. 29-34.

29 And as they de-  
parted from Jericho,  
a great multitude fol-  
lowed him.

Mark.

CH. X. 46-52.

46 And they came to  
Jericho: and as he  
went out of Jericho  
with his disciples, and  
a great number of peo-  
ple, blind Bartimeus,  
the son of Timeus, sat  
by the highway side,  
begging.

30 And behold, two blind men sitting by the wayside, when they heard that Jesus passed by, cried out, saying, Have mercy on us, O Lord, *thou* son of David.

31 And the multitude rebuked them, because they should hold their peace: but they cried the more, saying, Have mercy on us, O Lord, *thou* son of David.

32 And Jesus stood still, and called them, and said, What will ye that I shall do unto you?

47 And when he heard that it was Jesus of Nasareth, he began to cry out and say, Jesus, *thou* son of David, have mercy on me.

48 And many charged him that he should hold his peace: but he cried the more a great deal, *Thou* son of David, have mercy on me.

49 And Jesus stood still, and commanded him to be called: and they call the blind man, saying unto him, Be of good comfort, rise; he calleth thee.

50 And he, casting away his garment, rose, and came to Jesus.

33 They say unto him,  
Lord, that our eyes  
may be opened.

51 And Jesus answered  
and said unto him,  
What wilt thou that I  
should do unto thee?  
The blind man said  
unto him, Lord, that  
I might receive my  
sight.

34 So Jesus had com-  
passion *on them*, and  
touched their eyes: and  
immediately their eyes  
received sight, and  
they followed him.

52 And Jesus said unto  
him, Go thy way; thy  
faith hath made thee  
whole. And immedi-  
ately he received his  
sight, and followed Je-  
sus in the way.

Luke.

CH. XVIII. 35-43. CH.

XIX. 1.

35 And it came to pass, unto Jericho, a certain blind man sat by the wayside  
that as he was come  
nigh<sup>226</sup>

---

<sup>0</sup> According to St. Mark, Jesus comes to Jericho; by which may be meant that he is a temporary inhabitant of that city. See Mark vi. 1, and viii. 22. Jesus therefore may be represented, (Matt. xx. 29; Mark x. 46,) not as *finally leaving* Jericho for Jerusalem, but as *occasionally going out* of Jericho; in which city he had made some abode, it matters not for how few days. See Mark xi. 19. Jericho was a very considerable city; and we do not read that it was visited by our Lord at any other time. We may therefore suppose that Jesus, accompanied by his disciples and the multitude, and intent on his great work of propagating the gospel, went out of this city, knowing that a fit occasion of working a miracle would present itself; and that on his return, as he drew nigh unto Jericho, (Luke xviii. 35,) he restored the blind men to sight. It is likewise probable that Jesus, having given this proof of his divine mission,



36 And hearing the multitude pass by, he asked what it meant.

37 And they told him, that Jesus of Nazareth passeth by.

38 And he cried, saying, Jesus, *thou* son of David, have mercy on me.

39 And they which went before rebuked him, that he should hold his peace: but he cried so much the more, *Thou* son of David, have mercy on me.

40 And Jesus stood and commanded him to be brought unto him: and when he was come near, he asked him,

---

or foreseeing that so great a miracle would create too much attention in the people, prudently and humbly passed through Jericho on his return to it, (Luke xix. 1,) and continued his journey to Jerusalem.

As to the remaining difficulty, that Matthew mentions two blind men, and the other Evangelists only one, I must refer to Le Clerc's maxim, before quoted; (see § 57, note): adding that Bartimeus may have been the more remarkable of the two, and the more eminent for his faith in Jesus. NEWCOME{FNS.

41 Saying, What wilt thou that I shall do unto thee? And he said, Lord, that I may receive my sight.

42 And Jesus said unto him, Receive thy sight: thy faith hath saved thee.

43 And immediately he received his sight, and followed him, glorifying God: and all the people, when they saw *it*, gave praise unto God.

CH. XIX.

And *Jesus* entered and passed through Jericho.

[354]

§ 110. The visit to Zaccheus. Parable of the ten Minæ. *Jericho*.

Luke.

CH. XIX. 2-28.

2 And behold *there* was a man named Zaccheus, which was the chief among the publicans, and he was rich.

3 And he sought to see  
Jesus who he was; and  
could not for the press,  
because he was little of  
stature.

4 And he ran before,  
and climbed up into  
a sycamore-tree to see  
him; for he was to pass  
that *way*.

5 And when Jesus  
came to the place, he  
looked up, and saw  
him, and said unto him,  
Zaccheus, make haste,  
and come down: for  
to-day I must abide at  
thy house.

6 And he made haste,  
and came down, and  
received him joyfully.

7 And when they saw  
*it*, they all murmured,  
saying, That he was  
gone to be guest with a  
man that is a sinner.

8 And Zaccheus stood,  
and said unto the Lord;  
Behold, Lord, the half  
of my goods I give to  
the poor; and if I have  
taken any thing from  
any man, by false ac-  
cusation, I restore *him*  
four-fold.

9 And Jesus said unto  
him, This day is sal-  
vation come to this  
house, forasmuch as he  
also is a son of Abra-  
ham.

10 For the Son of man  
is come to seek and  
to save that which was  
lost.

11 And as they heard  
these things, he added  
and spake a para-  
ble, because he was  
nigh to Jerusalem, and  
because they thought  
that the kingdom of  
God should immedi-  
ately appear.

12 He said therefore, A certain nobleman went into a far country to receive for himself a kingdom, and to return.<sup>227</sup>

13 And he called his ten servants, and delivered them ten pounds, and said unto them, Occupy till I come.

14 But his citizens hated him, and sent a message after him, saying, We will not have this *man* to reign over us.

---

<sup>0</sup> Here is a fine allusion to historical facts, first observed by Le Clerc. "Thus Herod the Great solicited the kingdom of Judea at Rome, (Jos. Antiq. Jud. XIV. xiv. 4, 5; XV. vi. 6, 7,) and was appointed king by the interest of Anthony with the senate; and afterwards he sailed to Rhodes, divested himself of his diadem, and received it again from Augustus. In like manner his sons Archelaus and Antipas repaired to the imperial city, that they might obtain the kingdom on their father's death; and we read, (Jos. Antiq. Jud. XIV. xi. 1, and xiii. 2,) that the Jews sent an embassy thither, with accusations against Archelaus." NEWCOME{FNS, Obs. on our Lord, p. 83.

15 And it came to pass, that when he was returned, having received the kingdom, then he commanded these servants to be called unto him, to whom he had given the money, that he might know how much every man had gained by trading.

16 Then came the first, saying, Lord, thy pound hath gained ten pounds.

17 And he said unto him, Well, thou good servant: because thou hast been faithful in a very little, have thou authority over ten cities.

18 And the second came, saying, Lord, thy pound hath gained five pounds.

19 And he said likewise to him, Be thou also over five cities.

20 And another came,  
saying, Lord, behold  
*here is* thy pound,  
which I have kept laid  
up in a napkin:

21 For I feared thee,  
because thou art an  
austere man: thou tak-  
est up that thou layedst  
not down, and reapest  
that thou didst not sow.

22 And he saith unto  
him, Out of thine own  
mouth will I judge  
thee, *thou* wicked ser-  
vant. Thou knewest  
that I was an austere  
man, taking up that  
I laid not down, and  
reaping that I did not  
sow:

23 Wherefore then  
gavest not thou my  
money into the bank,  
that at my coming I  
might have required  
mine own with usury?

24 And he said unto  
them that stood by,  
Take from him the  
pound, and give *it*  
to him that hath ten  
pounds.

25 (And they said unto him, Lord, he hath ten pounds.)

26 For I say unto you, That unto every one which hath, shall be given; and from him that hath not, even that he hath shall be taken away from him.

27 But those mine enemies, which would not that I should reign over them, bring hither, and slay *them* before me.

28 And when he had thus spoken, he went before, ascending up to Jerusalem.

[358]

§ 111. Jesus arrives at Bethany six days before the Passover. *Bethany*.

John.

CH. XI. 55-57. CH.

XII. 1, 9-11.



55 And the Jews' passover was nigh at hand: and many went out of the country up to Jerusalem before the passover, to purify themselves.

56 Then sought they for Jesus, and spake among themselves, as they stood in the temple, What think ye, that he will not come to the feast?

57 Now both the chief priests and the Pharisees had given a commandment, that, if any man knew where he were, he should shew *it*, that they might take him.

## CH. XII.

THEN Jesus, six days before the passover, came to Bethany, where Lazarus was which had been dead, whom he raised from the dead.

9 Much people of the Jews therefore knew that he was there: and they came, not for Jesus' sake only, but that they might see Lazarus also, whom he had raised from the dead.

10 But the chief priests consulted that they might put Lazarus also to death;

11 Because that by reason of him many of the Jews went away, and believed on Jesus.

## Part VII. Our Lord's Public Entry Into Jerusalem, And The Subsequent Transactions Before The Fourth Passover.

TIME. *Five days.*

[362]

### § 112. Our Lord's public entry into Jerusalem. (First Day Of The Week.) *Bethany. Jerusalem.*

and they set *him* thereon.<sup>7</sup> And they brought the colt to Jesus, and cast their garments on him; and he sat upon him. 8 And a very great multitude spread their garments in the way: others cut down branches from the trees, and strewed *them* in the way.<sup>8</sup> And many spread their garments in the way: and others cut down branches off the trees, and strewed *them* in the way. 9 And the multitudes that went before, and that followed, cried, saying, Hosanna to the Son of David: Blessed *is* he that cometh in the name of the Lord: Hosanna in the highest.<sup>9</sup> And they that went before, and they that followed, cried, saying, Hosanna: Blessed *is* he that cometh in the name of the Lord. 10 Blessed *be* the kingdom of our father David, that cometh in the name of the Lord: Hosanna in the highest. 10 And when he was come into Jerusalem, all the city was moved, saying, Who is this? 11 And the multitude said, This is Jesus the prophet of Nazareth of Galilee. 14 And the blind and the lame came to him in the temple; and he healed them. 15 And when the chief priests and scribes saw the wonderful things that he did, and the children crying in the temple, and saying, Hosanna to the son of David; they were sore displeased, 16 And said unto him, Hearest thou what these say? And Jesus saith unto them, Yea: have ye never read, Out of the mouth of babes and sucklings thou hast perfected praise?<sup>230</sup> 17 And he left them, and went out of the city into Bethany, and he lodged there.<sup>11</sup> And Jesus entered into Jerusalem, and into the temple: and when he had looked round about upon all things, and now the even-tide was come, he went out unto Bethany, with the twelve.

Matthew.

CH. XXI. 1-11, 14-17.

Mark.

CH. XI. 1-11.

---

<sup>230</sup> Ps. viii. 3.

And when they drew  
nigh unto Jerusalem,  
and were come to  
Bethphage, unto the  
mount of Olives, then  
sent Jesus two disci-  
ples,

2 Saying unto them,  
Go into the village  
over against you, and  
straightway ye shall  
find an *ass* tied, and  
a colt with her: loose  
*them*, and bring *them*  
unto me.

3 And if any *man* say  
aught unto you, ye  
shall say, The Lord  
hath need of them;  
and straightway he will  
send them.

4 All this was done,  
that it might be ful-  
filled which was spo-  
ken by the prophet,  
saying,<sup>228</sup>

And when they ca-  
nigh to Jerusalem,  
unto Bethphage, a  
Bethany, at the mount  
of Olives, he sende  
forth two of his disci-  
ples,

2 And saith unto the  
Go your way into  
village over again  
you: and as soon  
ye be entered into  
ye shall find a colt  
tied, whereon never  
man sat; loose him,  
and bring *him*.

3 And if any man s  
unto you, Why do  
this? say ye that  
The Lord hath need of him  
and straightway he will  
send him hither.

---

<sup>0</sup> Zech. ix. 9.

5 Tell ye the daughter  
of Sion, Behold, thy  
King cometh unto thee,  
meek, and sitting upon  
an ass, and a colt the  
foal of an ass.

6 And the disciples  
went, and did as Jesus  
commanded them,

4 And they went their  
way and found the colt  
tied by the door with-  
out, in a place where  
two ways met; and  
they loose him.

5 And certain of them  
that stood there said  
unto them, What do ye,  
loosing the colt?

6 And they said unto  
them even as Jesus had  
commanded: and they  
let them go.

7 And brought the ass Dissert. IV. MICHAELIS {FNS

and the colt, and put on  
them their clothes,<sup>229</sup>,

Ant. vol. ii. p.

245. "*Thereon*," that

is, on the garments.

The princes of Israel  
were forbidden to mul-  
tiply *horses* to them-  
selves. Deut. xvii.

16, and xx. 1. This

law was imposed as a  
standing mark of dis-  
tinction between them

and other nations; and  
a trial of prince and  
people, whether they

had confidence in God  
their deliverer, who

wanted neither horses  
nor footmen to fight

his battles. It was ob-  
served for near four

hundred years, until  
some time in the reign

of Solomon; for David  
himself rode on a

mule; as did Solomon  
also on the day of his

coronation. 1 Kings

i. 33, 34. See Judges

x. 4, and xii. 14;

~~1 Saml. xxv. 20.~~

Subsequently the kings

of Israel and Judah vi-  
olated this command,

by copying the exam-  
ple of the neighbouring

<sup>0</sup> Thus acknowledging him to be their king; for this was a custom observed

, vol. ii. pp. 439-449.

Luke.

CH. XIX. 29-44.

29 And it came to pass,  
when he was come  
nigh to Bethphage and  
Bethany, at the mount  
called *the mount* of  
Olives, he sent two of  
his disciples,

30 Saying, Go ye into  
the village over against  
*you*; in the which  
at your entering ye  
shall find a colt tied,  
whereon yet never man  
sat: loose him, and  
bring *him hither*.

31 And if any man ask  
you, Why do ye loose  
*him*? thus shall ye say  
unto him, Because the  
Lord hath need of him.

32 And they that were  
sent went their way,  
and found even as he  
had said unto them.

John.

CH. XII. 12-19.

12 On the next day,  
much people that were  
come to the feast, when  
they heard that Je-  
sus was coming to  
Jerusalem,

---

by the people when they found that God had appointed a man to the kingdom. When Jehu was anointed King by Elisha the prophet, at the command of God, and his captains knew what was done, *every man took his garment and spread it under him on the top of the steps, and blew the trumpets, saying Jehu is king.*  
2 King ix. 13. A. CLARKE{FNS. See JENNINGS{FNS

33 And as they were  
loosing the colt, the  
owners thereof said  
unto them, Why loose  
ye the colt?

34 And they said, The  
Lord hath need of him.

35 And they brought  
him to Jesus: and  
they cast their gar-  
ments upon the colt  
and they set Jesus  
thereon.

36 And as he went,  
they spread their  
clothes in the way.

37 And when he was  
come nigh, even now  
at the descent of the  
mount of Olives, the  
whole multitude of the  
disciples began to re-  
joice and praise God  
with a loud voice for  
all the mighty works  
that they had seen;

38 Saying, Blessed *be*  
the King that cometh in  
the name of the Lord:  
Peace in heaven, and  
glory in the highest.

13 Took branches of  
palm-trees, and went  
forth to meet him,  
and cried, Hosanna;  
Blessed *is* the King  
of Israel that cometh  
in the name of the  
Lord.<sup>231</sup>

14 And Jesus, when  
he had found a young  
ass, sat thereon; as it is  
written,

---

<sup>0</sup> Ps. cxviii. 26.



15 Fear not, daughter  
of Sion: behold, thy  
King cometh, sitting  
on an ass's colt.

16 These things understood not his disciples at the first: but when Jesus was glorified, then remembered they that these things were written of him, and *that* they had done these things unto him.

17 The people therefore that was with him when he called Lazarus out of his grave, and raised him from the dead, bare record.

18 For this cause the people also met him, for that they heard that he had done this miracle.

39 And some of the Pharisees from among the multitude said unto him, Master, rebuke thy disciples.

19 The Pharisees therefore said among themselves, Perceive ye how ye prevail nothing? behold, the world is gone after him.

40 And he answered  
and said unto them,  
I tell you, that if  
these should hold their  
peace, the stones  
would immediately cry  
out.

41 And when he was  
come near, he beheld  
the city, and wept over  
it.

42 Saying, If thou  
hadst known, even  
thou, at least in this thy  
day, the things *which*  
*belong* unto thy peace!  
but now they are hid  
from thine eyes.

43 For the days shall  
come upon thee, that  
thine enemies shall  
cast a trench about  
thee, and compass thee  
round, and keep thee in  
on every side,

44 And shall lay thee  
even with the ground,  
and thy children within  
thee: and they shall not  
leave in thee one stone  
upon another: because  
thou knewest not the  
time of thy visitation.

§ 113. The barren Fig-tree. The cleansing of the Temple. (Second Day Of The Week.) *Bethany. Jerusalem.*

Matthew.

CH. XXI. 12, 13, 18, 19.

18 Now in the morning, as he returned into the city, he hungered.

19 And when he saw a fig-tree in the way, he came to it, and found nothing thereon, but leaves only, and said unto it, Let no fruit grow on thee henceforward for ever. And presently the fig-tree withered away.

Mark.

CH. XI. 12-19.

12 And on the morrow, when they were come from Bethany, he was hungry.

13 And seeing a fig-tree afar off, having leaves, he came, if haply he might find any thing thereon: and when he came to it, he found nothing but leaves: for the time of figs was not *yet*.

14 And Jesus answered and said unto it, No man eat fruit of thee hereafter for ever. And his disciples heard *it*.

12 And Jesus went into the temple of God, and cast out all them that sold and bought in the temple, and overthrew the tables of the money-changers, and the seats of them that sold doves,

13 And said unto them, It is written,<sup>232</sup> My house shall be called the house of prayer, but ye have made it a den of thieves.

15 And they come to Jerusalem: and Jesus went into the temple, and began to cast out them that sold and bought in the temple, and overthrew the tables of the money-changers, and the seats of them that sold doves:

16 And would not suffer that any man should carry *any* vessel through the temple.

17 And he taught, saying unto them, Is it not written, My house shall be called, of all nations, the house of prayer? but ye have made it a den of thieves.

18 And the scribes and chief priests heard *it*, and sought how they might destroy him: for they feared him, because all the people was astonished at his doctrine.

---

<sup>0</sup> Isa. lvi. 7. Jer. vii. 11.

19 And when even was  
come, he went out of  
the city.

Luke.

CH. XIX. 45-48. CH.  
XXI. 37, 38.

45 And he went into  
the temple, and began  
to cast out them that  
sold therein, and them  
that bought,

46 Saying unto them,  
It is written, My house  
is the house of prayer,  
but ye have made it a  
den of thieves.

47 And he taught daily  
in the temple. But the  
chief priests, and the  
scribes, and the chief  
of the people sought to  
destroy him,

48 And could not find  
what they might do:  
for all the people were  
very attentive to hear  
him.

CH. XXI.

37 And in the day-time  
he was teaching in the  
temple; and at night he  
went out, and abode in  
the mount that is called  
*the mount* of Olives.

38 And all the peo-  
ple came early in the  
morning to him in the  
temple, for to hear him.

§ 114. The barren Fig-tree withers away. (Third Day  
Of The Week.) *Between Bethany and Jerusalem.*

Matthew.

CH. XXI. 20-22.

20 And when the dis- saw *it*, they marvelled, saying, How soon is the fig-  
ciples<sup>233</sup>

---

<sup>0</sup> Matth. xxi. 20, *the disciples*. Mark xi. 21, *Peter*. These may be thus reconciled. Peter addresses himself to Jesus: the disciples turn their attention to the object; Jesus addresses all. Or, Peter's remark may be attributed to all the disciples. See § 141. NEWCOME{FNS.

21 Jesus answered and said unto them, Verily, I say unto you, If ye have faith, and doubt not, ye shall not only do this *which is done* to the fig-tree, but also, if ye shall say unto this mountain, Be thou removed, and be thou cast into the sea; it shall be done.

22 And all things whatsoever ye shall ask in prayer, believing, ye shall receive.

[368]

§ 115. Christ's authority questioned. Parable of the two Sons. (Third Day Of The Week.) *Jerusalem.*

Matthew.

CH. XXI. 23-32.

23 And when he was come into the temple, the chief priests and the elders of the people came unto him as he was teaching, and said, By what authority doest thou these things? and who gave thee this authority?

Mark.

CH. XI. 27-33.

27 And they come again to Jerusalem: and as he was walking in the temple, there come to him the chief priests, and the scribes, and the elders,



- 24 And Jesus answered and said unto them, I also will ask you one thing, which if ye tell me, I in like wise will tell you by what authority I do these things.
- 25 The baptism of John, whence was it? from heaven, or of men? And they reasoned with themselves, saying, If we shall say, From heaven; he will say unto us, Why did ye not then believe him?
- 28 And say unto him, By what authority doest thou these things? and who gave thee this authority to do these things?
- 29 And Jesus answered and said unto them, I will also ask of you one question, and answer me, and I will tell you by what authority I do these things.
- 30 The baptism of John, was *it* from heaven, or of men? answer me.
- 31 And they reasoned with themselves, saying, If we shall say, From heaven; he will say, Why then did ye not believe him?

26 But if we shall say,  
Of men; we fear the  
people: for all hold  
John as a prophet.

27 And they answered  
Jesus, and said, We  
cannot tell. And he  
said unto them, Nei-  
ther tell I you by what  
authority I do these  
things.

28 But what think ye?  
*A certain* man had two  
sons; and he came to  
the first, and said, Son,  
go work to-day in my  
vineyard.

29 He answered and  
said, I will not; but  
afterward he repented,  
and went.

30 And he came to the  
second, and said like-  
wise. And he answered  
and said, I *go*, sir: and  
went not.

32 But if we shall say,  
Of men; they feared  
the people: for all *men*  
counted John, that he  
was a prophet indeed.

33 And they answered  
and said unto Jesus,  
We cannot tell. And  
Jesus answering saith  
unto them, Neither do  
I tell you by what  
authority I do these  
things.

31 Whether of them  
twain did the will of  
*his* father? They say  
unto him, The first. Je-  
sus saith unto them,  
Verily I say unto you,  
That the publicans and  
the harlots go into the  
kingdom of God be-  
fore you.

32 For John came unto  
you in the way of righ-  
teousness, and ye be-  
lieved him not: but the  
publicans and the har-  
lots believed him: and  
ye, when ye had seen  
*it*, repented not after-  
ward, that ye might be-  
lieve him.

Luke.

CH. XX. 1-8.

And it came to pass,  
*that* on one of those  
days, as he taught  
the people in the  
temple, and preached  
the gospel, the chief  
priests and the scribes  
came upon *him*, with  
the elders,

2 And spake unto him,  
saying, Tell us, By  
what authority doest  
thou these things? or  
who is he that gave  
thee this authority?

3 And he answered and  
said unto them, I will  
also ask you one thing;  
and answer me:

4 The baptism of John,  
was it from heaven, or  
of men?

5 And they reasoned  
with themselves, say-  
ing, If we shall say,  
From heaven; he will  
say, Why then be-  
lieved ye him not?

6 But and if we say,  
Of men; all the people  
will stone us: for they  
be persuaded that John  
was a prophet.

7 And they answered,  
That they could not tell  
whence *it was*.

8 And Jesus said unto  
them, Neither tell I you  
by what authority I do  
these things.

§ 116. Parable of the wicked husbandmen. (Third Day Of The Week.) *Jerusalem.*

Matthew.

CH. XXI. 33-46.

33 Hear another parable; There was a certain householder, which planted a vineyard, and hedged it round about, and digged a wine-press in it, and built a tower, and let it out to husbandmen, and went into a far country:

34 And when the time of the fruit drew near, he sent his servants<sup>234</sup> to the husbandmen, that they might receive the fruits of it.

Mark.

CH. XII.

And he began to speak unto them by parables. A *certain* man planted a vineyard, and set an hedge about *it*, and digged a *place* for the wine-fat, and built a tower, and let it out to husbandmen, and went into a far country.

2 And at the season that he might receive from the husbandmen a servant,<sup>235</sup>

---

<sup>0</sup> Many servants are sent; some of whom are beaten, some slain, some stoned. Here St. Matthew is more circumstantial than the other two Evangelists, who mention only one servant as sent, and one of the three injurious modes of treatment. Some suppose that this servant was chief among the rest.

<sup>0</sup> Here Mark mentions one servant among the others, as stoned wounded in the head, and sent away dishonoured; and Luke selects the circumstance that that one was beaten. Then Mark and Luke mention a third message, about which Matthew is silent. But, “qui pauciora memorat, plura non negat.” St. Luke may be understood as saying that a mortal wound was inflicted on the third messenger. NEWCOME{FNS.

35 And the husbandmen took his servants, and beat one, and killed another, and stoned another.

36 Again he sent other servants more than the first: and they did unto them likewise.

37 But last of all, he sent unto them his son, saying, They will reverence my son.

38 But when the husbandmen saw the son, they said among themselves, This is the heir; come, let us kill him, and let us seize on his inheritance.

3 And they caught *him*, and beat him, and sent *him* away empty.

4 And again he sent unto them another servant: and at him they cast stones, and wounded *him* in the head, and sent *him* away shamefully handled.

5 And again he sent another; and him they killed, and many others; beating some, and killing some.

6 Having yet therefore one son, his well-beloved, he sent him also last unto them, saying, They will reverence my son.

7 But those husbandmen said among themselves, This is the heir; come, let us kill him, and the inheritance shall be ours.

39 And they caught him, and cast *him* out of the vineyard, and slew *him*.

40 When the lord therefore of the vineyard cometh, what will he do unto those husbandmen?

41 They say unto him, He will miserably destroy those wicked men, and will let out *his* vineyard unto other husbandmen, which shall render him the fruits in their seasons.

42 Jesus saith unto them, Did ye never read in the scriptures, The stone which the builders rejected, the same is become the head of the corner: this is the Lord's doing, and it is marvellous in our eyes?<sup>236</sup>

8 And they took him, and killed *him*, and cast *him* out of the vineyard.

9 What shall therefore the lord of the vineyard do? He will come and destroy the husbandmen, and will give the vineyard unto others.

10 And have ye not read this scripture; The stone which the builders rejected is become the head of the corner:

---

<sup>0</sup> Ps. cxviii. 22.

43 Therefore say I unto you, The kingdom of God shall be taken from you, and given to a nation bringing forth the fruits thereof.

43 Therefore say I unto you, The kingdom of God shall be taken from you, and given to a nation bringing forth the fruits thereof.

44 And whosoever shall fall on this stone, shall be broken: but on whomsoever it shall fall, it will grind him to powder.<sup>237</sup>

45 And when the chief priests and Pharisees had heard his parables, they perceived that he spake of them.

46 But when they sought to lay hands on him, they feared the multitude, because they took him for a prophet.

11 This was the Lord's doing, and it is marvelous in our eyes?

12 And they sought to lay hold on him, but feared the people; for they knew that he had spoken the parable against them: and they left him, and went their way.

---

<sup>0</sup> Isa. viii. 14, seq. Zech. xii. 3. Dan. ii. 34, seq., 44, seq.



Luke.

CH. XX. 9-19.

9 Then began he to speak to the people this parable: A certain man planted a vineyard, and let it forth to husbandmen, and went into a far Country for a long time.

10 And at the season he sent a servant to the husbandmen, that they should give him of the fruit of the vineyard: but the husbandmen beat him, and sent *him* away empty.

11 And again he sent another servant: and they beat him also, and entreated *him* shamefully, and sent him away empty.

12 And again he sent a third: and they wounded him also, and cast *him* out.

---

13 Then said the lord of the vineyard, What shall I do? I will send my beloved son: it may be they will reverence *him* when they see him.

14 But when the husbandmen saw him, they reasoned among themselves, saying, This is the heir: come, let us kill him, that the inheritance may be ours.

15 So they cast him out of the vineyard, and killed *him*. What therefore shall the lord of the vineyard do unto them?

16 He shall come and destroy these husbandmen, and shall give the vineyard to others. And when they heard it, they said, God forbid.

17 And he beheld them, and said, What is this then that is written, The stone which the builders rejected, the same is become the head of the corner?

18 Whosoever shall fall upon that stone, shall be broken: but on whomsoever it shall fall, it will grind him to powder.

19 And the chief priests and the scribes the same hour sought to lay hands on him; and they feared the people: for they perceived that he had spoken this parable against them.

[372]

§ 117. Parable of the marriage of the King's Son.  
(Third Day Of The Week.) *Jerusalem.*

Matthew.

CH. XXII. 1-14.

And Jesus answered  
and spake unto them  
again by parables, and  
said,

2 The kingdom of  
heaven is like unto  
a certain king, which  
made a marriage for  
his son,

3 And sent forth his  
servants to call them  
that were bidden to  
the wedding: and they  
would not come.

4 Again he sent forth  
other servants, say-  
ing, Tell them which  
are bidden, Behold, I  
have prepared my din-  
ner: my oxen and *my*  
fatlings *are* killed, and  
all things *are* ready:  
come unto the mar-  
riage.

5 But they made light  
of *it*, and went their  
ways, one to his farm,  
another to his mer-  
chandise.

6 And the remnant  
took his servants, and  
entreated *them* spite-  
fully, and slew *them*.

7 But when the king heard *thereof*, he was wroth: and he sent forth his armies, and destroyed those murderers, and burned up their city.

8 Then saith he to his servants, The wedding is ready, but they which were bidden were not worthy.

9 Go ye therefore into the highways, and as many as ye shall find, bid to the marriage.

10 So those servants went out into the highways, and gathered together all as many as they found, both bad and good: and the wedding was furnished with guests.

11 And when the king came in to see the guests, he saw there a man which had not on a wedding-garment:

12 And he saith unto him, Friend, how camest thou in hither, not having a wedding-garment? And he was speechless.

13 Then said the king to the servants, Bind him hand and foot, and take him away, and cast *him* into outer darkness: there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth.<sup>238</sup>

14 For many are called, but few *are* chosen.

[374]

---

<sup>0</sup> In the East, where the fashions of dress rarely if ever change, much of their riches consists in the number and splendour of their robes, or *caffetans*. Presents of garments are frequently alluded to in Scripture. Gen. xlv. 22. 2 Chron. ix. 24. Judges xiv. 12. 2 Kings v. 5. Ezra ii. 69. Neh. vii. 70, where “the Tirshatha gave five hundred and thirty priests’ garments.”

Presents were considered as tokens of honour;—not meant as offers of payment or enrichment, (1 Sam. ix. 7); and especially presents of dresses. 1 Sam. xviii. 4. Luke xv. 22. *Tavernier*, p. 43, mentions a *nazar*, whose virtue so pleased a king of Persia, that he caused himself to be disappareled, and gave his own habit to the *nazar*, which is *the greatest honour a king of Persia can bestow on a subject*.

Such presents are given by kings on great occasions, especially at the marriages of their children. The Sultan Achmet, at the marriage of his eldest daughter, “gave presents to above 20,000 persons.” *Knolles's Hist. of the Turks*, p. 1311. So Ahasuerus “gave gifts, *according to the state of the king*.” *Esth.* ii. 18.

The king gives his garment of honour *before* the wearer is admitted into his presence;—*De la Mottraye's Trav.* p. 199; (Does this illustrate Zech. iii. 3,

§ 118. Insidious question of the Pharisees. Tribute to Cesar. (Third Day Of The Week.) *Jerusalem*.

Matthew.

CH. XXII. 15-22.

15 Then went the Pharisees, and took counsel how they might entangle him in *his* talk.

16 And they sent out unto him their disciples, with the Herodians, saying, Master, we know that thou art true, and teachest the way of God in truth, neither carest thou for any *man*: for thou regardest not the person of men.

17 Tell us therefore, What thinkest thou? Is it lawful to give tribute unto Cesar, or not?

Mark.

CH. XII. 13-17.

13 And they send unto him certain of the Pharisees, and of the Herodians, to catch him in *his* words.

14 And when they were come, they say unto him, Master, we know that thou art true, and carest for no man: for thou regardest not the person of men, but teachest the way of God in truth: Is it lawful to give tribute to Cesar, or not?

---

4?)—and would resent it if any, having received robes of him, should appear in his presence without wearing these marks of his liberality. And to refuse such favours, when offered, is considered as one of the greatest indignities. Sir John Chardin relates an instance where such a refusal cost a vizier his life. See 4 CALM. DICT. {FNS pp. 64, 126, 514.

18 But Jesus perceived their wickedness, and said, Why tempt ye me, ye hypocrites?

19 Shew me the tribute-money. And they brought unto him a penny.

20 And he saith unto them, Whose *is* this image, and superscription?

21 They say unto him, Cesar's. Then saith he unto them, Render therefore unto Cesar, the things which are Cesar's; and unto God, the things that are God's.

22 When they had heard *these words*, they marvelled, and left him, and went their way.

15 Shall we give, or shall we not give? But he, knowing their hypocrisy, said unto them, Why tempt ye me? bring me a penny, that I may see *it*.

16 And they brought *it*. And he saith unto them, Whose *is* this image and superscription? And they said unto him, Cesar's.

17 And Jesus answering, said unto them, Render to Cesar the things that are Cesar's, and to God the things that are God's. And they marvelled at him.

Luke.

CH. XX. 20-26.



20 And they watched *him*, and sent forth spies, which should feign themselves just men, that they might take hold of his words, that so they might deliver him unto the power and authority of the governor.

21 And they asked him, saying, Master, we know that thou sayest and teachest rightly, neither acceptest thou the person of *any*, but teachest the way of God truly:

22 Is it lawful for us to give tribute unto Cesar, or no?

23 But he perceived their craftiness, and said unto them, Why tempt ye me?

24 Shew me a penny. Whose image and superscription hath it? They answered and said, Cesar's.

25 And he said unto them, Render therefore unto Cesar the things which be Cesar's, and unto God the things which be God's.

26 And they could not take hold of his words before the people: and they marvelled at his answer, and held their peace.

[376]

§ 119. Insidious question of the Sadducees. The Resurrection. (Third Day Of The Week.) *Jerusalem.*

Matthew.

CH. XXII. 23-33.

23 The same day came to him the Sadducees, which say that there is no resurrection, and asked him,

Mark.

CH. XII. 18-27.

18 Then come unto him the Sadducees, which say there is no resurrection; and they asked him, saying,

24 Saying, Master, Moses said, If a man die, having no children, his brother shall marry his wife, and raise up seed unto his brother.<sup>239</sup>

25 Now, there were with us seven brethren: and the first, when he had married a wife, deceased: and having no issue, left his wife unto his brother.

26 Likewise the second also, and the third, unto the seventh.

27 And last of all the woman died also.

28 Therefore, in the resurrection, whose wife shall she be of the seven? for they all had her.

19 Master, Moses wrote unto us, If a man's brother die, and leave *his* wife *behind him*, and leave no children, that his brother should take his wife, and raise up seed unto his brother.

20 Now, there were seven brethren: and the first took a wife, and dying left no seed.

21 And the second took her, and died, neither left he any seed: and the third likewise.

22 And the seven had her, and left no seed: last of all the woman died also.

23 In the resurrection therefore, when they shall rise, whose wife shall she be of them? for the seven had her to wife.

---

<sup>0</sup> Deut. xxv. 5.

29 Jesus answered and said unto them, Ye do err, not knowing the scriptures, nor the power of God.

30 For in the resurrection they neither marry, nor are given in marriage, but are as the angels of God in heaven.

31 But, as touching the resurrection of the dead, have ye not read that which was spoken unto you by God, saying,

32 I am the God of Abraham, and the God of Isaac, and the God of Jacob?<sup>240</sup> God is not the God of the dead, but of the living.

33 And when the multitude heard *this*, they were astonished at his doctrine.

24 And Jesus answering, said unto them, Do ye not therefore err, because ye know not the scriptures, neither the power of God?

25 For when they shall rise from the dead, they neither marry, nor are given in marriage; but are as the angels which are in heaven.

26 And as touching the dead, that they rise; have ye not read in the book of Moses, how in the bush God spake unto him, saying, I *am* the God of Abraham, and the God of Isaac, and the God of Jacob?

27 He is not the God of the dead, but the God of the living: ye therefore do greatly err.

---

<sup>0</sup> Ex. iii. 6.

Luke.

CH. XX. 27-40.

27 Then came to *him* certain of the Sadducees (which deny that there is any resurrection) and they asked him,

28 Saying, Master, Moses wrote unto us, If any man's brother die, having a wife, and he die without children, that his brother should take his wife, and raise up seed unto his brother.

29 There were therefore seven brethren: and the first took a wife, and died without children.

30 And the second took her to wife, and he died childless.

31 And the third took her; and in like manner the seven also: and they left no children, and died.

32 Last of all the woman died also.

33 Therefore in the resurrection, whose wife of them is she? for seven had her to wife.

34 And Jesus answering, said unto them, The children of this world marry, and are given in marriage:

35 But they which shall be accounted worthy to obtain that world, and the resurrection from the dead, neither marry, nor are given in marriage:

36 Neither can they die any more:<sup>241</sup> for they are equal unto the angels; and are the children of God, being the children of the resurrection.

---

<sup>0</sup> Here is a minute indication of St. Luke's veracity, derived from his medical profession. No other Evangelist records this remark; but it would not be likely to escape the notice of a physician. See on Luke xxii. 44.

37 Now that the dead  
are raised, even Moses  
shewed at the bush,  
when he calleth the  
Lord the God of Abra-  
ham, and the God of  
Isaac, and the God of  
Jacob.

38 For he is not a God  
of the dead, but of the  
living: for all live unto  
him.

39 Then certain of  
the scribes answering,  
said, Master, thou hast  
well said.

40 And after that, they  
durst not ask him any  
*question at all.*

[378]

§ 120. A lawyer questions Jesus. The two great  
Commandments. (Third Day Of The Week.)  
*Jerusalem.*

Matthew.  
CH. XXII. 34-40.

Mark.  
CH. XII. 28-34.

34 But when the Pharisees had heard that he had put the Sadducees to silence, they were gathered together.

35 Then one of them *which was* a lawyer, asked *him a question*, tempting him, and saying,

36 Master, which *is* the great commandment in the law?

37 Jesus said unto him, Thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy mind.<sup>242</sup>

28 And one of the scribes came, and having heard them reasoning together, and perceiving that he had answered them well, asked him, Which is the first commandment of all?

29 And Jesus answered him, The first of all the commandments *is*, Hear, O Israel; The Lord our God is one Lord:

30 And thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy mind, and with all thy strength: this *is* the first commandment.

---

<sup>0</sup> Deut. vi. 4, 5.



38 This is the first and great commandment.

39 And the second *is* like unto it, Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself.<sup>243</sup>

31 And the second *is* like, *namely* this, Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself: there is none other commandment greater than these.

32 And the scribe said unto him, Well Master, thou hast said the truth: for there is one God; and there is none other but he:

33 And to love him with all the heart, and with all the understanding, and with all the soul, and with all the strength, and to love *his* neighbour as himself, is more than all whole burnt-offerings and sacrifices.

34 And when Jesus saw that he answered discreetly, he said unto him, Thou art not far from the kingdom of God. And no man after that durst ask him *any question*.

---

<sup>0</sup> Lev. xix. 18.

[380]

§ 121. How is Christ the Son of David? (Third Day  
Of The Week.) *Jerusalem.*

Matthew.

CH. XXII. 41-46.

41 While the Pharisees were gathered together, Jesus asked them,

42 Saying, What think ye of Christ? whose son is he? They say unto him, *The son of David.*

43 He saith unto them, How then doth David in spirit call him Lord, saying,

44 The LORD said unto my Lord, Sit thou on my right hand, till I make thine enemies thy footstool?<sup>244</sup>

Mark.

CH. XII. 35-37.

35 And Jesus answered and said, while he taught in the temple, How say the scribes that Christ is the son of David?

Holy Ghost, The LORD said unto my Lord, Sit thou on my right hand, till I make thine enemies thy footstool.

---

<sup>0</sup> Ps. cx. 1.

45 If David then call  
him Lord, how is he  
his son?

37 David therefore  
himself calleth him  
Lord, and whence is he  
*then* his son? And the  
common people heard  
him gladly.

46 And no man was  
able to answer him  
a word, neither durst  
any *man*, from that  
day forth, ask him any  
more *questions*.

Luke.

CH. XX. 41-44.

41 And he said unto  
them, How say they  
that Christ is David's  
son?

42 And David himself  
saith in the book of  
Psalms, The LORD said  
unto my Lord, Sit thou  
on my right hand,

43 Till I make thine  
enemies thy footstool.

44 David therefore cal-  
leth him Lord, how *is*  
he then his son?

§ 122. Warnings against the evil example of the Scribes and Pharisees. (Third Day Of The Week.)  
*Jerusalem.*

Matthew.

CH. XXIII. 1-12.

Then spake Jesus to the multitude, and to his disciples,

2 Saying, The scribes and the Pharisees sit in Moses' seat:

3 All therefore whatsoever they bid you observe, *that* observe and do: but do not ye after their works: for they say, and do not.

4 For they bind heavy burdens, and grievous to be borne, and lay *them* on men's shoulders; but they *themselves* will not move them with one of their fingers.

Mark.

CH. XII. 38, 39.

38 And he said unto them in his doctrine, Beware of the scribes, which love to go in long clothing, and *love* salutations in the market-places,

39 And the chief seats in the synagogues, and the uppermost rooms at feasts:

5 But all their works  
they do for to be seen  
of men: they make  
broad their phylacter-  
ies, and enlarge the  
borders of their gar-  
ments,

6 And love the upper-  
most rooms at feasts,  
and the chief seats in  
the synagogues,

7 And greetings in the  
markets, and to be  
called of men, Rabbi,  
Rabbi.

8 But be ye not called  
Rabbi: for one is your  
Master, *even* Christ;  
and all ye are brethren.

9 And call no *man* your  
father upon the earth:  
for one is your Father  
which is in heaven.

10 Neither be ye called  
masters: for one is your  
master, *even* Christ.

11 But he that is great-  
est among you, shall be  
your servant.

12 And whosoever  
shall exalt himself,  
shall be abased; and he  
that shall humble him-  
self, shall be exalted.

Luke.

CH. XX. 45, 46.

45 Then in the audi-  
ence of all the people,  
he said unto his disci-  
ples,

46 Beware of the  
scribes, which desire  
to walk in long robes,  
and love greetings in  
the markets, and the  
highest seats in the  
synagogues, and the  
chief rooms at feasts;

[382]

§ 123. Woes against the Scribes and Pharisees.  
Lamentation over Jerusalem. (Third Day Of The  
Week.) *Jerusalem.*

Matthew.

CH. XXIII. 13-39.

Mark.

CH. XII. 40.

13 But wo unto you,  
 scribes and Pharisees,  
 hypocrites! for ye  
 shut up the king-  
 dom of heaven against  
 men: for ye neither go  
 in *yourselves*, neither  
 suffer ye them that are  
 entering, to go in.

14 Wo unto you,  
 scribes and Pharisees,  
 hypocrites! for ye de-  
 vour widows' houses,  
 and for a pretence  
 make long prayer:  
 therefore ye shall  
 receive the greater  
 damnation.

15 Wo unto you,  
 scribes and Pharisees,  
 hypocrites! for ye  
 compass sea and land  
 to make one proselyte;  
 and when he is made,  
 ye make him two-fold  
 more the child of hell  
 than yourselves.

40 Which devour wid-  
 ows' houses and for  
 a pretence make long  
 prayers these shall re-  
 ceive greater damna-  
 tion

16 Wo unto you, *ye* blind guides, which say, Whosoever shall swear by the temple, it is nothing; but whosoever shall swear by the gold of the temple, he is a debtor.

17 *Ye* fools, and blind! for whether is greater, the gold, or the temple that sanctifieth the gold?

18 And whosoever shall swear by the altar, it is nothing; but whosoever sweareth by the gift that is upon it, he is guilty.

19 *Ye* fools, and blind! for whether *is* greater, the gift, or the altar that sanctifieth the gift?

20 Whoso therefore shall swear by the altar, sweareth by it, and by all things thereon.

21 And whoso shall swear by the temple, sweareth by it, and by him that dwelleth therein.



22 And he that shall swear by heaven, sweareth by the throne of God, and by him that sitteth thereon.

23 Wo unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! for ye pay tithe of mint, and anise, and cummin, and have omitted the weightier *matters* of the law, judgment, mercy, and faith: these ought ye to have done, and not to leave the other undone.

24 *Ye* blind guides, which strain at a gnat, and swallow a camel.

25 Wo unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! for ye make clean the outside of the cup and of the platter, but within they are full of extortion and excess.

26 *Thou* blind Pharisee, cleanse first that which *is* within the cup and platter, that the outside of them may be clean also.

27 Wo unto you,  
scribes and Pharisees,  
hypocrites! for ye  
are like unto whited  
sepulchres, which in-  
deed appear beautiful  
outward, but are within  
full of dead *men's*  
bones, and of all un-  
cleanness.

28 Even so ye also  
outwardly appear righ-  
teous unto men, but  
within ye are full of  
hypocrisy and iniquity.

29 Wo unto you,  
scribes and Pharisees,  
hypocrites! because ye  
build the tombs of the  
prophets, and garnish  
the sepulchres of the  
righteous,

30 And say, If we had  
been in the days of  
our fathers, we would  
not have been partak-  
ers with them in the  
blood of the prophets.

31 Wherefore ye be  
witnesses unto your-  
selves, that ye are the  
children of them which  
killed the prophets.

32 Fill ye up then the measure of your fathers.

33 *Ye* serpents, *ye* generation of vipers, how can ye escape the damnation of hell?

34 Wherefore, behold, I send unto you prophets, and wise men, and scribes; and *some* of them ye shall kill and crucify, and *some* of them shall ye scourge in your synagogue, and persecute *them* from city to city:

35 That upon you may come all the righteous blood shed upon the earth, from the blood of righteous Abel, unto the blood of Zacharias, son of Barachias, whom ye slew between the temple and the altar.<sup>245</sup>

36 Verily, I say unto you, All these things shall come upon this generation.

---

<sup>0</sup> Gen. iv. 8. 2 Chron. xxiv. 20-22.

37 O Jerusalem,  
 Jerusalem, *thou* that  
 killest the prophets,  
 and stonest them  
 which are sent unto  
 thee, how often would  
 I have gathered thy  
 children together, even  
 as a hen gathereth her  
 chickens under *her*  
 wings, and ye would  
 not!

38 Behold, your house  
 is left unto you deso-  
 late.<sup>246</sup>

39 For I say unto you,  
 Ye shall not see me  
 henceforth, till ye shall  
 say, Blessed *is* he that  
 cometh in the name of  
 the Lord.<sup>247</sup>

Luke.

CH. XX. 47.

Which devour widows'  
 houses, and for a shew  
 make long prayers:  
 the same shall receive  
 greater damnation.

---

<sup>0</sup> Ps. lxix. 26. Jer. xii. 7, and xxii. 5.

<sup>0</sup> Ps. cxviii. 26.

§ 124. The Widow's Mite. (Third Day Of The Week.)  
*Jerusalem.*

Mark.

CH. XII. 41-44.

41 And Jesus sat over against the treasury, and beheld how the people cast money into the treasury: and many that were rich cast in much.

42 And there came a certain poor widow, and she threw in two mites, which make a farthing.

43 And he called *unto him* his disciples, and saith unto them, Verily, I say unto you, That this poor widow hath cast more in, than all they which have cast into the treasury.

44 For all *they* did cast in of their abundance: but she of her want did cast in all that she had, *even* all her living.

Luke.

CH. XXI. 1-4.

And he looked up and saw the rich men casting their gifts into the treasury.

2 And he saw also a certain poor widow, casting in thither two mites.

3 And he said, Of a truth I say unto you, That this poor widow hath cast in more than they all.

4 For all these have of their abundance cast in unto the offerings of God: but she of her penury hath cast in all the living that she had.

[388]

§ 125. Certain Greeks desire to see Jesus. (Third Day Of The Week.) *Jerusalem.*

John.

CH. XII. 20-36.

20 And there were certain Greeks among them, that came up to worship at the *feast*.

21 The same came therefore to Philip, which was of Bethsaida of Galilee, and desired him, saying, Sir, we would see Jesus.

22 Philip cometh and telleth Andrew: and again, Andrew and Philip tell Jesus.

23 And Jesus answered them, saying, The hour is come, that the Son of man should be glorified.

24 Verily, verily, I say unto you, Except a corn of wheat fall into the ground and die, it abideth alone: but if it die, it bringeth forth much fruit.

25 He that loveth his life shall lose it; and he that hateth his life in this world, shall keep it unto life eternal.

26 If any man serve me, let him follow me, and where I am, there shall also my servant be: if any man serve me, him will *my* Father honour.

27 Now is my soul troubled; and what shall I say? Father, save me from this hour: but for this cause came I unto this hour.

28 Father, glorify thy name. Then came there a voice from heaven, *saying*, I have both glorified *it*, and will glorify *it* again.

29 The people therefore that stood by, and heard *it*, said that it thundered. Others said, An angel spake to him.

30 Jesus answered and said, This voice came not because of me, but for your sakes.

31 Now is the judgment of this world: now shall the prince of this world be cast out.

32 And I, if I be lifted up from the earth, will draw all *men* unto me.

33 (This he said, signifying what death he should die.)

34 The people answered him, We have heard out of the law that Christ abideth for ever:<sup>248</sup> and how sayest thou, The Son of man must be lifted up? Who is this Son of man?

---

<sup>0</sup> 2 Sam. vii. 13. Ps. lxxxix. 30, 37; cx. 4.



35 Then Jesus said  
unto them, Yet a lit-  
tle while is the light  
with you. Walk while  
ye have the light, lest  
darkness come upon  
you: for he that  
walketh in darkness  
knoweth not whither  
he goeth.

36 While ye have light,  
believe in the light, that  
ye may be the chil-  
dren of light. These  
things spake Jesus, and  
departed, and did hide  
himself from them.

[390]

§ 126. Reflections upon the unbelief of the Jews.  
(Third Day Of The Week.) *Jerusalem.*

John.

CH. XII. 37-50.

37 But though he had  
done so many miracles  
before them, yet they  
believed not on him.

38 That the saying of Esaias the prophet might be fulfilled, which he spake, Lord, who hath believed our report? and to whom hath the arm of the Lord been revealed?<sup>249</sup>

39 Therefore they could not believe, because that Esaias said again,

40 He hath blinded their eyes, and hardened their heart; that they should not see with *their* eyes, nor understand with *their* heart, and be converted, and I should heal them.<sup>250</sup>

41 These things said Esaias, when he saw his glory, and spake of him.<sup>251</sup>

---

<sup>0</sup> Is. liii. 1.

<sup>0</sup> Is. vi. 10.

<sup>0</sup> Is. vi. 1, seq.

42        Nevertheless,  
among the chief rulers  
also many believed on  
him; but because of  
the Pharisees they did  
not confess *him*, lest  
they should be put out  
of the synagogue:

43 For they loved the  
praise of men more  
than the praise of God.

44 Jesus cried, and  
said, He that believeth  
on me, believeth not  
on me, but on him that  
sent me.

45 And he that seeth  
me, seeth him that sent  
me.

46 I am come a  
light into the world,  
that whosoever be-  
lieveth on me should  
not abide in darkness.

47 And if any man hear  
my words, and believe  
not, I judge him not:  
for I came not to judge  
the world, but to save  
the world.

48 He that rejecteth me, and receiveth not my words, hath one that judgeth him: the word that I have spoken, the same shall judge him in the last day.

49 For I have not spoken of myself; but the Father which sent me, he gave me a commandment, what I should say, and what I should speak.

50 And I know that his commandment is life everlasting: whatsoever I speak therefore, even as the Father said unto me, so I speak.

[392]

§ 127. Jesus, on taking leave of the Temple, foretells its destruction, etc. (Third Day Of The Week.)

*Jerusalem. Mount of Olives.*

Matthew.

CH. XXIV. 1-14.

Mark.

CH. XIII. 1-13.

And Jesus went out, and departed from the temple: and his disciples came to *him* for to shew him the buildings of the temple.

2 And Jesus said unto them, See ye not all these things? verily, I say unto you, There shall not be left here one stone upon another, that shall not be thrown down.

3 And as he sat upon the mount of Olives, the disciples came unto him privately, saying, Tell us, when shall these things be? and what *shall* be the sign of thy coming, and of the end of the world.

4 And Jesus answered and said unto them, Take heed that no man deceive you.

And as he went out of the temple, one of his disciples saith unto him, Master, see what manner of *stones*, and what buildings *are here!*

2 And Jesus answering, said unto him, Seest thou these great buildings? there shall not be left one stone upon another, that shall not be thrown down.

3 And as he sat upon the mount of Olives, over against the temple, Peter, and James, and John, and Andrew, asked him privately,

4 Tell us, when shall these things be? and what *shall* be the sign when all these things shall be fulfilled?

5 And Jesus answering them, began to say. Take heed lest any *man* deceive you:

5 For many shall come in my name, saying, I am Christ; and shall deceive many.

6 And ye shall hear of wars, and rumours of wars: see that ye be not troubled: for all *these things* must come to pass, but the end is not yet.

7 For nation shall rise against nation, and kingdom against kingdom: and there shall be famines, and pestilence, and earthquakes in divers places.

8 All these *are* the beginning of sorrows.

9 Then shall they deliver you up to be afflicted, and shall kill you: and ye shall be hated of all nations for my name's sake.

6 For many shall come in my name, saying, I am *Christ*; and shall deceive many.

7 And when ye shall hear of wars, and rumours of wars, be ye not troubled: for *such things* must needs be; but the end *shall* not be yet.

8 For nation shall rise against nation, and kingdom against kingdom: and there shall be earthquakes in *divers* places, and there shall be famines, and troubles: *these are* the beginnings of sorrows.

9 But take heed to yourselves: for they shall deliver you up to councils; and in the synagogues ye shall be beaten: and ye shall be brought before rulers and kings for my sake, for a testimony against them.

10 And the gospel must first be published among all nations.

11 But when they shall lead *you*, and deliver you up, take no thought beforehand what ye shall speak, neither do ye premeditate: but whatsoever shall be given you in that hour, that speak ye: for it is not ye that speak, but the Holy Ghost.

10 And then shall many be offended, and shall betray one another, and shall hate one another.

12 Now, the brother shall betray the brother to death, and the father the son: and children shall rise up against *their* parents, and shall cause them to be put to death.

11 And many false prophets shall rise, and shall deceive many.

12 And because iniquity shall abound, the love of many shall wax cold.

13 But he that shall endure unto the end, the same shall be saved.

13 And ye shall be hated of all *men* for my name's sake: but he that shall endure unto the end, the same shall be saved.

14 And this gospel of the kingdom shall be preached in all the world, for a witness unto all nations; and then shall the end come.

Luke.

CH. XXI. 5-19.

5 And as some spake of the temple, how it was adorned with goodly stones, and gifts, he said,

6 *As for* these things which ye behold, the days will come, in the which there shall not be left one stone upon another, that shall not be thrown down.



7 And they asked him, saying, Master, but when shall these things be? and what sign *will there be* when these things shall come to pass?

8 And he said, Take heed that ye be not deceived: for many shall come in my name, saying, I am *Christ*; and the time draweth near: go ye not therefore after them.

9 But when ye shall hear of wars, and commotions, be not terrified: for these things must first come to pass; but the end *is* not by and by.

10 Then said he unto them, Nation shall rise against nation, and kingdom against kingdom:

11 And great earthquakes shall be in divers places, and famines, and pestilences: and fearful sights, and great signs shall there be from heaven.

12 But before all these they shall lay their hands on you, and persecute *you*, delivering *you* up to the synagogues, and into prisons, being brought before kings and rulers for my name's sake.

13 And it shall turn to you for a testimony.

14 Settle *it* therefore in your hearts, not to meditate before what ye shall answer.

15 For I will give you a mouth and wisdom, which all your adversaries shall not be able to gainsay nor resist.

16 And ye shall be  
betrayed both by par-  
ents, and brethren, and  
kinsfolks, and friends;  
and *some* of you shall  
they cause to be put to  
death.<sup>252</sup>

17 And ye shall be  
hated of all *men* for my  
name's sake.

18 But there shall not  
an hair of your head  
perish.

19 In your patience  
possess ye your souls.

[394]

§ 128. The signs of Christ's coming to destroy  
Jerusalem, etc. (Third Day Of The Week.) *Mount of  
Olives.*

Matthew.  
CH. XXIV. 15-42.

Mark.  
CH. XXIII. 14-37.

---

<sup>0</sup> No imposter would have warned his followers, as Jesus did, of the persecutions they would have to submit to.

15 When ye, therefore, shall see the abomination of desolation, spoken of by Daniel the prophet,<sup>253</sup> stand in the holy place, (whoso readeth, let him understand,)

16 Then let them which be in Judea flee into the mountains:

17 Let him which is on the housetop not come down to take any thing out of his house:

18 Neither let him which is in the field return back to take his clothes.

19 And wo unto them that are with child, and to them that give suck in those days!

20 But pray ye that your flight be not in the winter, neither on the sabbath-day:

14 But when ye shall see the abomination of desolation, spoken of by Daniel the prophet, standing where it ought not, (let him that readeth understand) then let them that be in Judea flee to the mountains:

15 And let him that is on the housetop not go down into the house, neither enter *therein*, to take any thing out of his house:

16 And let him that is in the field not turn back again for to take up his garment.

17 But wo to them that are with child, and to them that give suck in those days!

18 And pray ye that your flight be not in the winter.

---

<sup>0</sup> Danl. ix. 27.

21 For then shall be great tribulation, such as was not since the beginning of the world to this time, no, nor ever shall be.

22 And except those days should be shortened, there should no flesh be saved: but for the elect's sake those days shall be shortened.

23 Then if any man shall say unto you, Lo, here *is* Christ, or there; believe *it* not.

24 For there shall arise false Christs, and false prophets, and shall shew great signs and wonders; inso-much that, if *it were* possible, they shall deceive the very elect.

25 Behold, I have told you before.

19 For *in* those days shall be affliction, such as was not from the beginning of the creation which God created unto this time, neither shall be.

20 And except that the Lord had shortened these days, no flesh should be saved: but for the elect's sake, whom he hath chosen, he hath shortened the days.

21 And then, if any man shall say to you, Lo, here *is* Christ; or lo, *he is* there; believe *him* not.

22 For false Christs, and false prophets shall rise, and shall shew signs and wonders, to seduce, if *it were* possible, even the elect.

23 But take ye heed: behold, I have foretold you all things.

26 Wherefore, if they shall say unto you, Behold, he is in the desert; go not forth: behold, he *is* in the secret chambers; believe *it* not.

27 For as the lightning cometh out of the east, and shineth even unto the west; so shall also the coming of the Son of man be.

28 For wheresoever the carcass is, there will the eagles be gathered together.

29 Immediately after the tribulation of those days, shall the sun be darkened, and the moon shall not give her light, and the stars shall fall from heaven, and the powers of the heavens shall be shaken:<sup>254</sup>

24 But in those days, after that tribulation, the sun shall be darkened, and the moon shall not give her light,

25 And the stars of heaven shall fall, and the powers that are in heaven shall be shaken.

---

<sup>0</sup> Is. xiii. 9, 10. Joel iii. 15.

30 And then shall appear the sign of the Son of man in heaven: and then shall all the tribes of the earth mourn, and they shall see the Son of man coming in the clouds of heaven with power and great glory.

31 And he shall send his angels with a great sound of a trumpet, and they shall gather together his elect from the four winds, from one end of heaven to the other.

32 Now learn a parable of the fig-tree; When his branch is yet tender, and putteth forth leaves, ye know that summer *is* nigh:

33 So likewise ye, when ye shall see all these things, know that it is near, *even* at the doors.

34 Verily, I say unto you, This generation shall not pass, till all these things be fulfilled.

26 And then shall they see the Son of man coming in the clouds with great power and glory.

27 And then shall he send his angels, and shall gather together his elect from the four winds, from the uttermost part of the earth to the uttermost part of heaven.

28 Now learn a parable of the fig-tree: When her branch is yet tender, and putteth forth leaves, ye know that summer is near:

29 So ye in like manner, when ye shall see these things come to pass, know that it is nigh, *even* at the doors.

30 Verily, I say unto you, That this generation shall not pass, till all these things be done.

35 Heaven and earth shall pass away, but my words shall not pass away.

36 But of that day and hour knoweth no *man*, no, not the angels of heaven, but my Father only.

37 But as the days of Noe *were*, so shall also the coming of the Son of man be.

38 For as in the days that were before the flood, they were eating and drinking, marrying and giving in marriage, until the day that Noe entered into the ark,<sup>255</sup>

39 And knew not until the flood came, and took them all away: so shall also the coming of the Son of man be.

40 Then shall two be in the field; the one shall be taken, and the other left.

31 Heaven and earth shall pass away: but my words shall not pass away.

32 But of that day and *that* hour knoweth no man, no, not the angels which are in heaven, neither the Son, but the Father.

33 Take ye heed, watch and pray: for ye know not when the time is.

34 *For the Son of man is* as a man taking a far journey, who left his house, and gave authority to his servants, and to every man his work; and commanded the porter to watch.

---

<sup>0</sup> Gen. vii. 4, seq.



41 *Two women shall  
be grinding at the mill;  
the one shall be taken,  
and the other left.*

42 Watch therefore;  
for ye know not what  
hour your Lord doth  
come.

35 Watch ye therefore:  
for ye know not when  
the master of the house  
cometh, at even, or  
at midnight, or at the  
cock-crowing, or in the  
morning:

36 Lest coming sud-  
denly, he find you  
sleeping.

37 And what I say unto  
you, I say unto all,  
Watch.

Luke.

CH. XXI. 20-36.

20 And when ye shall  
see Jerusalem com-  
passed with armies,  
then know that the des-  
olation thereof is nigh.

21 Then let them  
which are in Judea flee  
to the mountains; and  
let them which are in  
the midst of it depart  
out; and let not them  
that are in the countries  
enter thereinto.

22 For these be the days of vengeance, that all things which are written may be fulfilled.

23 But wo unto them that are with child, and to them that give suck in those days! for there shall be great distress in the land, and wrath upon this people.

24 And they shall fall by the edge of the sword, and shall be led away captive into all nations: and Jerusalem shall be trodden down of the Gentiles, until the times of the Gentiles be fulfilled.

25 And there shall be signs in the sun, and in the moon, and in the stars; and upon the earth distress of nations, with perplexity; the sea and the waves roaring;

26 Men's hearts failing them for fear, and for looking after those things which are coming on the earth: for the powers of heaven shall be shaken.

29 And he spake to them a parable; Behold the fig-tree, and all the trees;

30 When they now shoot forth, ye see and know of your yourselves that summer is now nigh at hand.

31 So likewise ye, when ye see these things come to pass, know ye that the kingdom of God is nigh at hand.

32 Verily, I say unto you, This generation shall not pass away, till all be fulfilled.

33 Heaven and earth shall pass away: but my words shall not pass away.

34 And take heed to yourselves, lest at any time your hearts be overcharged with surfeiting and drunkenness, and cares of this life, and *so* that day come upon you unawares.

35 For as a snare shall it come on all them that dwell on the face of the whole earth.

36 Watch ye therefore, and pray always, that ye may be accounted worthy to escape all these things that shall come to pass, and to stand before the Son of man.

[400]

§ 129. Transition to Christ's final coming.  
Exhortation. Parables. (Third Day Of The Week.)  
*Mount of Olives.*

Matthew.

CH. XXIV. 43-51.

CH. XXV. 1-30.

43 But know this, that  
if the good man of  
the house had known  
in what watch the  
thief would come, he  
would have watched,  
and would not have  
suffered his house to  
be broken up.

44 Therefore be ye  
also ready: for in such  
an hour as ye think  
not, the Son of man  
cometh.

45 Who then is a  
faithful and wise ser-  
vant, whom his lord  
hath made ruler over  
his household, to give  
them meat in due sea-  
son?

46 Blessed *is* that ser-  
vant, whom his lord,  
when he cometh, shall  
find so doing.

47 Verily I say unto  
you, That he shall  
make him ruler over all  
his goods.

48 But and if that evil  
servant shall say in  
his heart, My lord de-  
layeth his coming;

49 And shall begin to smite *his* fellow-servants, and to eat and drink with the drunken;

50 The lord of that servant shall come in a day when he looketh not for *him*, and in an hour that he is not aware of,

51 And shall cut him asunder, and appoint *him* his portion with the hypocrites: there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth.

CH. XXV.

Then shall the kingdom of heaven be likened unto ten virgins, which took their lamps, and went forth to meet the bridegroom.

2 And five of them were wise, and five *were* foolish.

3 They that *were* foolish took their lamps, and took no oil with them:

4 But the wise took oil in their vessels with their lamps.

5 While the bridegroom tarried, they all slumbered and slept.

6 And at midnight there was a cry made, Behold, the bridegroom cometh: go ye out to meet him.

7 Then all those virgins arose, and trimmed their lamps.

8 And the foolish said unto the wise, Give us of your oil: for our lamps are gone out.

9 But the wise answered, saying, *Not so*; lest there be not enough for us and you: but go ye rather to them that sell, and buy for yourselves.

10 And while they went to buy, the bridegroom came; and they that were ready, went in with him to the marriage: and the door was shut.

11 Afterward came also the other virgins, saying, Lord, Lord, open to us.

12 But he answered and said, Verily, I say unto you, I know you not.

13 Watch therefore, for ye know neither the day nor the hour wherein the Son of man cometh.

14 For *the kingdom of heaven is* as a man travelling into a far country, *who* called his own servants, and delivered unto them his goods.

15 And unto one he gave five talents, to another two, and to another one; to every man according to his several ability; and straightway took his journey.

16 Then he that had received the five talents, went and traded with the same, and made *them* other five talents.



17 And likewise he that *had received* two, he also gained other two.

18 But he that had received one, went and digged in the earth, and hid his lord's money.

19 After a long time the lord of those servants cometh, and reckoneth with them.

20 And so he that had received five talents, came and brought other five talents, saying, Lord, thou deliveredst unto me five talents: behold, I have gained besides them five talents more.

21 His lord said unto him, Well done, *thou* good and faithful servant; thou hast been faithful over a few things, I will make thee ruler over many things: enter thou into the joy of thy lord.

22 He also that had received two talents came, and said, Lord, thou deliveredst unto me two talents: behold, I have gained two other talents besides them.

23 His lord said unto him, Well done, good and faithful servant; thou hast been faithful over a few things, I will make thee ruler over many things: enter thou into the joy of thy lord.

24 Then he which had received the one talent came, and said, Lord, I knew thee that thou art an hard man, reaping where thou hast not sown, and gathering where thou hast not strewed:

25 And I was afraid, and went and hid thy talent in the earth: lo, *there* thou hast *that is* thine.

26 His lord an- that I reap where I sowed not, and gather where I have not sown answered and said unto him, *Thou* wicked and slothful servant, thou knewest<sup>256</sup>

27 Thou oughtest therefore to have put my money to the exchangers, and then at my coming I should have received mine own with usury.

28 Take therefore the talent from him, and give *it* unto him which hath ten talents.

29 For unto every one that hath shall be given, and he shall have abundance: but from him that hath not, shall be taken away even that which he hath.

30 And cast ye the unprofitable servant into outer darkness: there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth.

[404]

---

<sup>0</sup> Interrogatively and sarcastically. That is, Was such thy wicked opinion? Then “out of thine own mouth will I judge thee;” thou oughtest to have acted according to that opinion. Bp. SUMNER{FNS, *in loc.*

§ 130. Scenes of the Judgment Day. (Third Day Of  
The Week.) *Mount of Olives.*

Matthew.

CH. XXV. 31-46.

31 When the Son of  
man shall come in his  
glory, and all the holy  
angels with him, then  
shall he sit upon the  
throne of his glory:

32 And before him  
shall be gathered all  
nations: and he shall  
separate them one  
from another, as a  
shepherd divideth *his*  
sheep from the goats:

33 And he shall set  
the sheep on his right  
hand, but the goats on  
the left.

34 Then shall the King  
say unto them on his  
right hand, Come, ye  
blessed of my Father,  
inherit the kingdom  
prepared for you from  
the foundation of the  
world:

35 For I was an hungered, and ye gave me meat: I was thirsty, and ye gave me drink: I was a stranger, and ye took me in:

36 Naked, and ye clothed me: I was sick, and ye visited me: I was in prison, and ye came unto me.

37 Then shall the righteous answer him, saying, Lord, when saw we thee an hungered, and fed *thee*? or thirsty, and gave *thee* drink?

38 When saw we thee a stranger, and took *thee* in? or naked, and clothed *thee*?

39 Or when saw we thee sick, or in prison, and came unto thee?

40 And the King shall answer and say unto them, Verily I say unto you, Inasmuch as ye have done *it* unto one of the least of these my brethren, ye have done *it* unto me.

41 Then shall he say also unto them on the left hand, Depart from me, ye cursed, into everlasting fire, prepared for the devil and his angels:

42 For I was an hungered, and ye gave me no meat: I was thirsty, and ye gave me no drink:

43 I was a stranger, and ye took me not in: naked, and ye clothed me not: sick, and in prison, and ye visited me not.

44 Then shall they also answer him, saying, Lord, when saw we thee an hungered, or athirst, or a stranger, or naked, or sick, or in prison, and did not minister unto thee?

45 Then shall he answer them, saying, Verily, I say unto you, Inasmuch as ye did it not to one of the least of these, ye did *it* not to me.

46 And these shall go  
away into everlasting  
punishment: but the  
righteous into life eter-  
nal.

[408]

§ 131. The Rulers conspire. The Supper at Bethany.  
Treachery of Judas. (Fourth Day Of The Week.)  
*Jerusalem. Bethany.*

Matthew.

CH. XXVI. 1-16.

And it came to pass,  
when Jesus had fin-  
ished all these sayings,  
he said unto his disci-  
ples,

2 Ye know that after  
two days is *the feast of*  
the passover, and the  
Son of man is betrayed  
to be crucified.

3 Then assembled together the chief priests, and the scribes, and the elders of the people, unto the palace of the high priest, who was called Caiaphas,

4 And consulted that they might take Jesus by subtilty, and kill *him*.

5 But they said, Not on the *feast-day*, lest there be an uproar among the people.

6 Now when Jesus was in Bethany, in the house of Simon the leper,

7 There came unto him a woman having an alabaster-box of very precious ointment, and poured *it* on his head as he sat *at meat*.



8 But when his disci- saw *it*, they had indignation, saying, To what purpose *is* this ples<sup>257</sup>

9 For this ointment might have been sold for much, and given to the poor.

10 When Jesus understood *it*, he said unto them, Why trouble ye the woman? for she hath wrought a good work upon me.

11 For ye have the poor always with you; but me ye have not always.

---

<sup>0</sup> In St. John, Judas alone murmurs; in St. Matthew, the disciples have indignation; or, as St. Mark expresses it, some have indignation among themselves. Dr. Lardner says, Sermon. v. 2, p. 316, "It is well known to be very common with all writers, to use the plural number when one person only is intended. Nor is it impossible that others might have some uneasiness about it, though they were far from being so disgusted at it as Judas was. And their concern for the poor was sincere; his was self-interested, and mere pretence." See also Grotius *in loc.* NEWCOME{FNS.

12 For in that she hath  
poured this ointment  
on my body, she did  
*it* for my burial.

13 Verily, I say  
unto you, Whereso-  
ever this gospel shall  
be preached in the  
whole world, *there*  
shall also this, that this  
woman hath done, be  
told for a memorial of  
her.

14 Then one of the  
twelve, called Judas Is-  
cariot, went unto the  
chief priests,

15 And said *unto them*,  
What will ye give me,  
and I will deliver him  
unto you? And they  
covenanted with him  
for thirty pieces of sil-  
ver.

16 And from that time  
he sought opportunity  
to betray him.

Luke.  
CH. XXII. 1-6.

John.  
CH. XII. 2-8.

Now the feast of unleavened bread drew nigh, which is called the Passover.

2 And the chief priests and scribes sought how they might kill him: for they feared the people.

2 There they made him a supper; and Martha served: but Lazarus was one of them that sat at the table with him.

3 Then took Mary a pound of ointment of spikenard, very costly, and anointed the feet<sup>258</sup> of Jesus, and wiped his feet with her hair: and the house was filled with the odour of the ointment.

4 Then saith one of his disciples, Judas Iscariot,<sup>259</sup> Simon's son, which should betray him,

---

<sup>0</sup> It is nowhere asserted that the unction was of Jesus's head *only*, or of his feet *only*. Both actions are consistent; and St. John, in his supplemental history, may very well have added the respectful conduct of Mary, that, after having anointed Jesus's head, she proceeded to anoint his feet, and even to wipe them with her hair. Newcome.

<sup>0</sup> The other Evangelists mention that indignation was caused by the supposed

5 Why was not this ointment sold for three hundred pence, and given to the poor?

6 This he said, not that he cared for the poor, but because he was a thief, and had the bag, and bare what was put therein.

7 Then said Jesus, Let her alone: against the day of my burying hath she kept this.

8 For the poor always ye have with you; but me ye have not always.

3 Then entered Satan into Judas, surnamed Iscariot, being of the number of the twelve.

---

waste of the ointment: John fixes it upon Judas. That Judas went to the High Priest's on the evening or night of our Wednesday, may be collected from Matth. xxvi. 14, 17, and the parallel places; and he seems to have acted partly from disgust at what had passed. The story has a remarkably apt connection with the preceding and subsequent history. The Jewish rulers consult how they may take Jesus by craft, and without raising a tumult among the people. An incident happens, which offends one of Jesus's familiar attendants, who immediately repairs to the enemies of Jesus, and receives from them a bribe to betray him in the absence of the multitude. Newcome.

4 And he went his way, and communed with the chief priests and captains, how he might betray him unto them.

5 And they were glad, and covenanted to give him money.

6 And he promised, and sought opportunity to betray him unto them in the absence of the multitude.

[410]

§ 132. Preparation for the Passover. (Fifth Day Of The Week.) *Jerusalem. Bethany.*

Matthew.

CH. XXVI. 17-19.

17 Now the first *day* of the *feast of* unleavened bread, the disciples came to Jesus, saying unto him, Where wilt thou that we prepare for thee to eat the passover?

Mark.

CH. XIV. 12-16.

12 And the first day of unleavened bread, when they killed the passover, his disciples said unto him, Where wilt thou that we go and prepare, that thou mayest eat the passover?

18 And he said, Go  
into the city to such  
a man, and say unto  
him, The Master saith,  
My time is at hand; I  
will keep the passover  
at thy house with my  
disciples.<sup>260</sup>, Veracity,  
&c. Sect. ii. 8.

13 And he sendeth forth two of his disciples, and saith unto them, Go ye into the city, and there shall meet you a man bearing a pitcher of water: follow him. 14 And wheresoever he shall go in, say ye to the good man of the house, The Master saith, Where is the guest-chamber, where I shall eat the passover with my disciples? 15 And he will shew you a large upper room furnished *and* prepared: there make ready for us. 19 And the disciples did as Jesus had appointed them; and they made ready the passover. 16 And his disciples when forth, and came into the city, and found as he had said unto them: and they made ready the passover.

Luke.

CH. XXII. 7-13.

7 Thence came the day  
of unleavened bread,  
when the passover  
must be killed.

8 And he sent Pe-  
ter and John, saying,  
Go and prepare us the  
passover, that we may  
eat.

---

<sup>0</sup> Here is a very natural, yet incidental recognition of a rule, universally respected among the Jews, that this feast was to be celebrated not alone, but by companies of not less than ten persons. See JOSEPHUS{FNS, Bell. Jud. vi. ix. § 3. BLUNT{FNS

9 And they said unto him, Where wilt thou that we prepare?

10 And he said unto them, Behold, when ye are entered into the city, there shall a man meet you, bearing a pitcher of water; follow him into the house where he entereth in.

11 And ye shall say unto the good man of the house, The Master saith unto thee, Where is the guest-chamber, where I shall eat the passover with my disciples?

12 And he shall shew you a large upper room furnished: there make ready.

13 And they went and found as he had said unto them: and they made ready the passover.

## Part VIII. The Fourth Passover; Our Lord's Passion; And The Accompanying Events Until The End Of The Jewish Sabbath.

[414]

TIME. *Two days.*

§ 133. The Passover Meal. Contention among the Twelve. (Evening Introducing The Sixth Day Of The Week.) *Jerusalem.*

Matthew.

CH. XXVI. 20.

20 Now when the even  
was come, he sat down  
with the twelve.

Mark.

CH. XIV. 17.

17 And in the evening  
he cometh with the  
twelve.

Luke.

CH. XXII. 14-18, 24-30.

14 And when the hour  
was come, he sat  
down, and the twelve  
apostles with him.

15 And he said unto  
them, With desire I  
have desired to eat this  
passover with you be-  
fore I suffer.



16 For I say unto you,  
I will not any more eat  
thereof, until it be fulfilled in the kingdom  
of God.

17 And he took the  
cup, and gave thanks,  
and said, Take this, and  
divide *it* among yourselves.

18 For I say unto you,  
I will not drink of the  
fruit of the vine, until the kingdom of God  
shall come.

24 And there was also  
a strife among them,  
which of them should  
be accounted the greatest.

25 And he said unto  
them, The kings of the  
Gentiles exercise lordship over them; and  
they that exercise authority upon them are  
called benefactors.

26 But ye *shall* not *be*  
so: but he that is greatest among you, let him  
be as the younger; and  
he that is chief, as he  
that doth serve.

27 For whether *is*  
greater, he that sitteth  
at meat, or he that  
serveth? *is* not he that  
sitteth at meat? but I  
am among you as he  
that serveth.

28 Ye are they which  
have continued with  
me in my temptations.

29 And I appoint unto  
you a kingdom, as my  
Father hath appointed  
unto me;

30 That ye may eat and  
drink at my table in  
my kingdom, and sit  
on thrones, judging the  
twelve tribes of Israel.

§ 134. Jesus washes the feet of his disciples.  
(Evening Introducing The Sixth Day Of The Week.)  
*Jerusalem.*

John.

CH. XII. 1-20.

Now before the feast of the passover, when Jesus knew that his hour was come that he should depart out of this world unto the Father, having loved his own which were in the world, he loved them unto the end.

2 And supper being ended, (the devil having now put into the heart of Judas Iscariot, Simon's *son*, to betray him,)

3 Jesus knowing that the Father had given all things into his hands, and that he was come from God, and went to God;

4 He riseth from supper, and laid aside his garments; and took a towel, and girded himself.

5 After that, he poureth water into a basin, and began to wash the disciples' feet, and to wipe *them* with the towel wherewith he was girded.

6 Then cometh he to Simon Peter: and Peter saith unto him, Lord, dost thou wash my feet?

7 Jesus answered and said unto him, What I do thou knowest not now; but thou shalt know hereafter.

8 Peter saith unto him, Thou shalt never wash my feet. Jesus answered him, If I wash thee not, thou hast no part with me.

9 Simon Peter saith unto him, Lord, not my feet only, but also *my* hands and *my* head.

10 Jesus saith to him,  
He that is washed  
needeth not save to  
wash *his* feet, but is  
clean every whit: and  
ye are clean, but not  
all.

11 For he knew who  
should betray him:  
therefore said he, Ye  
are not all clean.

12 So after he had  
washed their feet, and  
had taken his gar-  
ments, and was set  
down again, he said  
unto them, Know ye  
what I have done to  
you?

13 Ye call me Master,  
and Lord: and ye say  
well; for *so* I am.

14 If I then, *your*  
Lord and Master, have  
washed your feet; ye  
also ought to wash one  
another's feet.

15 For I have given  
you an example, that  
ye should do as I have  
done to you.

16 Verily, verily, I say unto you, The servant is not greater than his lord; neither he that is sent greater than he that sent him.

17 If ye know these things, happy are ye if ye do them.

18 I speak not of you all; I know whom I have chosen; but that the scripture may be fulfilled, He that eateth bread with me, hath lifted up his heel against me.<sup>261</sup>

19 Now I tell you before it come, that when it is come to pass, ye may believe that I am *he*.

20 Verily, verily, I say unto you, He that receiveth whomsoever I send, receiveth me; and he that receiveth me, receiveth him that sent me.

---

<sup>0</sup> Ps. xli. 10.

§ 135. Jesus points out the traitor. Judas withdraws.  
(Evening Introducing The Sixth Day Of The Week.)  
*Jerusalem.*

Matthew.

CH. XXVI. 21-25.

21 And as they did eat,  
he said, Verily I say  
unto you, That one of  
you shall betray me.

22 And they were ex-  
ceeding sorrowful, and  
began every one of  
them to say unto him,  
Lord, is it I?

23 And he answered  
and said, He that dip-  
peth *his* hand with me  
in the dish, the same  
shall betray me.

24 The Son of man  
goeth, as it is written of  
him: but wo unto that  
man by whom the Son  
of man is betrayed! it  
had been good for that  
man if he had not been  
born.

Mark.

CH. XIV. 18-21.

18 And as they sat,  
and did eat, Jesus said,  
Verily I say unto you,  
One of you which  
eateth with me, shall  
betray me.

19 And they began to  
be sorrowful, and to  
say unto him one by  
one, *Is it I?* and another  
*said, Is it I?*

20 And he answered  
and said unto them, *It*  
*is* one of the twelve that  
dippeth with me in the  
dish.

21 The Son of man  
indeed goeth, as it is  
written of him: but wo  
to that man by whom  
the Son of man is be-  
trayed! good were it  
for that man if he had  
never been born.

25 Then Judas, which betrayed him, answered and said, Master, is it I? He said unto him, Thou hast said.

Luke.

CH. XXII. 21-23.

21 But behold, the hand of him that betrayeth me *is* with me on the table.

22 And truly the Son of man goeth as it was determined: but wo unto that man by whom he is betrayed!

John.

CH. XIII. 21-35.

21 When Jesus had thus said, he was troubled in spirit, and testified, and said, Verily, verily, I say unto you, that one of you shall betray me.

22 Then the disciples looked one on another, doubting of whom he spake.

23 Now there was leaning on Jesus' bosom, one of his disciples, whom Jesus loved.



23 And they began to inquire among themselves, which of them it was that should do this thing.

24 Simon Peter therefore beckoned to him, that he should ask who it should be of whom he spake.

25 He then, lying on Jesus' breast, saith unto him, Lord, who is it?

26 Jesus answered, He it is to whom I shall give a sop, when I have dipped *it*. And when he had dipped the sop, he gave *it* to Judas Iscariot *the son* of Simon.

27 And after the sop Satan entered into him. Then said Jesus unto him, That thou doest, do quickly.

28 Now no man at the table knew for what intent he spake this unto him.

29 For some *of them* thought, because Judas had the bag, that Jesus had said unto him, Buy *those things* that we have need of against the feast; or, that he should give something to the poor.

30 He then, having received the sop, went immediately out: and it was night.

31 Therefore, when he was gone out, Jesus said, Now is the Son of man glorified, and God is glorified in him.

32 If God be glorified in him, God shall also glorify him in himself, and shall straightway glorify him.

33 Little children, yet a little while I am with you. Ye shall seek me; and, as I said unto the Jews, Whither I go, ye cannot come, so now I say to you.

34 A new commandment I give unto you, That ye love one another; as I have loved you, that ye also love one another.

35 By this shall all *men* know that ye are my disciples, if ye have love one to another.

§ 136. Jesus foretells the fall of Peter, and the dispersion of the Twelve. (Evening Introducing The Sixth Day Of The Week.) *Jerusalem.*

thou shalt deny me thrice. 35 Peter said unto him, Though I should die with thee, yet will not I deny thee. Likewise also said all the disciples.<sup>31</sup> But he spake the more vehemently, If I should die with thee, I will not deny thee in any wise. Likewise also said they all.

Matthew.

CH. XXVI. 31-35.

31 Then saith Jesus unto them, All ye shall be offended because of me this night: for it is written, I will smite the Shepherd, and the sheep of the flock shall be scattered abroad.<sup>262</sup>

32 But after I am risen again, I will go before you into Galilee.

33 Peter answered and said unto him, Though all *men* shall be offended because of thee, yet will I never be offended.

Mark.

CH. XIV. 27-31.

27 And Jesus saith unto them, All ye shall be offended because of me this night: for it is written, I will smite the Shepherd, and the sheep shall be scattered.

28 But after that I am risen, I will go before you into Galilee.

29 But Peter said unto him, Although all shall be offended, yet *will* not I.

---

<sup>0</sup> Zech. xiii. 7.

<p>34 Jesus said unto him, Verily, I say unto thee, That this night, before the cock crow, thou shalt deny me thrice.</p>	<p>30 And Jesus saith. unto him, Verily, I say unto thee, That this day, <i>even</i> in this night, before the cock crow twice,<sup>263</sup> on Matth. xxvi. 34. NEWCOME{FNS</p>
---	---

<p>Luke. CH. XXII. 31-38. 31 And the Lord said, Simon, Simon, behold, Satan hath desired <i>to</i> <i>have</i> you, that he may sift <i>you</i> as wheat:</p> <p>32 But I have prayed for thee, that thy faith fail not: and when thou art con- verted, strengthen thy brethren.</p>	<p>John. CH. XIII. 36-38. 36 Simon Peter said unto him, Lord, whither goest thou? Jesus answered him, Whither I go, thou canst not follow me now; but thou shalt fol- low me afterward.</p>
--	---

---

<sup>0</sup> The other Evangelists simply say, Before the cock crow.—It is observed, that the cock crows about midnight: and about the fourth watch, or about three in the morning, when that watch began. When *gallicinium* (*cock-crowing*) stands alone, it means this latter time, which is referred to, Aristoph. Eccles. 390, Juv. Sat. ix. 107. The four Evangelists therefore denote the same time,—sc. *galliciniis secundis*, as Ammianus expresses it, l. 22; and any part of the period thus marked out may be understood. See BOCHART{FNS de anim. pars, 2d. 119, and GROTIUS{FNS

33 And he said unto him, Lord, I am ready to go with thee, both into prison, and to death.

34 And he said, I tell thee, Peter, the cock shall not crow this day, before that thou shalt thrice deny that thou knowest me.

35 And he said unto them, When I sent you without purse, and scrip, and shoes, lacked ye any thing? And they said, Nothing.

36 Then said he unto them, But now, he that hath a purse, let him take *it*, and likewise *his* scrip: and he that hath no sword, let him sell his garment, and buy one.<sup>264</sup>

37 Peter said unto him, Lord, why cannot I follow thee now? I will lay down my life for thy sake.

38 Jesus answered him, Wilt thou lay down thy life for my sake? Verily, verily, I say unto thee, The cock shall not crow, till thou hast denied me thrice.

---

<sup>0</sup> In the animated language of the prophets, their predictions are often announced under the form of commands. The prophet Isaiah, in the sublime prediction he has given us of the fate of the king of Babylon, thus foretells the destruction of his family:—*Prepare slaughter for his children, &c.* Isa. xiv. 21. The prophet Jeremiah in like manner foretells the approaching destruction of the children of Zion: *Call for the mourning women, that they may come: and send for cunning women; and let them make haste, and take up a wailing,*

37 For I say unto  
 you, that this that is  
 written must yet be  
 accomplished in me,  
 And he was reckoned  
 among the transgres-  
 sors:<sup>265</sup> for the things  
 concerning me have an  
 end.

38 And they said,  
 Lord, behold, here are  
 two swords. And he  
 said unto them, It is  
 enough.

[422]

§ 137. The Lord's Supper. (Evening Introducing The  
 Sixth Day Of The Week.) *Jerusalem.*

Matthew.

CH. XXVI. 26-29.

---

&c. Jer. ix. 17, 18. There, matter of sorrow is predicted, by commanding the common attendants on mourning and lamentation to be gotten in readiness; here, warning is given of the most imminent dangers, by orders to make the customary preparation against violence, and to account a weapon more necessary than a garment. CAMPBELL{FNS, *in loc.*

<sup>0</sup> Isa. liii. 12.

26 And<sup>266</sup> as they were Jesus took bread, and blessed *it*, and brake *it*, and gave *it* to them, and they began eating,<sup>267</sup>

27 And he took the cup, and gave thanks, and gave *it* to them, saying, Drink ye all of it;

---

<sup>0</sup> This account of the institution of the Lord's Supper is corroborated by that of Paul, in 1 Cor. xi. 23-25, which is usually inserted by Harmonists in this place as parallel testimony; but as the plan of this work leads me to deal with the four Gospels alone, the insertion of other parts of Scripture in the text, here and elsewhere, is omitted.

<sup>0</sup> The Evangelists have determined, by some general expressions, the order of the following events between the sitting down to the paschal supper, and the going to Gethsemane. Before the eating of the paschal lamb, Jesus rises from supper to wash the disciples' feet. John xiii. 1, 4. While they are eating, a declaration is made of Judas's treachery, and the bread is instituted, Matt. xxvi. 21, 26. See also Mark. After, the cup is instituted, Luke xxii. 20; 1 Cor. xi. 25. But as to the particular and precise order of the facts and discourses during this period, Pilkington's words relating to one of them are applicable to all. "It is observable that St. Luke mentions the institution of the communion before the declaration of Judas's treachery; whereas the other Evangelists place these in a different order. But it is a liberty I think very allowable in any historian, to neglect taking notice of the exact order of all the facts, when he is only giving a general account of what was done at a certain time. And if so, whichever was the true successive order, there can be no just imputation upon any of the Evangelists for neglecting to observe it in the narration." Harm. p. 52. NEWCOME{FNS.

---

It is first to be observed that the municipal laws of Greece and Rome were strikingly similar; those of Greece having been freely imported into the Roman jurisprudence. In like manner, the similarity of the Grecian laws and usages with those extant in Asia Minor, indicated a common origin; and thus, what Greece derived from Egypt and the states of Asia Minor, these states, after many ages, received again as the laws of their Roman masters. It should also be remembered that Palestine had been reduced to a Roman province some years before the time of our Saviour; long enough, indeed, to have become familiar with Roman laws and usages, even had they been previously unknown; and that Paul, to whom the Epistle to the Hebrews is generally attributed, was himself a thorough-bred lawyer, well versed in the customs of his country, whether ancient or modern. Among those nations, the civil magistrate often exercised the functions of the priesthood, these dignities being in some respects identical; and thus, whatever was transacted before the magistrate, might naturally seem to partake of the character of an act of religion. Covenants were always made with particular formalities, and to those of graver nature, religious solemnities were often superadded. They were frequently confirmed by an oath, the most solemn form of which was taken standing before the altar; and whosoever swore by the altar, swore by the sacrifice thereon, and was held as firmly bound as though he had passed between the dismembered parts of the victim. Of the latter kind was the oath, by which God confirmed his covenant with Abraham



---

(Gen. xv.) when the visible light of his presence passed between the pieces which the patriarch had divided and laid “each piece one against another.”

With these things in view, we may now look at some of the modes of transferring property, practised by the nations alluded to.

Among the methods of alienation or sale of property by the owner, in his lifetime, was that which in the Roman law was termed *mancipatio*; a mode by which the vendor conveyed property to the purchaser, each party being present, either in person or by his agent, representative, or factor. Five witnesses were requisite, one of whom was called *libripens*, or the balance-holder. This form had its origin in the sale of goods by weight, but was gradually extended to all sales; and the practice was for the buyer to strike the balance with a piece of money called a *sestertius*, which was immediately paid over to the vendor as part of the price; and hence the expression *per æs et libram vendere*.

Wills or testaments were made with great solemnity. One method among the Romans, probably common, in its principal traits, to the other nations before mentioned, was termed the testament *per æs et libram*, it being effected in the form of a sale. This mode seems to have been resorted to whenever the estate was given to a stranger, (*hæres extraneus*), to the exclusion of the *hæres suus*, or *necessarius*, or, as we should say, the heir at law; and it was founded on the purchase of the estate by the adopted heir, who succeeded to the privileges of the child. The forms of a sale by *mancipatio* were therefore scrupulously

---

observed; the presence and agreement of the purchaser, either in person or by his representative or negotiator, being necessary to its validity. The reason for requiring this form was because it *involved a covenant* on the part of the adopted heir or legatee, by which he became bound to pay all the debts of the testator. Having entered into this covenant, he had the best possible title in law to the inheritance, namely, that of a purchaser for a valuable consideration. Among the Greeks, and probably among the Romans also, this was transacted in the presence of a magistrate, who sanctioned it by his sentence of approval. This was the most ancient form of a will; and it does not seem to have been abrogated until the time of Constantine.

Now, when our Saviour speaks of the *new testament in his blood*, or of his *blood of the new testament*, and when Paul uses similar forms of expression may not the figure have reference to the custom above stated? And if so, may not this custom guide us to the true meaning of the words? Does it intimate to us that the promised inheritance was first given to man, as it were by a testament in this ancient form, upon a covenant of *his own perfect obedience* to every part of the law of God; that having broken this covenant, his title became forfeited; that the inheritance was afterwards promised, in the same manner, to every one, Jew or Gentile, upon a new covenant and condition, namely of a true *faith* in Christ; a faith evinced in the fruits of a holy life; that this inheritance by a new testament and covenant was negotiated, as it were, and obtained for

---

man by the mediation of Jesus Christ, ("the mediator of the new testament," Heb. 9. 15,) as the representative of all who should accept it by such faith, and their surety for the performance of its conditions; that it was purchased by *his* obedience and solemnized by the sacrifice of himself as the victim?

This solution is suggested with much diffidence. That it carries these passages clear of all difficulty is not pretended. The very nature of the subject renders it difficult of illustration by any reference to human affairs; and the embarrassment is proportionally increased, whenever the simile is pressed beyond its principal point of resemblance.

See Ayliffe's Pandect, pp. 349, 393, 367-369. Book iii. tit. xii. xv. *Leges Atticæ*, De Testamentis, &c. tit. vi. S. Petit. Comm. in *Leges Atticæ*. p. 479-481. Justin, Inst. lib. 2. tit. 10, § 1. Ibid. tit. 19, § 5, 6. Cooper's Justinian, p. 487. Cod. lib. 6. tit. 23, 1. 15. Fuss's Roman Antiq. ch. 1, § 87, 97, 103, 107, 183. Michaelis, LL. Moses, vol. 4, art. 302. Bp. Patrick, quoted in Bush's Illustrations, p. 254.

28 For this is my blood of the new testament,<sup>268</sup> which is shed for many for the remission of sins.

29 But I say unto you, I will not drink henceforth of this fruit of the vine, until that day when I drink it new with you in my Father's kingdom.

Luke.

CH. XXII. 19-20.

19 And he took bread, and gave thanks, and brake *it*, and gave unto them, saying, This is my body which is given for you: this do in remembrance of me.

20 Likewise also the cup after supper, saying, This cup *is* the new testament in my blood, which is shed for you.

---

<sup>0</sup> The use of the word *testament*, (*diatheke*.) in a sense involving also the idea of a *covenant*, and in connexion with the circumstances of a compact, has greatly perplexed many English readers of the Bible. The difficulty occurs

§ 138. Jesus comforts his disciples. The Holy Spirit promised. (Evening Introducing The Sixth Day Of The Week.) *Jerusalem.*

John.

CH. XIV. 1-31.

Let not your heart be  
troubled: ye believe in  
God, believe also in  
me.

2 In my Father's house  
are many mansions; if  
*it were* not so, I would  
have told you. I go  
to prepare a place for  
you.

---

in Matt. 26, 28, and the parallel places, where our Lord employs the word *testament*, or last will, in connexion with the sacrificial shedding of his own blood; a ceremony which, by means of a suitable animal, usually was adopted among the ancients, upon the making of the most solemn engagements; and instead of which, the mutual partaking of the sacrament of the Lord's Supper, by the contracting parties, was substituted among Christians in later times. The same embarrassment occurs, perhaps in a greater degree, in the exposition of several passages in the eighth and ninth chapters of the Epistle to the Hebrews, (manifestly written by a profound lawyer, be he Paul or Apollos), where he uses language applicable indifferently both to a covenant *inter vivos* and a last will. For with us, a testament is simply a declaration of the last will of the testator, in regard to the disposition of his property after his decease, irrespective of any consent, or even knowledge, at the time, on the part of him to whom the estate is given; while a covenant requires the mutual consent of both parties, as essential to its existence. The one is simply the *ultima voluntas* of an individual, the other is the *aggregatio mentium* of both or all.

The solution of this difficulty belongs rather to theologians, whose province it is by no means intended here to invade; but perhaps a reference to the laws and usages in force in Judea in the times of our Saviour and his Apostles may furnish some aid, which a lawyer might contribute without transgressing the limit of his profession.

3 And if I go and prepare a place for you, I will come again and receive you unto myself; that where I am, *there* ye may be also.

4 And whither I go ye know, and the way ye know.

5 Thomas saith unto him, Lord, we know not whither thou goest; and how can we know the way?

6 Jesus saith unto him, I am the way, and the truth, and the life: no man cometh unto the Father, but by me.

7 If ye had known me, ye should have known my Father also: and from henceforth ye know him, and have seen him.

8 Philip saith unto him, Lord, shew us the Father, and it sufficeth us.

9 Jesus saith unto him,  
Have I been so long  
time with you, and yet  
hast thou not known  
me, Philip? he that  
hath seen me, hath seen  
the Father; and how  
sayest thou *then*, Shew  
us the Father?

10 Believest thou not  
that I am in the Father,  
and the Father in me?  
the words that I speak  
unto you, I speak not of  
myself: but the Father,  
that dwelleth in me, he  
doeth the works.

11 Believe me that I  
*am* in the Father, and  
the Father in me: or  
else believe me for the  
very works' sake.

12 Verily, verily, I  
say unto you, He that  
believeth on me, the  
works that I do shall  
he do also; and greater  
*works* than these shall  
he do; because I go  
unto my Father.

13 And whatsoever ye shall ask in my name, that will I do, that the Father may be glorified in the Son.

14 If ye shall ask any thing in my name, I will do *it*.

15 If ye love me, keep my commandments:

16 And I will pray the Father, and he shall give you another Comforter, that he may abide with you for ever;

17 *Even* the Spirit of truth; whom the world cannot receive, because it seeth him not, neither knoweth him: but ye know him; for he dwelleth with you, and shall be in you.

18 I will not leave you comfortless: I will come to you.

19 Yet a little while, and the world seeth me no more; but ye see me: because I live, ye shall live also.



20 At that day ye shall know that I *am* in my Father, and ye in me, and I in you.

21 He that hath my commandments, and keepeth them, he it is that loveth me: and he that loveth me, shall be loved of my Father, and I will love him, and will manifest myself to him.

22 Judas saith unto him, (not Iscariot) Lord, how is it that thou wilt manifest thyself unto us, and not unto the world?

23 Jesus answered and said unto him, If a man love me, he will keep my words: and my Father will love him, and we will come unto him, and make our abode with him.

24 He that loveth me not, keepeth not my sayings: and the word which ye hear is not mine, but the Father's which sent me.

25 These things have I spoken unto you, being *yet* present with you.

26 But the Comforter, *which is* the Holy Ghost, whom the Father will send in my name, he shall teach you all things, and bring all things to your remembrance, whatsoever I have said unto you.

27 Peace I leave with you, my peace I give unto you: not as the world giveth, give I unto you. Let not your heart be troubled, neither let it be afraid.

28 Ye have heard how I said unto you, I go away, and come *again* unto you. If ye loved me, ye would rejoice, because I said, I go unto the Father: for my Father is greater than I.

29 And now I have told you before it come to pass, that when it is come to pass, ye might believe.

30 Hereafter I will not  
talk much with you: for  
the prince of this world  
cometh, and hath noth-  
ing in me.

31 But that the world  
may know that I love  
the Father; and as the  
Father gave me com-  
mandment, even so I  
do. Arise, let us go  
hence.

[428]

§ 139. Christ the true Vine. His disciples hated by the  
world. (Evening Introducing The Sixth Day Of The  
Week.) *Jerusalem*.

John.

CH. XV. 1-27.

I am the true vine, and  
my Father is the hus-  
bandman.

2 Every branch in  
me that beareth not  
fruit, he taketh away:  
and every *branch* that  
beareth fruit, he pur-  
geth it, that it may  
bring forth more fruit.

3 Now ye are clean through the word which I have spoken unto you.

4 Abide in me, and I in you. As the branch cannot bear fruit of itself, except it abide in the vine: no more can ye, except ye abide in me.

5 I am the vine, ye *are* the branches: He that abideth in me, and I in him, the same bringeth forth much fruit: for without me ye can do nothing.

6 If a man abide not in me, he is cast forth as a branch, and is withered; and men gather them, and cast *them* into the fire, and they are burned.

7 If ye abide in me, and my words abide in you, ye shall ask what ye will, and it shall be done unto you.

8 Herein is my Father glorified, that ye bear much fruit; so shall ye be my disciples.

9 As the Father hath loved me, so have I loved you: continue ye in my love.

10 If ye keep my commandments, ye shall abide in my love; even as I have kept my Father's commandments, and abide in his love.

11 These things have I spoken unto you, that my joy might remain in you, and *that* your joy might be full.

12 This is my commandment, That ye love one another, as I have loved you.

13 Greater love hath no man than this, that a man lay down his life for his friends.

14 Ye are my friends, if ye do whatsoever I command you.

15 Henceforth I call you not servants; for the servant knoweth not what his lord doeth: but I have called you friends; for all things that I have heard of my Father, I have made known unto you.

16 Ye have not chosen me, but I have chosen you, and ordained you, that ye should go and bring forth fruit, and *that* your fruit should remain: that whatsoever ye shall ask of the Father in my name, he may give it to you.

17 These things I command you, that ye love one another.

18 If the world hate you, ye know that it hated me before *it* hated you.

19 If ye were of the world, the world would love his own; but because ye are not of the world, but I have chosen you out of the world, therefore the world hateth you.

20 Remember the word that I said unto you, The servant is not greater than his lord. If they have persecuted me, they will also persecute you: if they have kept my saying, they will keep yours also.

21 But all these things will they do unto you for my name's sake, because they know not him that sent me.

22 If I had not come and spoken unto them, they had not had sin: but now they have no cloak for their sin.

23 He that hateth me, hateth my Father also.

24 If I had not done among them the works which none other man did, they had not had sin: but now have they both seen, and hated both me and my Father.

25 But *this cometh to pass*, that the word might be fulfilled that is written in their law, They hated me without a cause.<sup>269</sup>

26 But when the Comforter is come, whom I will send unto you from the Father, *even* the Spirit of truth, which proceedeth from the Father, he shall testify of me.

27 And ye also shall bear witness, because ye have been with me from the beginning.

---

<sup>0</sup> Ps. lxix. 5.



§ 140. Persecution foretold. Further promise of the Holy Spirit. (Evening Introducing The Sixth Day Of The Week.) *Jerusalem.*

John.

CH. XVI. 1-33.

These things have I spoken unto you, that ye should not be offended.

2 They shall put you out of the synagogues: yea, the time cometh, that whosoever killeth you, will think that he doeth God service.

3 And these things will they do unto you, because they have not known the Father, nor me.

4 But these things have I told you, that when the time shall come, ye may remember that I told you of them. And these things I said not unto you at the beginning because I was with you.

5 But now I go my way  
to him that sent me,  
and none of you as-  
keth me, Whither goest  
thou?

6 But because I have  
said these things unto  
you, sorrow hath filled  
your heart.

7 Nevertheless, I tell  
you the truth: It is ex-  
pedient for you that I  
go away: for if I go  
not away, the Com-  
forter will not come  
unto you; but if I de-  
part, I will send him  
unto you.

8 And when he is  
come, he will reprove  
the world of sin, and of  
righteousness, and of  
judgment:

9 Of sin, because they  
believe not on me;

10 Of righteousness,  
because I go to my Fa-  
ther, and ye see me no  
more;

11 Of judgment, be-  
cause the prince of this  
world is judged.

12 I have yet many things to say unto you, but ye cannot bear them now.

13 Howbeit, when he, the Spirit of truth is come, he will guide you into all truth: for he shall not speak of himself; but whatsoever he shall hear, *that* shall he speak: and he will shew you things to come.

14 He shall glorify me: for he shall receive of mine, and shall shew *it* unto you.

15 All things that the Father hath are mine: therefore said I, that he shall take of mine, and shall shew it unto you.

16 A little while, and ye shall not see me: and again, a little while, and ye shall see me, because I go to the Father.

17 Then said *some* of his disciples among themselves, What is this that he saith unto us, A little while, and ye shall not see me: and again, a little while, and ye shall see me; and, Because I go to the Father?

18 They said therefore, What is this that he saith, A little while? we cannot tell what he saith.

19 Now Jesus knew that they were desirous to ask him, and said unto them, Do ye inquire among yourselves of that I said, A little while, and ye shall not see me: and again, a little while, and ye shall see me?

20 Verily, verily, I say unto you, that ye shall weep and lament, but the world shall rejoice: and ye shall be sorrowful, but your sorrow shall be turned into joy.

21 A woman when she is in travail hath sorrow, because her hour is come: but as soon as she is delivered of the child, she remembereth no more the anguish, for joy that a man is born into the world.

22 And ye now therefore have sorrow: but I will see you again, and your heart shall rejoice, and your joy no man taketh from you.

23 And in that day ye shall ask me nothing. Verily, verily, I say unto you, Whatsoever ye shall ask the Father in my name, he will give *it* you.

24 Hitherto have ye asked nothing in my name: ask, and ye shall receive, that your joy may be full.

25 These things have I spoken unto you in proverbs: but the time cometh when I shall no more speak unto you in proverbs, but I shall shew you plainly of the Father.

26 At that day ye shall ask in my name: and I say not unto you, that I will pray the Father for you:

27 For the Father himself loveth you, because ye have loved me, and have believed that I came out from God.

28 I came forth from the Father, and am come into the world: again, I leave the world, and go to the Father.

29 His disciples said unto him, Lo, now speakest thou plainly, and speakest no proverb.

30 Now are we sure  
that thou knowest all  
things, and needest not  
that any man should  
ask thee: by this we be-  
lieve that thou camest  
forth from God.

31 Jesus answered  
them, Do ye now be-  
lieve?

32 Behold, the hour  
cometh, yea, is now  
come, that ye shall  
be scattered every man  
to his own, and shall  
leave me alone: and  
yet I am not alone, be-  
cause the Father is with  
me.

33 These things I have  
spoken unto you, that  
in me ye might have  
peace. In the world ye  
shall have tribulation,  
but be of good cheer:  
I have overcome the  
world.

[438]

§ 141. Christ's last prayer with his disciples.  
(Evening Introducing The Sixth Day Of The Week.)  
*Jerusalem.*

John.

CH. XVII. 1-26.

These words spake Jesus, and lifted up his eyes to heaven, and said, Father, the hour is come; glorify thy Son, that thy Son also may glorify thee:

2 As thou hast given him power over all flesh, that he should give eternal life to as many as thou hast given him.

3 And this is life eternal, that they might know thee the only true God, and Jesus Christ whom thou hast sent.

4 I have glorified thee on the earth: I have finished the work which thou gavest me to do.

5 And now, O Father, glorify thou me with thine own self, with the glory which I had with thee before the world was.



6 I have manifested thy name unto the men which thou gavest me out of the world: thine they were, and thou gavest them me; and they have kept thy word.

7 Now they have known that all things whatsoever thou hast given me are of thee:

8 For I have given unto them the words which thou gavest me; and they have received *them*, and have known surely that I came out from thee, and they have believed that thou didst send me.

9 I pray for them: I pray not for the world, but for them which thou hast given me; for they are thine.

10 And all mine are thine, and thine are mine; and I am glorified in them.

11 And now I am  
no more in the world,  
but these are in the  
world, and I come to  
thee. Holy Father,  
keep through thine  
own name those whom  
thou hast given me,  
that they may be one,  
as we *are*.

12 While I was with  
them in the world, I  
kept them in thy name:  
those that thou gavest  
me I have kept, and  
none of them is lost,  
but the son of perdi-  
tion; that the scripture  
might be fulfilled.<sup>270</sup>

13 And now come I to  
thee, and these things I  
speak in the world, that  
they might have my  
joy fulfilled in them-  
selves.

14 I have given them  
thy word; and the  
world hath hated them,  
because they are not of  
the world, even as I am  
not of the world.

---

<sup>0</sup> Ps. xli. 9, and cix. 8, 17.

15 I pray not that  
thou shouldest take  
them out of the world,  
but that thou shouldest  
keep them from the  
evil.

16 They are not of the  
world, even as I am not  
of the world.

17 Sanctify them  
through thy truth: thy  
word is truth.

18 As thou hast sent me  
into the world, even so  
have I also sent them  
into the world.

19 And for their sakes  
I sanctify myself, that  
they also might be  
sanctified through the  
truth.

20 Neither pray I for  
these alone; but for  
them also which shall  
believe on me through  
their word:

21 That they all may  
be one; as thou, Fa-  
ther, *art* in me, and I  
in thee, that they also  
may be one in us: that  
the world may believe  
that thou hast sent me.

22 And the glory  
which thou gavest me,  
I have given them; that  
they may be one, even  
as we are one;

23 I in them, and thou  
in me, that they may  
be made perfect in one;  
and that the world may  
know that thou hast  
sent me, and hast loved  
them as thou hast loved  
me.

24 Father, I will that  
they also whom thou  
hast given me be  
with me where I am;  
that they may behold  
my glory which thou  
hast given me: for  
thou lovedst me before  
the foundation of the  
world.

25 O righteous Fa-  
ther, the world hath not  
known thee: but I have  
known thee, and these  
have known that thou  
hast sent me.

26 And I have declared unto them thy name, and will declare *it*: that the love where-with thou hast loved me, may be in them, and I in them.

[442]

§ 142. The agony in Gethsemane. (Evening  
Introducing The Sixth Day Of The Week.)  
*Jerusalem.*

Matthew.

CH. XXVI. 30, 36-46.

30 And when they had sung a hymn, they went out into the mount of Olives.

36 Then cometh Jesus with them unto a place called Gethsemane, and saith unto the disciples, Sit ye here, while I go and pray yonder.

37 And he took with him Peter, and the two sons of Zebedee, and began to be sorrowful and very heavy.

Mark.

CH. XIV. 26, 32-42.

26 And when they had sung an hymn, they went out into the mount of Olives.

32 And they came to a place which was named Gethsemane: and he saith to his disciples, Sit ye here, while I shall pray.

33 And he taketh with him Peter, and James, and John, and began to be sore amazed, and to be very heavy;

38 Then saith he unto them, My soul is exceeding sorrowful, even unto death: tarry ye here, and watch with me.

39 And he went a little further, and fell on his face, and prayed, saying, O my Father, if it be possible, let this cup pass from me: nevertheless, not as I will, but as thou *wilt*.

40 And he cometh unto the disciples, and findeth them asleep, and saith unto Peter, What! could ye not watch with me one hour?

41 Watch and pray, that ye enter not into temptation: the spirit indeed *is* willing, but the flesh *is* weak.

34 And saith unto them, My soul is exceeding sorrowful unto death: tarry ye here, and watch.

35 And he went forward a little, and fell on the ground, and prayed that, if it were possible, the hour might pass from him.

36 And he said, Abba, Father, all things *are* possible unto thee; take away this cup from me: nevertheless, not what I will, but what thou wilt.

37 And he cometh, and findeth them sleeping, and saith unto Peter, Simon, sleepest thou? couldest not thou watch one hour?

38 Watch ye and pray, lest ye enter into temptation. The spirit truly *is* ready, but the flesh *is* weak.

42 He went away again the second time, and prayed, saying, O my Father, if this cup may not pass away from me, except I drink it, thy will be done.

43 And he came and found them asleep again: for their eyes were heavy.

44 And he left them, and went away again, and prayed the third time, saying the same words.

45 Then cometh he to his disciples, and saith unto them, Sleep on now, and take *your* rest: behold, the hour is at hand, and the Son of man is betrayed into the hands of sinners.

46 Rise, let us be going: behold, he is at hand that doth betray me.

39 And again he went away, and prayed, and spake the same words.

40 And when he returned, he found them asleep again, (for their eyes were heavy;) neither wist they what to answer him.

41 And he cometh the third time, and saith unto them, Sleep on now, and take *your* rest: it is enough, the hour is come: behold, the Son of man is betrayed into the hands of sinners.

42 Rise up, let us go; lo, he that betrayeth me is at hand.

Luke.

John.

CH. XXII. 39-46.

39 And he came out, and went, as he was wont, to the mount of Olives; and his disciples also followed him.

40 And when he was at the place, he said unto them, Pray that ye enter not into temptation.

41 And he was withdrawn from them about a stone's cast, and kneeled down, and prayed,

42 Saying, Father, if thou be willing, remove this cup from me: nevertheless, not my will, but thine, be done.

43 And there appeared an angel unto him from heaven, strengthening him.

CH. XVIII. 1.

When Jesus had spoken these words, he went forth with his disciples over the brook Cedron, where was a garden, into which he entered, and his disciples.



44 And being in an  
agony, he prayed more  
earnestly: and his  
sweat was as it were  
great drops of blood<sup>271</sup>  
falling down to the  
ground.

45 And when he rose  
up from prayer, and  
was come to his dis-  
ciples, he found them  
sleeping for sorrow,<sup>272</sup>

46 And said unto them,  
Why sleep ye? rise and  
pray, lest ye enter into  
temptation.

---

<sup>0</sup> The strangeness of such a profusion of blood has been urged, first, against the probability, and then against the truth, of the narrative. But learned men have related instances of mental agony so great as to force the blood through the pores; and if this has ever occurred, it may well be believed to have occurred in the present case. See *Bloomfield* and *A. Clarke*, in loc. It should be observed, however, that Luke does not directly affirm that it was blood. He only *compares* the sweat to that of blood, using a term of similitude, (*quasi grumi sanguinis*—*Beza*; *tanquam demissiones sanguinis*—*Tremellius*; *sicut guttæ sanguinis*—*Vulg.* and *Molinaus*;) which may signify no more than that the drops of sweat were as large as drops of blood, which, from its viscosity, are very large.

<sup>0</sup> No other Evangelist mentions the cause of their slumber, except Luke, who ascribes it to their sorrow. It is observable, that Luke was a physician, (Col. iv. 14,) and therefore well knew that deep mental distress frequently induced sleep. To this cause may perhaps be referred the fact, that persons condemned to die are often waked from sound sleep by the executioner. The internal evidence here afforded of the truth of Luke's narrative, is corroborated by his notice of the bloody sweat, ver. 44, and of the miraculous healing of the ear of Malchus, ver. 51; facts which are not related by any other Evangelist, but which would naturally attract the attention of a physician.

[444]

§ 143. Jesus betrayed and made prisoner. (Evening  
Introducing The Sixth Day Of The Week.) *Mount of  
Olives.*

Matthew.

CH. XXVI. 47-56.

47 And while he yet spake, lo, Judas, one of the twelve, came, and with him a great multitude with swords and staves, from the chief priests and elders of the people.

48 Now, he that betrayed him, gave them a sign, saying, Whomsoever I shall kiss, that same is he; hold him fast.

49 And forthwith he came to Jesus, and said, Hail Master; and kissed him.

Mark.

CH. XIV. 43-52

43 And immediately while he yet spake, cometh Judas, one of the twelve, and with him a great multitude with swords and staves, from the chief priests, and the scribes, and the elders.

44 And he that betrayed him, had given them a token, saying, Whomsoever I shall kiss, that same is he; take him, and lead *him* away safely.

45 And as soon as he was come, he goeth straightway to him, and saith, Master, Master; and kissed him.

50 And Jesus said unto him, Friend, wherefore art thou come? Then came they, and laid hands on Jesus, and took him.

51 And behold, one of them which were with Jesus, stretched out *his* hand, and drew his sword, and struck a servant of the high priest, and smote off his ear.

52 Then said Jesus unto him, Put up again thy sword into his place: for all they that take the sword, shall perish with the sword.<sup>273</sup>

53 Thinkest thou that I cannot now pray to my Father, and he shall presently give me more than twelve legions of angels?

54 But how then shall the scriptures be fulfilled, that thus it must be?

47 And one of them that stood by, drew a sword, and smote a servant of the high priest, and cut off his ear.

---

<sup>0</sup> Gen. ix. 6.

55 In that same hour said Jesus to the multitudes, Are ye come out as against a thief with swords and staves for to take me? I sat daily with you teaching in the temple, and ye laid no hold on me.

56 But all this was done, that the scriptures of the prophets might be fulfilled.

Then all the disciples forsook him, and fled.

48 And Jesus answered and said unto them, Are ye come out as against a thief, with swords and *with* staves to take me?

49 I was daily with you in the temple, teaching, and ye took me not: but the scriptures must be fulfilled.

50 And they all forsook him and fled.

51 And there followed him a certain young man, having a linen cloth cast about *his naked body*; and the young men laid hold on him.

52 And he left the linen cloth, and fled from them naked.

Luke.  
CH. XXII. 47-53.

John.  
CH. XVIII. 2-21.

47 And while he yet spake, behold a multitude, and he that was called Judas, one of the twelve, went before them, and drew near unto Jesus to kiss him.

48 But Jesus said unto him, Judas, betrayest thou the Son of man with a kiss?

49 When they which were about him, saw what would follow, they said unto him, Lord, shall we smite with the sword?

2 And Judas also, which betrayed him, knew the place: for Jesus oftentimes resorted thither with his disciples.

3 Judas then, having received a band of *men* and officers from the chief priests and Pharisees, cometh thither with lanterns, and torches, and weapons.

4 Jesus therefore, knowing all things that should come upon him, went forth, and said unto them, Whom seek ye?

5 They answered him, Jesus of Nazareth. Jesus saith unto them, I am *he*.<sup>274</sup> And Judas also, which betrayed him, stood with them.

---

<sup>0</sup> In the order of events, Jesus first voluntarily discriminates himself; after which Judas gives the agreed sign to his enemies. Newcome.

6 As soon then as he had said unto them, I am *he*, they went backward, and fell to the ground.

7 Then asked he them again, Whom seek ye? And they said, Jesus of Nazareth.

8 Jesus answered, I have told you that I am *he*. If therefore ye seek me, let these go their way:

9 That the saying might be fulfilled which he spake, Of them which thou gavest me, have I lost none.

50 And one of them smote the servant of the high priest, and cut off his right ear.

10 Then Simon Pe- having a sword, drew it, ter,<sup>275</sup>

---

<sup>0</sup> Lenfant and Bp. Pearce think that Peter was named by John, because he was then dead; and that he was not named by the other Evangelists because when they wrote he was living, and the action might have subjected him to public justice, or at least to reproach. NEWCOME{FNS.

51 And Jesus answered and said, Suffer ye thus far. And he touched his ear, and healed him.

52 Then Jesus said unto the chief priests, and captains of the temple, and the elders which were come to him, Be ye come out as against a thief with swords and staves?

53 When I was daily with you in the temple, ye stretched forth no hands against me: but this is your hour, and power of darkness.

11 Then said Jesus unto Peter, Put up thy sword into the sheath: the cup which my Father hath given me, shall I not drink it?

12 Then the band, and the captain, and officers of the Jews took Jesus, and bound him.

[446]

§ 144. Jesus before Caiaphas. Peter thrice denies him. (Night Introducing The Sixth Day Of The Week.) *Jerusalem.*

Matthew.

CH. XXVI. 57, 58, 69-75.

57 And they that had laid hold on Jesus, led *him* away to Caiaphas the high priest, where the scribes and the elders were assembled.

58 But Peter followed him afar off, unto the high priest's palace, and went in, and sat with the servants to see the end.

69 Now Peter sat without in the palace: and a damsel came unto him, saying, Thou also wast with Jesus of Galilee.

70 But he denied before *them* all, saying, I know not what thou sayest.



71 And when he was another *maid* saw him, and said unto them that were there, T  
gone out into the  
porch,<sup>276</sup>

72 And again he de-  
nied with an oath, I do  
not know the man.

73 And after a while  
came unto *him* they  
that stood by, and  
said to Peter, Surely  
thou also art *one* of  
them; for thy speech  
bewrayeth thee.

74 Then began he to  
curse and to swear,  
*saying*, I know not the  
man. And immediately  
the cock crew.

---

<sup>0</sup> Here is a minute indication of veracity, which would have been lost upon us but for the narrative of John. Matthew only states the fact that the maid in the porch recognized Peter as one of the disciples of Jesus; but John (xviii. 16,) informs us how she knew him to be so; namely, because he was brought in by John, who was a frequent guest at the house of her master the high priest. BLUNT{FNS, Veracity &c., Sect. i. 12, 18.

75 And Peter remembered the word of Jesus, which said unto him, Before the cock crow thou shalt deny me thrice. And he went out, and wept bitterly.

what thou sayest. And immediately, while he yet spake, the cock crew.<sup>279</sup> 61 And the Lord turned, and looked upon Peter. And Peter remembered the word of the Lord, how he had said unto him, Before the cock crow, thou shalt deny me thrice. 62 And Peter went out and wept bitterly.

---

<sup>279</sup> Matthew and Mark relate Peter's denials of Christ after his condemnation, and the insults consequent upon it. It is plain that they happened while the High Priest and council were sitting in judgment. But instances of recurring in this manner to what had been omitted in its proper place are common in the Gospels; and in this place the thread of the narration is preserved unbroken.

It having been expressly mentioned by each Evangelist, that Peter would *thrice* deny Jesus, we may conclude that each has related the *three* denials which Jesus foretold.

*Peter's first denial.* Peter was *without*, or *beneath*, in the hall of Caiaphas's house. Dr. Scott, on Matth. xxvi. 3, observes that *aule* signifies an house, (Luke xi. 21,) and that emphatically it signifies the king's house, or palace. But in Luke xxii. 55, it seems to signify a spacious apartment, probably the High Priest's judgment-hall. It was the place in which Jesus stood before the High Priest, (Luke xxii. 61,) and had an *atrium* or *vestibulum* at its entrance. This was an unfit place for the tribunal of the High Priest at such an hour, (John xviii. 18.) Sir John Chardin says, "In the lower Asia the day is always hot; and in the height of summer the nights are as cold as at Paris in the month of March." It remains therefore that we understand it of a spacious chamber, such as Shaw mentions, Travels, 4to. pp. 207, 8.

Peter was not in the *higher* part, where Jesus stood before the High Priest; but *without* that division of the hall, and in the *lower* part, with the servants

Luke.  
CH. XXII. 54-62.

John.  
CH. XVIII. 13-18, 25-  
27.

---

and officers. The damsel, who kept the door, had entered into the hall when she charged Peter.

*Peter's second denial.* Peter, having once denied Jesus, naturally retired from the place where his accuser was, to the vestibule of the hall, (Matt. xxvi. 71); and it was the time of the first cock-crowing, or soon after midnight. After remaining here a short time, perhaps near an hour, another damsel sees him, and says to those who were standing by in the vestibule, that he was one of them. Peter, to avoid this charge, withdraws into the hall, and stands and warms himself, (John xviii. 25.) The damsel, and those to whom she had spoken, follow him; the communication between the places being immediate. Here a *man* enforces the charge of the damsel, according to Luke; and *others* urge it according to John, (though by him the plural may be used for the singular,) and Peter denies Jesus vehemently.

*Peter's third denial.* Peter was now in the hall. Observe Matt. xxvi. 75, and Luke xxii. 62. He was also within sight of Jesus, though at such a distance from him that Jesus could know what passed only in a supernatural way. About an hour after his second denial, those who stood by founded a charge against him on his being a Galilean, which, Luke says, one in particular strongly affirmed, (though here Matthew and Mark may use the plural for the singular,) and which, according to John, was supported by one of Malchus's relations. This occasioned a more vehement denial than before; and immediately the cock

Then took they him,  
and led *him* and  
brought him into the  
high priest's house.  
And Peter followed  
afar off.

13 And led him away  
to Annas first,<sup>277</sup> (for  
he was father-in-law to  
Caiaphas, which was  
the high priest that  
same year.)

14 Now Caiaphas was  
he which gave coun-  
sel to the Jews, that it  
was expedient that one  
man should die for the  
people.

15 And Simon Peter  
followed Jesus, and  
*so did* another disci-  
ple. That disciple was  
known unto the high  
priest, and went in with  
Jesus, into the palace  
of the high priest.

---

crew the second time. The first denial may have been between our twelve and one; and the second between our two and three. We must further observe, that Matt. xxvi. 57, lays the scene of Peter's denials in the house of Caiaphas; whereas the transactions of John xviii. 15-23 seem to have passed in the house of Annas. But John xviii. 24 is here transposed to its regular place, with Le Clerc. NEWCOME{FNS.

<sup>0</sup> Probably by way of compliment to the past high priest who was also the father-in-law of Caiaphas. If this circumstance never happened, it is difficult to discover how the introduction of it could serve the purposes of fiction. See Roberts, *Light Shining*, &c. pp. 171, 172.

55 And when they had kindled a fire in the midst of the hall, and were set down together, Peter sat down among them.

56 But a certain maid beheld him as he sat by the fire, and earnestly looked upon him, and said, This man was also with him.

57 And he denied him, saying, Woman, I know him not.

58 And after a little while another saw him, and said, Thou art also of them. And Peter said, Man, I am not.

16 But Peter stood at the door without. Then went out that other disciple which was known unto the high priest, and spake unto her that kept the door, and brought in Peter.

18 And the servants and officers stood there, who had made a fire of coals; (for it was cold) and they warmed themselves: and Peter stood with them, and warmed himself.

17 Then saith the damsel that kept the door unto Peter, Art not thou also *one* of this man's disciples? He saith, I am not.

25 And Simon Peter stood and warmed himself. They said therefore unto him, Art not thou also *one* of his disciples? He denied *it*, and said, I am not.

59 And about the space of one hour after, another confidently affirmed, saying, Of a truth this *fellow* also was with him: for he is a Galilean.

60 And Peter said, *Introd.* p. 258, note 1.  
Man, I know not<sup>278</sup>,  
cited in 4 HORNE'S{FNS

26 One of the servants of the high priest (being his kinsman whose ear Peter cut off) saith, did not I see thee in the garden with him?

[450]

§ 145. Jesus before Caiaphas. He declares himself to be the Christ, &c. (Morning Of The Sixth Day Of The Week.) *Jerusalem.*

Matthew.  
CH. XXVI. 59-68.  
59 Now the chief priests and elders, and all the council, sought false witness against Jesus, to put him to death;

Mark.  
CH. XI  
55 An  
priests,  
council  
ness ag  
put him  
found n

<sup>0</sup> The seeming contradiction between Luke, who relates that it was a man who charged Peter with being a follower of Jesus, and Matthew and Mark who state that he was accused by a maid, is reconciled by attending to the narrative of John, (xviii. 25,) who writes, "*They said.*" Whence it appears that there were several who spake on this occasion, and that each Evangelist refers to the accusation which made the deepest impression on his own mind. See MICHAELIS{FNS and Bp. MIDDLETON{FNS

60 But found none:  
yea, though many false  
witnesses came, *yet*  
found they none. At  
the last came two false  
witnesses,

61 And said, This *fel-*  
*low* said, I am able to  
destroy the temple of  
God, and to build it in  
three days.

62 And the high priest  
arose, and said unto  
him, Answerest thou  
nothing? what *is it*  
*which* these witness  
against thee?

56 For many  
false witness ag-  
ainst him, but their wit-  
nesses agreed not together.

57 And there arose  
certain, and bare false  
witness against him,  
saying,

58 We heard him  
say, I will destroy this t-  
emple that is made w-  
ith hands, and within t-  
hree days I will build  
it up, other made with  
hands.

59 But neither so-  
lemnly their witness agreed  
together.

60 And the high p-  
riest stood up in the m-  
idst, and asked Jesus,  
saying, Answerest thou  
nothing? what *is it*  
*which* these wit-  
nesses against thee?

63 But Jesus held his peace. And the high priest answered and said unto him, I adjure thee by the living God, that thou tell us whether thou be the Christ, the Son of God.

64 Jesus saith unto him, Thou hast said: nevertheless, I say unto you, Hereafter shall ye see the Son of man sitting on the right hand of power, and coming in the clouds of heaven.

65 Then the high priest rent his clothes, saying, He hath spoken blasphemy; what further need have we of witnesses? behold, now ye have heard his blasphemy.

66 What think ye? They answered and said, He is guilty of death.

61 But  
peace,  
nothing  
high pri  
and saic  
thou the  
of the B

62 And  
am: an  
the Son  
on the  
power,  
the clou

63 Then  
rent his  
saith, V  
any furt

64 Ye I  
blasphem  
ye?  
condem  
guilty o



67 Then did they spit in  
his face, and buffeted  
him; and others smote  
*him* with the palms of  
their hands,

68 Saying, Prophecy thou Christ, Who is he that smote thee?  
unto us,<sup>280</sup>

Luke.

CH. XXII. 63-71.

66 And as soon as  
it was day, the elders  
of the people, and the  
chief priests, and the  
scribes, came together,  
and led him into their  
council, saying,

67 Art thou the Christ?  
tell us. And he said  
unto them, If I tell you,  
ye will not believe.

John.

CH. XVIII. 19-24.

19 The high priest then  
asked Jesus of his dis-  
ciples, and of his doc-  
trine.

65 And some be-  
to spit on him,  
to cover his face,  
to buffet him, and  
say unto him, Pro-  
phesy: and the serv-  
ants did strike him with  
the palms of their hands.

---

<sup>0</sup> Matthew alone states this fact; and he states nothing in explanation of it. The other Evangelists add another fact, which shows that the Jews were quite consistent in asking him to designate who struck him, namely, that they had previously "blindfolded him." Now the omissions of particulars are characteristic of one to whom it never occurs that they are wanted to make his statement credible, but who, conscious of his own integrity, states his facts and leaves them to their fate; and they cannot fairly be accounted for, upon any other supposition than the truth of the narrative. BLUNT{FNS, Veracity, &c., sec. i. 10.

68 And if I also ask  
*you*, ye will not answer  
me, nor let *me* go.

20 Jesus answered  
him, I spake openly to  
the world; I ever taught  
in the synagogue, and  
in the temple, whither  
the Jews always resort;  
and in secret have I  
said nothing.

69 Hereafter shall the  
Son of man sit on the  
right hand of the power  
of God.

70 Then said they all,  
Art thou then the Son  
of God? And he said  
unto them, Ye say that  
I am.

21 Why askest thou  
me? ask them which  
heard me, what I have  
said unto them: be-  
hold, they know what I  
said.

71 And they said, What  
need we any further  
witness? for we our-  
selves have heard of  
his own mouth.

22 And when he  
had thus spoken, one  
of the officers which  
stood by, struck Jesus  
with the palm of his  
hand, saying, Answer-  
est thou the high priest  
so?

63 And the men that  
held Jesus, mocked  
him, and smote *him*.

64 And when they had blindfolded him, they struck him on the face, and asked him, saying, Prophecy, who is it that smote thee?

65 And many other things blasphemously spake they against him.

23 Jesus answered him, If I have spoken evil, bear witness of the evil: but if well, why smitest thou me?

24 (Now Annas had sent him bound unto Caiaphas the high priest.)

[452]

§ 146. The Sanhedrim lead Jesus away to Pilate.  
(Sixth Day Of The Week.) *Jerusalem.*

Matthew.

CH. XXVII. 1, 2, 11-14.

When the morning was come, all the chief priests and elders of the people took counsel against Jesus to put him to death.

2 And when they had bound him, they led *him* away, and delivered him to Pontius Pilate the governor.

Mark.

CH. XV. 1-5.

And straightway in the morning the chief priests held a consultation with the elders and scribes, and the whole council, and bound Jesus, and carried *him* away, and delivered *him* to Pilate.

11 And Jesus stood before the governor: and the governor asked him, saying, Art thou the King of the Jews? And Jesus said unto him, Thou sayest.

12 And when he was accused of the chief priests and elders, he answered nothing.

13 Then saith Pilate unto him, Hearest thou not how many things they witness against thee?

14 And he answered him to never a word; insomuch that the governor marvelled greatly.

2 And Pilate asked him, Art thou the King of the Jews? And he answering, said unto him, Thou sayest it.

3 And the chief priests accused him of many things: but he answered nothing.

4 And Pilate asked him again, saying, Answerest thou nothing? behold how many things they witness against thee.

5 But Jesus yet answered nothing: so that Pilate marvelled.

Luke.  
CH. XXIII. 1-5.

John.  
CH. XVIII. 28-38.

And the whole multitude of them arose, and led him unto Pilate.

2 And they began to accuse him, saying, We found this *fellow* perverting the nation, and forbidding to give tribute to Cesar, saying, That he himself is Christ, a King.

28 Then led they Jesus from Caiaphas unto the hall of judgment: and it was early; and they themselves went not into the judgment-hall, lest they should be defiled; but that they might eat the passover.

29 Pilate then went out unto them, and said, What accusation bring ye against this man?

30 They answered and said unto him, If he were not a malefactor, we would not have delivered him up unto thee.

31 Then said Pilate unto them, Take ye him, and judge him according to your law. The Jews therefore said unto him, It is not lawful for us to put any man to death:

- 32 That the saying of Jesus might be fulfilled, which he spake, signifying what death he should die.
- 3 And Pilate asked him saying, Art thou the King of the Jews? And he answered him and said, Thou sayest *it*.
- 33 Then Pilate entered into the judgment-hall again, and called Jesus, and said unto him, Art thou the King of the Jews?
- 34 Jesus answered him, Sayest thou this thing of thyself, or did others tell it thee of me?
- 35 Pilate answered, Am I a Jew? Thine own nation, and the chief priests, have delivered thee unto me. What hast thou done?
- 36 Jesus answered, My kingdom is not of this world: if my kingdom were of this world, then would my servants fight,<sup>281</sup> that I should not be delivered to the Jews: but now is my kingdom not from hence.

---

<sup>0</sup> Jesus seems here almost to have challenged inquiry into the assault so lately

37 Pilate therefore said unto him, Art thou a king then? Jesus answered, Thou sayest that I am a king. To this end was I born, and for this cause came I into the world, that I should bear witness unto the truth. Every one that is of the truth, heareth my voice.

4 Then said Pilate to the chief priests, and to the people, I find no fault in this man.

38 Pilate saith unto him, What is truth? And when he had said this, he went out again unto the Jews, and saith them, I find in him no fault *at all*.

5 And they were the more fierce, saying, He stirreth up the people, teaching throughout all Jewry, beginning from Galilee to this place.

[454]

---

committed by Peter upon the servant of the high priest. St. Luke, however, states a fact which accounts for their not making such inquiry, ch. xxii. 51. *He touched his ear and healed him*. An inquiry into the truth would have frustrated the malicious purpose of the enemies of Jesus, by proving his own compassionate nature, his submission to the laws, and his miraculous powers. Blunt, Veracity, &c., sect. i. 19.

§ 147. Jesus before Herod. (Sixth Day Of The Week.) *Jerusalem.*

Luke.

CH. XXIII. 6-12.

6 When Pilate heard of Galilee, he asked whether the man were a Galilean.

7 And as soon as he knew that he belonged unto Herod's jurisdiction, he sent him to Herod, who himself was also at Jerusalem at that time.<sup>282</sup>

---

<sup>0</sup> Here is an obscure intimation that neither Pilate nor Herod were residents of Jerusalem; and the manner of the insinuation deserves notice, as a mark of conscious veracity in the narrator. Now it appears from Josephus, that this Herod was the very opposite of his successor, Herod Agrippa; the former being partial to the Greeks, and a hater of the Jews; while the latter so loved the Jews that he took pleasure in constantly dwelling at Jerusalem. It is therefore evident that Herod's presence at Jerusalem at this time was merely casual; as that of Pilate certainly was, the Roman governors residing at Cæsarea. See Josephus, Ant. xviii. iv. § 1.-xix. vii. § 3.-xx. iv. § 4. BLUNT{FNS, Veracity, &c., sect. II. 11.



8 And when Herod saw Jesus, he was exceeding glad: for he was desirous to see him of a long *season*, because he had heard many things of him; and he hoped to have seen some miracle done by him.

9 Then he questioned with him in many words; but he answered him nothing.

10 And the chief priests and scribes stood and vehemently accused him.

11 And Herod with his men of war set him at nought, and mocked *him*, and arrayed him in a gorgeous robe, and sent him again to Pilate.

12 And the same day Pilate and Herod were made friends together; for before they were at enmity between themselves.

§ 148. Pilate seeks to release Jesus. The Jews demand Barabbas. (Sixth Day Of The Week.) *Jerusalem.*

Matthew.

CH. XXVII. 15-26.

15 Now at *that* feast, the governor was wont to release unto the people a prisoner, whom they would.

16 And they had then a notable prisoner, called Barabbas.

17 Therefore, when they were gathered together, Pilate said unto them, Whom will ye that I release unto you? Barabbas, or Jesus, which is called Christ?

18 (For he knew that for envy they had delivered him.)

Mark.

CH. XV. 6-15.

6 Now at *that* feast he released unto them one prisoner, whomsoever they desired.

7 And there was *one* named Barabbas, *which lay* bound with them that had made insurrection with him, who had committed murder in the insurrection.

8 And the multitude crying aloud, began to desire *him to do* as he had ever done unto them.

9 But Pilate answered them, saying, Will ye that I release unto you the King of the Jews?

10 (For he knew that the chief priests had delivered him for envy.)

19 When he was set down on the judgment-seat, his wife sent unto him, saying, Have thou nothing to do with that just man: for I have suffered many things this day in a dream, because of him.

20 But the chief priests and elders persuaded the multitude that they should ask Barabbas, and destroy Jesus.

21 The governor answered and said unto them, Whether of the twain, will ye that I release unto you? They said, Barabbas.

22 Pilate saith unto them, What shall I do then with Jesus, which is called Christ? *They* all say unto him, Let him be crucified.

23 And the governor said, Why! what evil hath he done? But they cried out the more, saying, Let him be crucified.

11 But the chief priests moved the people that he should rather release Barabbas unto them.

12 And Pilate answered, and said again unto them, What will ye then, that I shall do *unto him* whom ye call the King of the Jews?

13 And they cried out again, Crucify him.

14 Then Pilate said unto them, Why, what evil hath he done? And they cried out the more exceedingly, Crucify him.

24 When Pilate saw  
that he could prevail  
nothing, but *that* rather  
a tumult was made,  
he took water, and  
washed *his* hands be-  
fore the multitude, say-  
ing, I am innocent of  
the blood of this just  
person: see ye *to it*.

25 Then answered all  
the people, and said,  
His blood *be* on us, and  
on our children.

26 Then released he  
Barabbas unto them:

15 And *so* Pilate, will-  
ing to content the peo-  
ple, released Barabbas  
unto them.

Luke.

CH. XXIII. 13-25.

13 And Pilate, when he  
had called together the  
chief priests, and the  
rulers, and the people,

John.

CH. XVIII. 39, 40.

14 Said unto them,  
 Ye have brought this  
 man unto me, as  
 one that perverteth the  
 people: and behold,  
 I, having examined  
*him* before you, have  
 found no fault in this  
 man, touching those  
 things whereof ye ac-  
 cuse him;

15 No, nor yet Herod:  
 for I sent you to him;  
 and lo, nothing worthy  
 of death is done unto  
 him:

16 I will therefore  
 chastise him, and re-  
 lease *him*.

17 (For of necessity he  
 must release one unto  
 them at the feast.)

18 And they cried out  
 all at once, saying,  
 Away with this *man*,  
 and release unto us  
 Barabbas:

39 But ye have a cus-  
 tom that I should re-  
 lease unto you one at  
 the passover: will ye  
 therefore, that I release  
 unto you the king of  
 the Jews?

40 Then cried they  
 all again, saying, Not  
 this man, but Barab-  
 bas. Now Barabbas  
 was a robber.

19 (Who, for a certain sedition made in the city, and for murder, was cast into prison.)

20 Pilate therefore, willing to release Jesus, spake again unto them.

21 But they cried, saying, Crucify *him*, crucify him.

22 And he said unto them the third time, Why, what evil hath he done? I have found no cause of death in him; I will therefore chastise him, and let *him* go.

23 And they were instant with loud voices, requiring that he might be crucified: and the voices of them, and of the chief priests prevailed.

24 And Pilate gave sentence<sup>283</sup> that it should be as they required.

---

<sup>0</sup> The accuracy of Luke, as a man of education, is observable in this statement of the formal judgment pronounced by Pilate, which is only implied in the narratives of the other Evangelists.

25 And he released  
unto them him that for  
sedition and murder  
was cast into prison,  
whom they had de-  
sired; but he delivered  
Jesus to their will.

[458]

§ 149. Pilate delivers up Jesus to death. He is  
scourged and mocked. *Jerusalem.*

Matthew.

CH. XXVII. 26-30.

26 And when he had  
scourged Jesus, he de-  
livered *him* to be cru-  
cified.

27 Then the soldiers of  
the governor took Je-  
sus into the common  
hall, and gathered unto  
him the whole band *of  
soldiers.*

28 And they stripped  
him, and put on him a  
scarlet robe.

Mark.

CH. XV. 15-19.

15 And delivered Je-  
sus, when he had  
scourged *him*, to be  
crucified.

16 And the soldiers led  
him away into the hall,  
called Pretorium; and  
they call together the  
whole band;

17 And they clothed  
him with purple, and  
platted a crown of  
thorns, and put it about  
his *head*,

29 And when they had platted a crown of thorns, they put *it* upon his head, and a reed in his right hand: and they bowed the knee before him, and mocked him, saying, Hail, King of the Jews!

30 And they spit upon him, and took the reed, and smote him on the head.

18 And began to salute him, Hail, King of the Jews!

19 And they smote him on the head with a reed, and did spit upon him, and bowing *their* knees, worshipped him.

John.

CH. XIX. 1-3.

Then Pilate therefore took Jesus and scourged *him*.

2 And the soldiers platted a crown of thorns, and put *it* on his head, and they put on him a purple robe,

3 And said, Hail, King of the Jews! and they smote him with their hands.



§ 150. Pilate again seeks to release Jesus. (Sixth Day Of The Week.) *Jerusalem.*

John.

CH. XIX. 4-16.

4 Pilate therefore went forth again, and saith unto them, Behold, I bring him forth to you, that ye may know that I find no fault in him.

5 Then came Jesus forth, wearing the crown of thorns, and the purple robe. And *Pilate* saith unto them, Behold the man!

6 When the chief priests therefore and officers saw him, they cried out, saying, Crucify *him*, crucify *him*. *Pilate* saith unto them, Take ye him, and crucify *him*: for I find no fault in him.

7 The Jews answered him, We have a law, and by our law he ought to die, because he made himself the Son of God.

8 When Pilate therefore heard that saying, he was the more afraid;  
9 And went again into the judgment-hall, and saith unto Jesus, Whence art thou? But Jesus gave him no answer.

10 Then saith Pilate unto him, Speakest thou not unto me? knowest thou not, that I have power to crucify thee, and have power to release thee?

11 Jesus answered, Thou couldest have no power *at all* against me, except it were given thee from above: therefore he that delivered me unto thee hath the greater sin.

12 And from thence-  
forth Pilate sought to  
release him; but the  
Jews cried out, saying,  
If thou let this man  
go, thou art not Ce-  
sar's friend. Whoso-  
ever maketh himself a  
king, speaketh against  
Cesar.

13 When Pilate there-  
fore heard that say-  
ing, he brought Jesus  
forth, and sat down in  
the judgment-seat, in a  
place that is called the  
Pavement, but in the  
Hebrew, Gabbatha.

14 And it was the and he saith unto the Jews, Behold your King!  
preparation of the  
passover, and about  
the sixth hour.<sup>284</sup>

---

<sup>0</sup> The apparent contradiction between John and Mark, (ch. xv. 25,) who mentions the third hour, is reconciled by Dr. Campbell, in a critical note upon the force of the expressions in the original, which he interprets as equivalent to saying, in the one case, that it was past *three*, and in the other, that it was *towards six*. See CAMPBELL{FNS, *in loc.*

15 But they cried out,  
 Away with *him*, away  
 with *him*, crucify him.  
 Pilate saith unto them,  
 shall I crucify your  
 King? The chief  
 priests answered, We  
 have no king but Ce-  
 sar.

16 Then delivered he  
 him therefore unto  
 them to be crucified.

[460]

### § 151. Judas repents, and hangs himself. (Sixth Day Of The Week.) *Jerusalem.*

the prophet, saying, And they took the thirty pieces of silver, the price of him that was valued, whom they of the children of Israel did value; 10 And gave them for the potter's field, as the Lord appointed me.<sup>286</sup>

Matthew.

CH. XXVII. 3-10.

3 Then Judas, which  
 had betrayed him,  
 when he saw that he  
 was condemned, re-  
 pentd himself, and  
 brought again the  
 thirty pieces of silver  
 to the chief priests and  
 elders,

---

<sup>286</sup> Zech. xi. 12, seq. Jer. xxxii. 6, seq.

4 Saying, I have sinned  
in that I have betrayed  
the innocent blood.  
And they said, What  
*is that* to us? see thou  
*to that*.

5 And he cast down the  
pieces of silver in the  
temple, and departed,  
and went and hanged  
himself.

6 And the chief priests  
took the silver pieces,  
and said, It is not law-  
ful for to put them into  
the treasury, because it  
is the price of blood.

7 And they took coun-  
sel, and bought with  
them the potter's field,  
to bury strangers in.

8 Wherefore that field  
was called, The field  
of blood, unto this day.

9 Then was fulfilled *Introd.* p. 582.

that which was spoken by Jeremy<sup>285</sup>, Jewish Antiq. pp. 594, 595. Others account for the apparent error in Matthew's quotation, by supposing that he omitted the name of the prophet, as he frequently did in his citations of scripture, and that the name of Jeremiah was inserted by a subsequent copyist. 1 HORNE'S{FNS

[462]

§ 152. Jesus is led away to be crucified. (Sixth Day Of The Week.) *Jerusalem.*

Matthew.

CH. XXVII. 31-34.

Mark.

CH. XV. 20-23.

---

<sup>0</sup> The passage here quoted is found in the prophecy of Zechariah, and not in Jeremiah. Dr. Lightfoot says, that anciently among the Jews the Old Testament was divided into three parts. The first, beginning with the law, was called *The Law*. The second, beginning with Psalms, was called *The Psalms*. The third, beginning with the prophecy of Jeremiah, which anciently stood first, was called *Jeremiah*, under which name all quotations from the prophets were made. See A. CLARKE{FNS, *in loc.* JENNINGS{FNS

31 And after that they had mocked him, they took the robe off from him, and put his own raiment on him, and led him away to crucify *him*.

32 And as they came out, they found a man of Cyrene, Simon by name: him they compelled to bear his cross.

20 And when they had mocked him, they took off the purple from him, and put his own clothes on him, and led him out to crucify him.

21 And they compel one Simon a Cyrenian, who passed by, coming out of the country, the father of Alexander and Rufus,<sup>287</sup> lib. 2, ch. 15.

to bear his cross. 33 And when they were come unto a place called Golgotha, that is to say, A place of a skull,<sup>22</sup> And they bring him unto the place Golgotha, which is, being interpreted, The place of a skull. 34 They gave him vinegar to drink, mingled with gall: and when he had tasted *thereof*, he would not drink.<sup>23</sup> And they gave him to drink, wine mingled with myrrh: but he received *it* not.

Luke.

CH. XXIII. 26-33.

John.

CH. XIX. 16-17.

---

<sup>0</sup> Clement of Alexandria and Jerome both relate that Mark wrote this Gospel at *Rome*, and we find in Romans xiv. 13, that a disciple named Rufus, of considerable note, resided in that city. Admitting that both Mark and Paul speak of the same person, which is highly probable, as they refer to the same period of time and to a disciple of distinction, there is an evident consciousness of veracity in the Evangelist, in making this reference to Rufus, then living among them, since he could not but have known the particulars of the crucifixion, in which his own father was so intimately concerned. BLUNT'S {FNS Veracity, &c., sect. i. 14. See also EUSEBIUS {FNS

26 And as they led him away, they laid hold upon one Simon a Cyrenian, coming out of the country, and on him they laid the cross, that he might bear *it* after Jesus.

16 And they took Jesus, and led *him* away.

27 And there followed him a great company of people, and of women, which also bewailed and lamented him.

17 And he bearing his cross

28 But Jesus turning unto them, said, Daughters of Jerusalem, weep not for me, but weep for yourselves, and for your children.

29 For behold, the days are coming, in the which they shall say, Blessed *are* the barren, and the wombs that never bare, and the paps which never gave suck.<sup>288</sup>

---

<sup>0</sup> Is. liv. 1.



30 Then shall they begin to say to the mountains, Fall on us; and to the hills, Cover us.<sup>289</sup>

31 For if they do these things in a green tree, what shall be done in the dry?

32 And there were also two others, malefactors, led with him to be put to death.

33 And when they were come to the place which is called Calvary,                      went forth into a place called *the place* of a skull, which is called in the Hebrew, Golgotha.

[464]

### § 153. The Crucifixion. (Sixth Day Of The Week.) *Jerusalem.*

Matthew.

CH. XXVII. 35-38.

Mark.

CH. XV. 24-28.

---

<sup>0</sup> Hos. x. 8.

35 And they crucified him, and parted his garments, casting lots: that it might be fulfilled which was spoken by the prophet; They parted my garments among them, and upon my vesture did they cast lots.<sup>290</sup>

36 And sitting down, they watched him there:

37 And set up over his head his accusation<sup>291</sup>

24 And when they had crucified him, they parted his garments, casting lots upon them, what every man should take.

25 And it was the third hour, and they crucified him.

written, THIS IS JESUS THE KING OF THE JEWS. 26 And the

<sup>0</sup> Ps. xxii. 19.

<sup>0</sup> As to the title itself, the precise working may have differed in the different languages; and MSS. represent it differently.

But the same verbal exactness is not necessary in historians, whose aim is religious instruction, as in recorders of public inscriptions. It is enough that the Evangelists agree as to the main article, "*the King of the Jews*," referred to, John xix. 21. That their manner is to regard the sense, rather than the words, appears from many places. Compare Matt. iii. 17, and ix. 11, and xv. 27, and xvi. 6, 9, and xix. 18, and xx. 33, and xxi. 9, and xxvi. 39, 64, 70, and xxviii. 5, 6, with the parallel verses in this Harmony. Compare also John xi. 40, with ver. 23, 25. One of the most solemn and awful of our Lord's discourses is, in some parts, variously expressed. See Matt. xxvi. 28, Mark xiv. 24, Luke xxii. 20, 1 Cor. xi. 25. Now as each of these writers has, beyond all doubt, faithfully represented the meaning of Christ, we see that it might be truly done in different words, or in a different form of the same words. His sentences also, sometimes admitted a difference of arrangement; for the order in which two sentences, or the several members of the same sentence, are disposed by St. Matthew, is, in several places, inverted by St. Mark. And with regard to his actions, though the most material parts of whatever they were going to relate must command their attention, yet there was no such superior attraction in one specific number and order of secondary circumstances, as could turn

superscription of his accusation was written over, THE KING OF THE JEWS. 38 Then were there two thieves crucified with him: one on the right hand, and another on the left.<sup>27</sup> And with him they crucify two thieves, the one on his right hand, and the other on his left. 28 And the scripture was fulfilled, which saith, And he was numbered with the transgressors.<sup>292</sup>

Luke.

CH. XXIII. 33, 34, 38.

33 There they crucified him, and the malefactors; one on the right hand, and the other on the left.

34 Then said Jesus, Father, forgive them: for they know not what they do. And they parted his raiment, and cast lots.

38 And a superscription also was written over him, in letters of Greek, and Latin, and Hebrew, THIS IS THE KING OF THE JEWS.

John.

CH. XIX. 18-24.

18 Where they crucified him, and two other with him, on either side one, and Jesus in the midst.

19 And Pilate wrote a title, and put it on the cross. And the writing was, JESUS OF NAZARETH, THE KING OF THE JEWS.

---

their thoughts absolutely and exclusively to them. This is plain from instances to the contrary. One Evangelist is sometimes distinct, while another is concise; and describes what the other passes over. TOWNSON{FNS, pp. 60-1.

We may reasonably suppose St. Matthew to have cited the Hebrew,—St. John the Greek,—and St. Mark the Latin, which was the shortest, and without mixture of foreign words. St. Mark is followed by St. Luke; only that he has brought down “THIS IS” from above, as having a common reference to what stood under it. NEWCOME{FNS.

<sup>292</sup> Is. liii. 12.

20 This title then read many of Jews: for the place where Jesus was crucified was nigh to the city: and it was written in Hebrew, *and* Greek, *and* Latin.

21 Then said the chief priests of the Jews to Pilate, Write not, The King of the Jews; but that he said, I am King of the Jews.

22 Pilate answered, What I have written, I have written.

23 Then the soldiers, when they had crucified Jesus, took his garments, and made four parts,<sup>293</sup> to every soldier a part; and also *his* coat: now the coat was without seam, woven from the top throughout.

---

<sup>0</sup> We have here an incidental allusion to a practice well known at that time. The malefactor about to be crucified, having borne his own cross to the place of execution, was stripped, and made to drink a stupefying potion; the cross was then laid on the ground, the sufferer distended upon it, and four soldiers, two on each side, were employed in driving four large nails through his hands and feet. For this service they had a right to his clothes as a perquisite. See Dr. Harwood's *Introd.*, cited in Horne's *Introd.*, vol. i. pp. 94, 95.

24 They said therefore among themselves, Let us not rend it, but cast lots for it whose it shall be: that the scripture might be fulfilled, which saith, They parted my raiment among them, and for my vesture they did cast lots. These things therefore the soldiers did.

[466]

§ 154. The Jews mock at Jesus on the cross. He commends his mother to John. (Sixth Day Of The Week.) *Jerusalem.*

Matthew.

CH. XXVII. 39-44.

39 And they that passed by, reviled him, wagging their heads,

Mark.

CH. XV. 29-32.

29 And they that passed by, railed on him, wagging their heads, and saying, Ah, thou that destroyest the temple, and buildest *it* in three days,

40 And saying, Thou that destroyest the temple, and buildest *it* in three days, save thyself. If thou be the Son of God, come down from the cross.

41 Likewise also the chief priests mocking *him*, with the scribes and elders, said,

42 He saved others; himself he cannot save. If he be the King of Israel, let him now come down from the cross, and we will believe him.

43 He trusted in God; let him deliver him now if he will have him: for he said, I am the Son of God.<sup>294</sup>

44 The thieves also which were crucified with him, cast the same in his teeth.

30 Save thyself, and come down from the cross.

31 Likewise also the chief priests mocking, said among themselves with the scribes, He saved others; himself he cannot save.

32 Let Christ the King of Israel descend now from the cross, that we may see and believe. And they that were crucified with him, reviled him.

Luke.

---

<sup>0</sup> Ps. xxii. 7, 8.

CH. XXIII. 35-37, 39-43.

35 And the people stood beholding. And the rulers also with them derided him, saying, He saved others; let him save himself, if he be Christ, the chosen of God.

36 And the soldiers also mocked him, coming to him, and offering him vinegar,<sup>295</sup>

37 And saying, If thou be the King of the Jews, save thyself.

39 And one of the which were hanged, railed on him, saying, If thou be Christ, malefactors,<sup>296</sup>

---

<sup>0</sup> Here the common drink of the Roman soldiers is offered by them to Jesus on the cross, while they are deriding him; which is a different act from that in Matt. xxvii. 34, 48, as appears by the place assigned to it. NEWCOME{FNS

<sup>0</sup> What was true of only one of the malefactors is attributed to both in the concise relations of Matthew and Mark; the plural being often used in the Gospels for the singular. This the Evangelists themselves show in some instances. Compare Mark vii. 17, and Matt. xv. 15; Mark v. 31, and Luke viii. 45; Matt. xiv. 17, and Mark vi. 38, Luke ix. 13, John vi. 8, 9; Matt. xxvi. 8, and Mark xiv. 4, John xii. 4; Matt. xxiv. 1, and Mark xiii. 1; Matt. xxvii. 37, and John xix. 19; Matt. xxvii. 48, and Mark xv. 36, John xix. 29. See also Luke xxii. 67. In the following places, the plural is used, while the sense shows that one is spoken of. John xi. 8, Luke xx. 21, 39, and xxiv. 5, Matt. xv. 1, 12.—The Evangelists, therefore, when from attention to brevity they avoid particularizing, often attribute to many what is said or done by single persons; nor does any striking peculiarity in the case omitted, lead them to deviate from their manner; for instance, the case of Judas, Matth. xxvi. 8, and the parallel places. NEWCOME{FNS

40 But the other answering, rebuked him, saying, Dost not thou fear God, seeing thou art in the same condemnation?

41 And we indeed justly; for we receive the due reward of our deeds: but this man hath done nothing amiss.

42 And he said unto Jesus, Lord, remember me when thou comest into thy kingdom.

43 And Jesus said unto him, Verily, I say unto thee, To-day shalt thou be with me in paradise.



[468]

§ 155. Darkness prevails. Christ expires on the cross.  
(Sixth Day Of The Week.) *Jerusalem.*

Matthew.

CH. XXVII. 45-50.

45 Now, from the sixth hour there was darkness over all the land unto the ninth hour.

46 And about the ninth hour Jesus cried with a loud voice, saying, Eli, Eli, lama sabachthani? that is to say, My God, my God, why hast thou forsaken me?<sup>297</sup>

47 Some of them that stood there, when they heard *that*, said, This *man* calleth for Elias.

Mark.

CH. XV. 33-37.

33 And when the sixth hour was come, there was darkness over the whole land, unto the ninth hour.

34 And at the ninth hour Jesus cried with a loud voice, saying, Eloi, Eloi, lama sabachthani? which being interpreted is, God, my God, why hast thou forsaken me?  
35 And some of them that stood by, when they heard *it*, said, Behold, he calleth

---

<sup>0</sup> Ps. xxii. 1.

48 And straightway and put *it* on a reed, and gave him to drink.  
 one of them ran, and  
 took a sponge, and  
 filled *it* with vine-  
 gar,<sup>298</sup>

49 The rest said, Let will come to save him.  
 be, let us see whether  
 Elias<sup>299</sup>  
 50 Jesus, when he had  
 cried again with a loud  
 voice, yielded up the  
 ghost.

Luke.  
 CH. XXIII. 44-46.  
 44 And it was about the until the ninth hour.  
 sixth hour, and there  
 was a darkness over all  
 the earth<sup>300</sup>

John.  
 CH. XIX. 28-30.

<sup>0</sup> *Hil* or *Hila* was the old Syriac for *vinegar*. Hence one of the bystanders, hearing our Saviour's exclamation on the cross, thought he wanted vinegar to alleviate his thirst, and straightway filled a sponge. See BUCHANAN'S {FNS *Researches*, p. 153.

<sup>0</sup> The Jews gave a literal interpretation to Mal. iv. 5, expecting Elijah to appear in person, as the forerunner of the Messiah; and hence they, on this occasion, sneeringly adverted to the want of this testimony to the mission of Christ. JONES {FNS, *Lect.* 147. This incidental allusion to the popular opinion, by Matthew and Mark, may be noticed as additional evidence of their veracity.

<sup>0</sup> The objection urged by infidels, upon this passage, against the veracity of the Evangelists, from the silence of profane writers concerning so remarkable

45 And the sun was  
darkened,

46 And when Jesus had  
cried with a loud voice,  
he said, Father, into thy  
hands I commend my  
spirit: and having said  
thus, he gave up the  
ghost.

28 After this, Je-  
sus knowing that all  
things were now ac-  
complished, that the  
scripture might be ful-  
filled, saith, I thirst.<sup>301</sup>

29 Now there was set  
a vessel full of vine-  
gar: and they filled a  
sponge with vinegar,  
and put *it* upon hyssop,  
and put *it* to his mouth.

30 When Jesus there-  
fore had received the  
vinegar, he said, It is  
finished: and he bowed  
his head, and gave up  
the ghost.

[470]

---

an event, is met and answered by Bp. Watson in his Reply to Gibbon, Let. 5. See also HORNE'S {FNS *Introd.* Vol. 1. p. 210-216. The word translated *earth*, in Luke, is the same which is rendered *land*, in the others, and applies equally to both. Taken in the latter sense, it may limit the darkness to Judea. But the Evangelists do not mention the degree of darkness; if therefore it was slight, though it extended over the whole globe, the objection of its not being recorded by Pliny or Seneca vanishes at once.

<sup>0</sup> Ps. lxi. 22.

§ 156. The vail of the Temple rent. The graves opened. The women at the cross. (Sixth Day Of The Week.) *Jerusalem.*

Matthew.

CH. XXVII. 51-56.

51 And behold, the vail of the temple was rent in twain from the top to the bottom: and the earth did quake, and the rocks rent;

52 And the graves were opened, and many bodies of the saints which slept, arose,

53 And came out of the graves after his resurrection, and went into the holy city, and appeared unto many.

54 Now, when the centurion, and they that were with him, watching Jesus, saw the earthquake, and those things that were done, they feared greatly, saying, Truly this was the Son of God.

55 And many women which followed Jesus from Galilee, ministering unto him:  
 were there (beholding  
 afar off)<sup>302</sup>

56 Among which  
 was Mary Magdalene,  
 and Mary the mother  
 of James and Joses,  
 and the mother of  
 Zebedee's children.

Luke.

CH. XXIII. 45, 47-49.

45 And the vail of the  
 temple was rent in the  
 midst.

47 Now, when the cen-  
 turion saw what was  
 done, he glorified God,  
 saying, Certainly this  
 was a righteous man.

---

<sup>0</sup> This and the parallel verses are reconciled with John xix. 25, by the following observation in Wall's critical notes, p. 116. "Mary stood as yet, (John xix. 25,) so nigh the cross as to hear what Christ said. But at the time of his departure, Matthew, Mark and Luke say, the women stood afar off." See also Watson's Reply to Gibbon, Let. 5, (Evangelical Family Library, Vol. xiv. pp. 276, 277.) It is natural to suppose that our Lord's relations and friends, mentioned in John xix. 25, were too much struck with commiseration and grief to remain long near the cross; and that they would retire from the horror of the concluding scene. NEWCOME{FNS.

48 And all the people that came together to that sight, beholding the things which were done, smote their breasts and returned.

49 And all his acquaintance, and the women that followed him from Galilee, stood afar off, beholding these things.

[472]

§ 157. The taking down from the cross. The burial.  
*Jerusalem.*

Matthew.

CH. XXVII. 57-61.

57 When the even was come, there came a rich man of Arimathea, named Joseph, who also himself was Jesus' disciple:

Mark.

CH. XV. 42-47.

42 And now, when the even was come, (because it was the preparation, that is, the day before the sabbath,)

58 He went to Pilate, and begged the body<sup>303</sup> of Jesus. Then Pilate commanded the body to be delivered.

59 And when Joseph had taken the body, he wrapped it in a clean linen cloth,

43 Joseph of Arimathea, an honourable counsellor, which also waited for the kingdom of God, came, and went in boldly unto Pilate, and craved the body of Jesus.

44 And Pilate marvelled if he were already dead: and calling *unto him* the centurion, he asked him whether he had been any while dead.

45 And when he knew *it* of the centurion, he gave the body to Joseph.

46 And he bought fine linen, and took him down, and wrapped him in the linen, and laid him in a sepulchre which was hewn out of a rock, and rolled a stone unto the door of the sepulchre.

---

<sup>0</sup> Here is another of those incidental allusions to existing customs, which show the naturalness and veracity of the narrative. Those who were crucified by the Romans are said to have been usually exposed to the birds of prey; and a guard was set to prevent their friends from burying the bodies. The body of Jesus therefore could not be obtained for burial, without leave from Pilate; which the Evangelists relate was applied for, but without explaining the cause.

60 And laid it in his own new tomb, which he had hewn out in the rock; and he rolled a great stone to the door of the sepulchre, and departed.

61 And there was Mary Magdalene, and the other Mary, sitting over against the sepulchre.

47 And Mary Magdalene and Mary *the mother* of Joses beheld where he was laid.

Luke.

CH. XXIII. 50-56.

John.

CH. XIX. 31-42.

31 The Jews therefore, because it was the preparation, that the bodies should not remain upon the cross on the sabbath-day, (for that sabbath-day was an high day) besought Pilate that their legs might be broken, and *that* they might be taken away.

32 Then came the soldiers, and brake the legs of the first, and of the other which was crucified with him.



33 But when they came  
to Jesus, and saw that  
he was dead already,  
they brake not his legs:

34 But one of the  
soldiers with a spear  
pierced his side, and  
forthwith came there-  
out blood and water.

35 And he that saw  
*it*, bare record, and his  
record is true: and he  
knoweth that he saith  
true, that ye might be-  
lieve.

36 For these things  
were done, that the  
scripture should be ful-  
filled, A bone of him  
shall not be broken.<sup>304</sup>

37 And again another  
scripture saith, They  
shall look on him  
whom they pierced.<sup>305</sup>

---

<sup>0</sup> Ex. xxii. 46. Ps. xxiv. 20.

<sup>0</sup> Zech. xii. 10.

50 And behold, *there was* a man named Joseph, a counsellor: *and he was* a good man, and a just:

51 (The same had not consented to the counsel and deed of them:) *he was* of Arimathea, a city of the Jews; who also himself waited for the kingdom of God.

52 This *man* went unto Pilate, and begged the body of Jesus.

53 And he took it down, and wrapped it in linen, and laid it in a sepulchre that was hewn in stone, wherein never man before was laid.

38 And after this Joseph of Arimathea (being a disciple of Jesus, but secretly for fear of the Jews) besought Pilate that he might take away the body of Jesus: and Pilate gave *him* leave. He came therefore and took the body of Jesus.

39 And there came also Nicodemus (which at the first came to Jesus by night) and brought a mixture of myrrh and aloes, about an hundred pounds weight.

40 Then took they the body of Jesus, and wound it in linen clothes with the spices, as the manner of the Jews is to bury.

41 Now in the place  
where he was cruci-  
fied, there was a gar-  
den; and in the gar-  
den a new sepulchre,  
wherein was never  
man yet laid.

54 And that day  
was the preparation,  
and the sabbath drew  
on.<sup>306</sup>

42 There laid they  
Jesus therefore, be-  
cause of the Jews'  
preparation-*day*; for  
the sepulchre was nigh  
at hand.

55 And the women  
also, which came with  
him from Galilee, fol-  
lowed after, and be-  
held the sepulchre, and  
how his body was laid.  
56 And they returned,  
and prepared spices  
and ointments; and  
rested the sabbath-day,  
according to the com-  
mandment.

[474]

## § 158. The watch at the sepulchre. (Seventh Day Of The Week, Or Sabbath.) *Jerusalem.*

---

<sup>0</sup> We must not understand this word of the morning light. The Jewish sabbath began at six in the morning, before which time our Lord's body was deposited in the tomb. NEWCOME{FNS.

Matthew.

CH. XXVII. 62-66.

62 Now, the next day  
that followed the day  
of the preparation, the  
chief priests and Phar-  
isees came together  
unto Pilate,

63 Saying, Sir, we re-  
member that that de-  
ceiver said, while he  
was yet alive, After  
three days I will rise  
again.

64 Command therefore  
that the sepulchre be  
made sure until the  
third day, lest his dis-  
ciples come by night,  
and steal him away,  
and say unto the peo-  
ple, He is risen from  
the dead: so the last er-  
ror shall be worse than  
the first.

65 Pilate said unto  
them, Ye have a watch:  
go your way, make *it*  
as sure as ye can.

66 So they went and  
made the sepulchre  
sure, sealing the stone,  
and setting a watch.<sup>307</sup>

[477]

---

<sup>0</sup> The mention of this circumstance by Matthew, and not by the other Evangelists, is in perfect keeping with his previous occupation; which led him to watch for fraud, in all places where it might be perpetrated.

## Part IX. Our Lord's Resurrection, His Subsequent Appearances, And His Ascension.

[478]

TIME. *Forty days.*

§ 159. The morning of the Resurrection. (First Day Of The Week.) *Jerusalem.*

Matthew.

CH. XXVIII. 2-4.

Mark.

CH. XVI. 1.

And when the sabbath was past, Mary Magdalene, and Mary the *mother* of James, and Salome, had bought sweet spices, that they might come and anoint him.

2 And behold, there was a great earthquake; for the angel of the Lord descended from heaven, and came and rolled back the stone from the door, and sat upon it.

3 His countenance was like lightning, and his raiment white as snow.

4 And for fear of him  
the keepers did shake,  
and became as dead  
*men.*

§ 160. Visit of the women to the Sepulchre. Mary  
Magdalene returns. (First Day Of The Week.)  
*Jerusalem.*

Matthew.

CH. XXVIII. 1.

In the end of the sabbath, as it began to dawn toward the first *day* of the week, came Mary Magdalene, and the other Mary to see the sepulchre.

Mark.

CH. XVI. 2-4.

2 And very early in the morning, the first *day* of the week, they came unto the sepulchre at the rising of the sun:

3 And they said among themselves, Who shall roll us away the stone from the door of the sepulchre?

4 (And when they looked, they saw that the stone was rolled away,) for it was very great.

Luke.

CH. XXIV. 1-3.

John.

CH. XX. 1-2.

<p>Now upon the first <i>day</i> of the week, very early in the morning, they came unto the sepulchre, bringing the spices which they had prepared, and certain <i>others</i> with them.</p>	<p>The first <i>day</i> of the week cometh Mary Magdalene early, when it was yet dark, unto the sepulchre, and seeth the stone taken away from the sepulchre.</p>
--	---

2 And they found the stone rolled away from the sepulchre.

3 And they entered in, and found not the body of the Lord Jesus.

2 Then she runneth, and cometh to Simon Peter, and to the other disciple whom Jesus loved, and saith unto them, They have taken away the Lord out of the sepulchre, and we know not where they have laid him.

§ 161. Vision of angels in the Sepulchre. (First Day Of The Week.) *Jerusalem.*

Matthew.  
CH. XXVIII. 5-7.

Mark.  
CH. XVI. 5-7.



5 And entering into the sepulchre, they saw a young man sitting on the right side, clothed in a long white garment; and they were affrighted.

5 And the angel answered and said unto the women, Fear not ye: for I know that ye seek Jesus, which was crucified.

6 And he saith unto them, Be not affrighted: ye seek Jesus of Nazareth, which was crucified: he is risen; he is not here; behold the place where they laid him.

6 He is not here: for he is risen, as he said. Come, see the place where the Lord lay.

7 And go quickly, and tell his disciples, that he is risen from the dead, and behold, he goeth before you into Galilee; there shall ye see him: lo, I have told you.

7 But go your way, tell his disciples and Peter, that he goeth before you into Galilee: there shall ye see him, as he said unto you.

Luke.

CH. XXIV. 4-8.

4 And it came to pass,  
as they were much per-  
plexed thereabout, be-  
hold, two men stood  
by them in shining gar-  
ments.

5 And as they were  
afraid, and bowed  
down *their* faces to the  
earth, they said unto  
them, Why seek ye the  
living among the dead?

6 He is not here, but  
is risen. Remember  
how he spake unto you  
when he was yet in  
Galilee,

7 Saying, The Son of  
man must be delivered  
into the hands of sinful  
men, and be crucified,  
and the third day rise  
again.

8 And they remem-  
bered his words,

[480]

§ 162. The women return to the city. Jesus meets  
them. (First Day Of The Week.) *Jerusalem.*

Matthew.

Mark.

## CH. XXVIII. 8-10.

8 And they departed quickly from the sepulchre, with fear and great joy; and did run to bring his disciples word.

9 And as they went to tell his disciples, behold Jesus met them, saying, All hail. And they came, and held him by the feet, and worshipped him.

10 Then said Jesus unto them, Be not afraid: go tell my brethren, that they go into Galilee, and there shall they see me.

Luke.

## CH. XXIV. 9-11.

9 And returned from the sepulchre, and told all these things unto the eleven, and to all the rest.

## CH. XVI. 8.

6 And they went out quickly and fled from the sepulchre; for they trembled, and were amazed: neither said they any thing to any *man*; for they were afraid.

10 It was Mary Magdalene, and Joanna, and Mary *the mother* of James, and other *women that were* with them, which told these things unto the apostles.

11 And their words seemed to them as idle tales, and they believed them not.

§ 163. Peter and John run to the Sepulchre. (First Day Of The Week.) *Jerusalem.*

Luke.

CH. XXIV. 12.

12 Then arose Peter, and ran unto the sepulchre, and stooping down, he beheld the linen clothes laid by themselves, and departed, wondering in himself at that which was come to pass.

John.

CH. XX. 3-10.

3 Peter therefore went forth, and that other disciple, and came to the sepulchre.

4 So they ran both together: and the other disciple did outrun Peter, and came first to the sepulchre.

5 And he stooping  
down, *and looking in*,  
saw the linen clothes  
lying; yet went he not  
in.

6 Then cometh Si-  
mon Peter following  
him, and went into the  
sepulchre, and seeth  
the linen clothes lie;

7 And the napkin that  
was about his head, not  
lying with the linen  
clothes, but wrapped  
together in a place by  
itself.

8 Then went in also  
that other disciple  
which came first to the  
sepulchre, and he saw,  
and believed.

9 For as yet they knew  
not the scripture, that  
he must rise again from  
the dead.

10 Then the disciples  
went away again unto  
their own home.

§ 164. Our Lord is seen by Mary Magdalene at the  
Sepulchre. (First Day Of The Week.) *Jerusalem.*

John.

CH. XX. 11-18.

11 But Mary stood without at the sepulchre weeping: and as she wept she stooped down *and looked* into the sepulchre,

12 And seeth two angels in white, sitting, the one at the head, and the other at the feet, where the body of Jesus had lain.

13 And they say unto her, Woman, why weepest thou? She saith unto them, Because they have taken away my Lord, and I know not where they have laid him.

14 And when she had thus said, she turned herself back, and saw Jesus standing, and knew not that it was Jesus.

Mark.

CH. XVI. 9-11.

9 Now, when *Jesus* was risen early, the first *day* of the week, he appeared first to Mary Magdalene, out of whom he had cast seven devils.

15 Jesus saith unto her,  
 Woman, why weepest  
 thou? whom seekest  
 thou? She, supposing  
 him to be the gardener,  
 saith unto him, Sir, if  
 thou have borne him  
 hence, tell me where  
 thou hast laid him, and  
 I will take him away.

16 Jesus saith unto her,  
 Mary. She turned her-  
 self, and saith unto  
 him, Rabboni, which  
 is to say, Master.

17 Jesus saith unto her,  
 Touch me not: for I am  
 not yet ascended to my  
 Father: but go to my  
 brethren, and say unto  
 them, I ascend unto my  
 Father and your Father,  
 and *to* my God and  
 your God.

18 Mary Magdalene  
 came and told the dis-  
 ciples that she had  
 seen the Lord, and *that*  
 he had spoken these  
 things unto her.

10 *And* she went and  
 told them that had  
 been with him, as they  
 mourned and wept.

11 *And* they, when  
 they had heard that  
 he was alive, and had  
 been seen of her, be-  
 lieved not.

§ 165. Report of the watch. (First Day Of The Week.) *Jerusalem.*

Matthew.

CH. XXVIII. 11-15.

11 Now, when they were going, behold, some of the watch came into the city, and shewed unto the chief priests all the things that were done.

12 And when they were assembled with the elders, and had taken counsel, they gave large money unto the soldiers,

13 Saying, Say ye, His disciples came by night, and stole him away while we slept.

14 And if this come to the governor's ears, we will persuade him, and secure you.

15 So they took the money, and did as they were taught: and this saying is commonly reported among the Jews until this day.



§ 166. Our Lord is seen of Peter; then by two disciples on the way to Emmaus. (First Day Of The Week.) *Emmaus*.

Mark.

CH. XVI. 12, 13.

12 After that, he appeared in another form unto two of them, as they walked, and went into the country.

Luke.

CH. XXIV. 13-35.

13 And behold, two of them went that same day to a village called Emmaus, which was from Jerusalem *about* threescore furlongs.

14 And they talked together of all these things which had happened.

15 And it came to pass, that, while they communed *together*, and reasoned, Jesus himself drew near, and went with them.

16 But their eyes were holden, that they should not know him.

17 And he said unto them, What manner of communications *are* these that ye have one to another, as ye walk, and are sad?

18 And the one of them, whose name was Cleopas, answering, said unto him, Art thou only a stranger in Jerusalem, and hast not known the things which are come to pass there in these days?

19 And he said unto them, What things? And they said unto him, Concerning Jesus of Nazareth, which was a prophet mighty in deed and word before God, and all the people:

20 And how the chief priests and our rulers delivered him to be condemned to death, and have crucified him.

21 But we trusted that it had been he which should have redeemed Israel: and besides all this, to-day is the third day since these things were done.

22 Yea, and certain women also of our company made us astonished, which were early at the sepulchre.

23 And when they found not his body, they came, saying, that they had also seen a vision of angels, which said that he was alive.

24 And certain of them which were with us, went to the sepulchre, and found *it* even so as the women had said: but him they saw not.

25 Then he said unto them, O fools, and slow of heart to believe all that the prophets have spoken!

26 Ought not Christ to have suffered these things, and to enter into his glory?

27 And beginning at Moses, and all the prophets, he expounded unto them in all the scriptures the things concerning himself.

28 And they drew  
nigh unto the village  
whither they went: and  
he made as though he  
would have gone fur-  
ther.

29 But they con-  
strained him, saying,  
Abide with us: for it  
is toward evening, and  
the day is far spent.  
And he went in to tarry  
with them.

30 And it came to  
pass, as he sat at meat  
with them, he took  
bread, and blessed *it*,  
and brake, and gave to  
them.

31 And their eyes were  
opened, and they knew  
him: and he vanished  
out of their sight.

32 And they said one  
to another, Did not our  
heart burn within us  
while he talked with us  
by the way, and while  
he opened to us the  
scriptures?

13 And they went and told *it* unto the residue: neither believed they them.

33 And they rose up the same hour, and returned to Jerusalem, and found the eleven gathered together, and them that were with them,

34 Saying, The Lord is risen indeed, and hath appeared to Simon.<sup>308</sup>

35 And they told what things *were done* in the way, and how he was known of them in breaking of bread.

[486]

§ 167. Jesus appears in the midst of the Apostles, Thomas being absent. (Evening Following The First Day Of The Week.) *Jerusalem*.

Mark.

CH. XVI. 14-18.

---

<sup>0</sup> This appearance of Jesus is not alluded to by any other Evangelist; but it was a fact well known among the disciples, and is expressly stated by Paul, in 1 Cor. xv. 5,—“and that he was seen of Cephas, then of the twelve.”

14 Afterward he appeared unto the eleven,<sup>309</sup> as they sat at meat, and upbraided them with their unbelief, and hardness of heart, because they believed not them which had seen him after he was risen.

15 And he said unto them, Go ye into all the world, and preach the gospel to every creature.

16 He that believeth and is baptized, shall be saved; but he that believeth not, shall be damned.

17 And these signs shall follow them that believe: In my name shall they cast out devils; they shall speak with new tongues:

---

<sup>0</sup> This appearance of Jesus is also affirmed by Paul, in 1 Cor. xv. 5.

18 They shall take up  
serpents; and if they  
drink any deadly thing,  
it shall not hurt them;  
they shall lay hands on  
the sick, and they shall  
recover.

Luke.

CH. XIV. 36-49.

36 And as they thus  
spake, Jesus himself  
stood in the midst of  
them, and saith unto  
them, Peace *be* unto  
you.

37 But they were ter-  
rified and affrighted,  
and supposed that they  
had seen a spirit.

38 And he said unto  
them, Why are ye trou-  
bled? and why do  
thoughts arise in your  
hearts?

John.

CH. XX. 19-23.

19 Then the same day  
at evening, being the  
first *day* of the week,  
when the doors were  
shut where the disci-  
ples were assembled  
for fear of the Jews,  
came Jesus and stood  
in the midst, and saith  
unto them, Peace *be*  
unto you.

39 Behold my hands and my feet, that it is I myself: handle me, and see; for a spirit hath not flesh and bones, as ye see me have.

40 And when he had thus spoken, he shewed them *his* hands and *his* feet.

41 And while they yet believed not for joy, and wondered, he said unto them, Have ye here any meat?

42 And they gave him a piece of a broiled fish, and of an honey-comb.

43 And he took *it*, and did eat before them.

44 And he said unto them, These *are* the words which I spake unto you, while I was yet with you, that all things must be fulfilled which were written in the law of Moses, and *in* the prophets, and *in* the psalms, concerning me.

20 And when he had so said, he shewed unto them *his* hands and his side. Then were the disciples glad when they saw the Lord.

21 Then said Jesus to them again, Peace *be* unto you: *as my* Father hath sent me, even so send I you.



45 Then opened he  
their understanding,  
that they might under-  
stand the scriptures,

46 And said unto them,  
Thus it is written, and  
thus it behoved Christ  
to suffer, and to rise  
from the dead the third  
day:

47 And that repentance  
and remission of sins  
should be preached in  
his name among all  
nations, beginning at  
Jerusalem.

48 And ye are wit-  
nesses of these things.

49 And behold, I send  
the promise of my Fa-  
ther upon you: but  
tarry ye in the city  
of Jerusalem, until ye  
be endued with power  
from on high.

22 And when he had  
said this, he breathed  
on *them*, and saith unto  
them, Receive ye the  
Holy Ghost.

23 Whose soever sins  
ye remit, they are re-  
mitted unto them; *and*  
whose soever *sins* ye  
retain, they are re-  
tained.

[488]

§ 168. Jesus appears in the midst of the Apostles,  
Thomas being present. (Evening Following First Day  
Of Week After Resurrection.) *Jerusalem.*

John.

CH. XX. 24-29.

24 But Thomas, one of the twelve, called Didymus, was not with them when Jesus came.

25 The other disciples therefore said unto him, We have seen the Lord. But he said unto them, Except I shall see in his hands the print of the nails, and put my finger into the print of the nails, and thrust my hand into his side, I will not believe.

26 And after eight days again his disciples were within, and Thomas with them: *then* came Jesus, the doors being shut, and stood in the midst, and said, Peace *be* unto you.

27 Then saith he to Thomas, Reach hither thy finger, and behold my hands; and reach hither thy hand, and thrust *it* into my side; and be not faithless, but believing.

28 And Thomas answered and said unto him, My Lord and my God.

29 Jesus saith unto him, Thomas, because thou hast seen me, thou hast believed: blessed *are* they that have not seen and *yet* have believed.

[490]

§ 169. The Apostles go away into Galilee. Jesus shows himself to seven of them at the Sea of Tiberias. *Galilee*.

Matthew.  
CH. XXVIII. 16.

John.  
CH. XXI. 1-24.

16 Then the eleven disciples went away into Galilee,

After these things Jesus shewed himself again to the disciples at the sea of Tiberias; and on this wise shewed he *himself*.

2 There were together Simon Peter, and Thomas called Didymus, and Nathanael of Cana in Galilee, and the *sons* of Zebedee, and two other of his disciples.

3 Simon Peter saith unto them, I go a fishing. They say unto him, We also go with thee. They went forth, and entered into a ship immediately; and that night they caught nothing.

4 But when the morning was now come, Jesus stood on the shore; but the disciples knew not that it was Jesus.

5 Then Jesus saith unto them, Children, have ye any meat? They answered him, No.

6 And he said unto them, Cast the net on the right side of the ship, and ye shall find. They cast therefore, and now they were not able to draw it for the multitude of fishes.

7 Therefore that disciple whom Jesus loved saith unto Peter, It is the Lord. Now when Simon Peter heard that it was the Lord, he girt *his* fisher's coat *unto him*, (for he was naked) and did cast himself into the sea.

8 And the other disciples came in a little ship (for they were not far from land, but as it were two hundred cubits) dragging the net with fishes.

9 As soon then as they were come to land, they saw a fire of coals there, and fish laid thereon, and bread.

10 Jesus saith unto them, bring of the fish which ye have now caught.

11 Simon Peter went up, and drew the net to land full of great fishes, an hundred and fifty and three: and for all there were so many, yet was not the net broken.

12 Jesus saith unto them, Come *and* dine. And none of the disciples durst ask him, Who art thou? knowing that it was the Lord.

13 Jesus then cometh, and taketh bread, and giveth them, and fish likewise.

14 This is now the third time that Jesus shewed himself to his disciples, after that he was risen from the dead.

15 So when they had dined, Jesus saith to Simon Peter, Simon, *son* of Jonas, lovest thou me more than these? He saith unto him, Yea, Lord: thou knowest that I love thee. He saith unto him, Feed my lambs.

16 He saith to him again the second time, Simon, *son* of Jonas, lovest thou me? He saith unto him, Yea, Lord: thou knowest that I love thee. He saith unto him, Feed my sheep.

17 He saith unto him the third time, Simon, *son* of Jonas, lovest thou me? Peter was grieved because he said unto him the third time, Lovest thou me? And he said unto him, Lord, thou knowest all things; thou knowest that I love thee. Jesus saith unto him, Feed my sheep.

18 Verily, verily, I say unto thee, When thou wast young, thou girdest thyself, and walkedst whither thou wouldest: but when thou shalt be old, thou shalt stretch forth thy hands, and another shall gird thee, and carry *thee* whither thou wouldest not.

19 This spake he, signifying by what death he should glorify God. And when he had spoken this, he saith unto him, Follow me.

20 Then Peter, turning about, seeth the disciple whom Jesus loved, following; (which also leaned on his breast at supper, and said, Lord, which is he that betrayeth thee?)

21 Peter seeing him, saith to Jesus, Lord, and what *shall* this man *do*?



22 Jesus saith unto him, if I will that he tarry till I come, what *is that* to thee? Follow thou me.

23 Then went this saying abroad among the brethren, that that disciple should not die: yet Jesus said not unto him, He shall not die; but, if I will that he tarry till I come, what *is that* to thee?

24 This is the disciple which testifieth of these things, and wrote these things: and we know that his testimony is true.

[494]

§ 170. Jesus meets the Apostles and above five hundred brethren on a mountain in Galilee. *Galilee*.

Matthew.

CH. XXVIII. 16-20.

16 into a mountain where Jesus had appointed them.

17 And when they saw they worshipped him: but some doubted.  
him,<sup>310</sup>

18 And Jesus came,  
and spake unto them,  
saying, All power is  
given unto me in  
heaven and in earth.

19 Go ye therefore and  
teach all nations, bap-  
tizing them in the name  
of the Father, and of  
the Son, and of the  
Holy Ghost;

20 Teaching them  
to observe all things  
whatsoever I have  
commanded you: and  
lo, I am with you al-  
way, *even* unto the end  
of the world. Amen.

[496]

## § 171. Our Lord is seen of James; then of all the Apostles. *Jerusalem.*

---

<sup>0</sup> Many and perhaps most Harmonists and Commentators refer 1 Cor. xv. 6, to this place, where it is related that Jesus was seen of above five hundred brethren at once. Such is the opinion of Dr. Robinson and Bishop J. B. Sumner, and such seems to have been the opinion of Abp. Newcome, Dr. Macknight, and Dr. Pilkington. See NEWCOME{FNS, in loc. The fact is deemed by some to have an important bearing upon the extent of the commission then given or repeated by our Lord; but the plan of this work does not require any further notice of the question.

The title of this section is inserted, for the sake of preserving the series of Dr. Robinson, whose arrangement has been followed in this Harmony; but as the appearances of Jesus which are here referred to, are related only by Luke in Acts, i. 3-8, and by Paul in 1 Cor. xv. 7, the particular insertion of those passages is omitted, for the reasons already given. See § 137, note. The subject of this and the eleven preceding sections, respecting the resurrection of Jesus, is discussed in the Note on the Resurrection.

## § 172. The Ascension. *Bethany*.

Mark.

CH. XVI. 19, 20.

19 So then, after the Lord had spoken unto them, he was received up into heaven, and sat on the right hand of God.

20 And they went forth, and preached every where, the Lord working with *them*, and confirming the word with signs following. Amen.

Luke.

CH. XXIV. 50-53.

50 And he led them out as far as to Bethany:<sup>311</sup> and he lifted up his hands, and blessed them.

51 And it came to pass, while he blessed them, he was parted from them, and carried up into heaven.

52 And they worshipped him, and returned to Jerusalem with great joy:

---

<sup>0</sup> This is perfectly consistent with the statement of Luke in Acts i. 12, as Bethany was not only the name of a town, but of a district of Mount Olivet, adjoining the town. See Watson's Reply to Gibbon, Letter vi. in Evangelical Family Library, Vol. xiv., p. 277.

53 And were continually in the temple, praising and blessing God. Amen.

### § 173. Conclusion of John's Gospel.

John.

CH. XX. 30, 31.

30 And many other signs truly did Jesus in the presence of his disciples, which are not written in this book.

31 But these are written that ye might believe that Jesus is the Christ, the Son of God; and that believing ye might have life through his name.

CH. XXI. 25.

25 And there are also many other things which Jesus did, the which, if they should be written every one, I suppose that even the world itself could not contain the books that should be written. Amen.



## Note On The Resurrection.

The accounts of the Resurrection and of the subsequent appearances of our Lord, have been harmonised in various methods; of which the latest, and probably the best, is that of Professor Robinson, in an article published in the *Bibliotheca Sacra* for February 1845, vol. ii. pp. 162-189. As the best service the present writer could do to the English reader, he has therefore here abridged that article, by omitting the introduction, and such parts as relate to the Greek text, and a few other passages, which it seemed might be spared without injury to the narrative itself.

### § 1. *The Time of the Resurrection.*

Matt. 26: 1, 2. Mark 16: 1, 2, 9. Luke 24: 1. John 20: 1.

That the resurrection of our Lord took place before full daylight, on the first day of the week, follows from the unanimous testimony of the Evangelists respecting the visit of the women to the sepulchre. But the exact time at which he rose is nowhere specified. According to the Jewish mode of reckoning, the Sabbath ended and the next day began at sunset; so that had the resurrection occurred even before midnight, it would still have been upon the first day of the week, and the third day after our Lord's burial. The earthquake had taken place and the stone had been rolled away before the arrival of the women; and so far as the immediate narrative is concerned, there is nothing to show that all this might not have happened some hours earlier. Yet the words of Mark in another place render it certain, that there could have been no great interval between these events and the arrival of the women; since he affirms in v. 9, that Jesus "had risen *early*, the first day of the week;" while in v. 2, he states that the women went out "*very early*." A like inference may be drawn from the fact, that the affrighted guards first went to inform the

chief priests of these events, when the women returned to the city (Matt. 28: 11); for it is hardly to be supposed, that after having been thus terrified by the earthquake and the appearance of an angel, they would have waited any very long time before sending information to their employers.—The body of Jesus had therefore probably lain in the tomb not less than about thirty-six hours.

§ 2. *The Visit of the Women to the Sepulchre.*

Matt. 28: 1-8. Mark 16: 1-8. Luke 24: 1-11. John 20: 1, 2.

The first notices we have of our Lord's resurrection, are connected with the visit of the women to the sepulchre, on the morning of the first day of the week. According to Luke, the women who had stood by the cross, went home and rested during the sabbath (23:56); and Mark adds that after the sabbath was ended, that is, after sunset, and during the evening, they prepared spices in order to go and embalm our Lord's body. They were either not aware of the previous embalming by Joseph and Nicodemus; or else they also wished to testify their respect and affection to their Lord, by completing, more perfectly, what before had been done in haste; John 19: 40-42.

It is in just this portion of the history, which relates to the visit of the women to the tomb and the appearance of Jesus to them, that most of the alleged difficulties and discrepancies in this part of the Gospel narratives are found. We will therefore take up the chief of them in their order.

I. *The Time.* All the Evangelists agree in saying that the women went out *very early* to the sepulchre. Matthew's expression is, *as the day was dawning*. Mark's words are, *very early*: which indeed are less definite, but are appropriate to denote the same point of time. Luke has the more poetic term: *deep morning*, i. e. early dawn. John's language is likewise definite: *early, while it was yet dark*. All these expressions go to fix the time at what we call *early dawn*, or *early twilight*; after the break of day, but while the light is yet struggling with darkness. [499]

Thus far there is no difficulty; and none would ever arise, had not Mark added the phrase, *the sun being risen*; or, as the English version has it, *at the rising of the sun*. These words seem, at first, to be at direct variance both with the *very early* of Mark himself, and with the language of the other Evangelists. To harmonise this apparent discrepancy, we may premise, that since Mark himself first specifies the point of time by a phrase sufficiently definite in itself, and supported by all the other Evangelists, we must conclude that when he adds, *at the rising of the sun*, he did not mean to contradict himself, but used this latter phrase in a broader and less definite sense. As the sun is the source of light and of the day, and as his earliest rays produce the contrast between darkness and light, between night and dawn, so the term sunrising might easily come in popular language, by a metonymy of cause for effect, to be put for all that earlier interval, when his rays, still struggling with darkness, do nevertheless usher in the day.

Accordingly, we find such a popular usage prevailing among the Hebrews; and several instances of it occur in the Old Testament. Thus in Judg. 9: 33, the message of Zebul to Abimelech, after directing him to lie in wait with his people in the field during the night, goes on as follows: “and it shall be, in the morning, as soon as the sun is up thou shalt rise early and set upon the city;” yet we cannot for a moment suppose that Abimelech with his ambuscade was to wait until the sun actually appeared above the horizon, before he made his onset. So the Psalmist (104: 22), speaking of the young lions that by night roar after their prey, goes on to say: “The sun ariseth, they gather themselves together, and lay them down in their dens.” But wild animals do not wait for the actual appearance of the sun ere they shrink away to their lairs; the break of day, the dawning light, is the signal for their retreat. See also Sept. 2 K. 3:22. 2 Sam. 23:4. In all these passages the language is entirely parallel to that of Mark; and they serve fully to illustrate the principle, that the



rising of the sun is here used in a popular sense as equivalent to the *rising of the day* or early dawn.

II. *The Number of the Women.* Matthew mentions Mary Magdalene and the other Mary; v. 1. Mark enumerates Mary Magdalene, Mary the mother of James, and Salome; v. 1. Luke has Mary Magdalene, Joanna, Mary the mother of James, and others with them; v. 10. John speaks of Mary Magdalene alone, and says nothing of any other. The first three Evangelists accord then in respect to the two Marys, but no further; while John differs from them all. Is there here a real discrepancy?

We may at once answer, No; because, according to the sound canon of Le Clerc:<sup>312</sup> “*Qui plura narrat, pauciora complectitur; qui pauciora memorat, plura non negat.*” Because John, in narrating circumstances with which he was personally connected, sees fit to mention only Mary Magdalene, it does not at all follow that others were not present. Because Matthew, perhaps for like reasons, speaks only of the two Marys, he by no means excludes the presence of others. Indeed, the very words which John puts into the mouth of Mary Magdalene, (v. 2), presupposes the fact, that others had gone with her to the sepulchre. That there was something in respect to Mary Magdalene, which gave her a peculiar prominence in these transactions, may be inferred from the fact, that not only John mentions her alone, but likewise all the other Evangelists name her first, as if holding the most conspicuous place.

The instance here under consideration is parallel to that of the demoniacs of Gadara, and the blind men at Jericho; where, in both cases, Matthew speaks of two persons, while Mark and Luke mention only one.<sup>313</sup> Something peculiar in the station or character of one of the persons, rendered him in each case more prominent, and led the two latter Evangelists to speak of him

<sup>312</sup> Harm. p. 525. Can. XII. fin.

<sup>313</sup> Matt. 8: 28, Mark 5: 2. Luke 8: 27.—Matt. 20: 30. Mark 10: 46. Luke 18: 35.

particularly. But there, as here, their language is not exclusive; nor is there in it anything that contradicts the statements of Matthew.

III. *The Arrival at the Sepulchre.* According to Mark, Luke, and John, the women on reaching the sepulchre found the great stone, with which it had been closed, already rolled away. Matthew, on the other hand, after narrating that the women went out to see the sepulchre, proceeds to mention the earthquake, the descent of the angel, his rolling away the stone and sitting upon it, and the terror of the watch, as if all these things took place in the presence of the women. The angel too (in v. 5) addresses the women, as if still sitting upon the stone he had rolled away.

[500]

The apparent discrepancy, if any, here arises simply from Matthew's brevity in omitting to state in full what his own narrative presupposes. According to v. 6, Christ was already risen; and therefore the earthquake and its accompaniments must have taken place at an earlier point of time, to which the sacred writer returns back in his narration. And although Matthew does not represent the women as entering the sepulchre, yet in v. 8, he speaks of them as going out of it; so that of course their interview with the angel took place, not outside of the sepulchre, but in it, as narrated by the other Evangelists. When therefore the angel says to them in v. 6, "Come, see the place where the Lord lay," this is not said without the tomb to induce them to enter, as Strauss avers; but within the sepulchre, just as in Mark v. 6.

IV. *The Vision of Angels in the Sepulchre.* Of this John says nothing. Matthew and Mark speak of one angel; Luke of two. Mark says he was sitting; Luke speaks of them as standing. This difference in respect to numbers is parallel to the case of the women, which we have just considered; and requires therefore no further illustration.

There is likewise some diversity in the language addressed to the women by the angels. In Matthew and Mark, the prominent object is the charge to the disciples to depart into Galilee. In

Luke this is not referred to; but the women are reminded of our Lord's own previous declaration, that he would rise again on the third day. Neither of the Evangelists here professes to report *all* that was said by the angels; and of course there is no room for contradiction.

§ 3. *The return of the Women to the city, and the first appearance of our Lord.*

Matt. 28: 7-10. Mark 16: 8. Luke 24: 9-11. John 20: 1, 2.

John, speaking of Mary Magdalene alone, says that having seen that the stone was taken away from the sepulchre, she went in haste (ran) to tell Peter and John. He says nothing of her having seen the angels, nor of her having entered the sepulchre at all. The other Evangelists, speaking of the women generally, relate that they entered the tomb, saw the angels and then returned into the city. On their way Jesus meets them. They recognize him; fall at and embrace his feet; and receive his charge to the disciples.—Was Mary Magdalene now with the other women? Or did she enter the city by another way? Or had she left the sepulchre before the rest?

It is evident that Mary Magdalene was not with the other women when Jesus thus met them. Her language to Peter and John forbids the supposition, that she had already seen the Lord: “They have taken away the Lord out of the sepulchre, and we know not where they have laid him.” She therefore must have entered the city by another path and gate; or else have left the sepulchre before the rest; or possibly both these positions may be true. She bore her tidings expressly to Peter and John, who would seem to have lodged by themselves in a different quarter of the city; while the other women went apparently to the rest of the disciples. But this supposition of a different route is essential, only in connection with the view, that she left the tomb with the other women. That, however, she actually departed from the sepulchre before her companions, would seem most probable; inasmuch as she speaks to Peter and John only of the absence of

the Lord's body; says nothing in this connection of a vision of angels; and when, after returning again to the tomb, she sees the angels, it is evidently for the first time; and she repeats to them as the cause of her grief her complaint as to the disappearance of the body; John 20: 12, 13. She may have turned back from the tomb without entering it at all, so soon as she saw that it was open; inferring from the removal of the stone, that the sepulchre had been rifled. Or, she may first have entered with the rest, when, according to Luke, "they found not the body of the Lord Jesus," and "were much perplexed thereabout," before the angels became visible to them. The latter supposition seems best to meet the exigencies of the case.

[501]

"As the other women went to tell his disciples, behold, Jesus met them, saying, All hail. And they came, and held him by the feet, and worshipped him. Then Jesus said unto them, Be not afraid; go, tell my brethren, that they go into Galilee, and there shall they see me." The women had left the sepulchre "with fear and great joy" after the declaration of the angels that Christ was risen; or, as Mark has it, "they trembled and were amazed." Jesus meets them with words of gentleness to quiet their terrors; "Be not afraid." He permits them to approach, and embrace his feet, and testify their joy and homage. He reiterates to them the message of the angels to his "brethren," the eleven disciples; see v. 16.

This appearance and interview is narrated only by Matthew; none of the other Evangelists give any hint of it. Matthew here stops short. Mark simply relates that the women fled from the tomb; "neither said they anything to any one, for they were afraid." This of course can only mean, that they spoke of what they had thus seen to no one while on their way to the city; for the very charge of the angels, which they went to fulfil, was, that they should "go their way and tell his disciples;" v. 7. Luke narrates more fully, that "they returned from the sepulchre, and told all these things unto the eleven, and to all the rest.—And

their words seemed to them as idle tales, and they believed them not.” We may perhaps see in this language one reason why the other Evangelists have omitted to mention this appearance of our Lord. The disciples *disbelieved the report of the women*, that they had seen Jesus. In like manner they afterwards disbelieved the report of Mary Magdalene to the same effect; Mark 16: 11. They were ready, it would seem, to admit the testimony of the women to the absence of the body, and to the vision of angels; but not to the resurrection of Jesus and his appearance to them; Luke 24: 21-24. And afterwards, when the eleven had become convinced by the testimony of their own senses, those first two appearances to the women became of less importance and were less regarded. Hence the silence of three Evangelists as to the one; of two as to the other; and of Paul as to both; 1 Cor. 15: 5, 6.

§ 4. *Peter and John visit the Sepulchre. Jesus appears to Mary Magdalene.*

John 20: 3-18. Luke 24: 12. Mark 16: 9-11.

The full account of these two events is given solely by John. Matthew has not a word of either; Luke merely mentions, in general, that Peter, on the report of the women, went to the sepulchre; while Mark speaks only of our Lord's appearance to Mary Magdalene, which he seems to represent as his *first* appearance.

According to John's account, Peter and the beloved disciple, excited by the tidings of Mary Magdalene that the Lord's body had been taken away, hasten to the sepulchre. They run; John outruns Peter, comes first to the tomb, and stooping down, sees the grave-clothes lying, but he does not enter. The other women are no longer at the tomb; nor have the disciples met them on the way. Peter now comes up; he enters the tomb, and sees the grave-clothes lying, and the napkin that was about his head not lying with the rest, but wrapped together in a place by itself. John too now enters the sepulchre; “and he saw and believed.”

What was it that John thus believed? The mere report of

Mary Magdalene, that the body had been removed? So much he must have believed when he stooped down and looked into the sepulchre. For this, there was no need that he should enter the tomb. His belief must have been of something more and greater. The grave-clothes lying orderly in their place, and the napkin folded together by itself, made it evident that the sepulchre had not been rifled nor the body stolen by violent hands; for these garments and spices would have been of more value to thieves, than merely a naked corpse; at least, they would not have taken the trouble thus to fold them together. The same circumstances showed also that the body had not been removed by friends; for they would not thus have left the grave-clothes behind. All these considerations produce in the mind of John the germ of a belief that Jesus was risen from the dead. He believed *because* he saw; “*for* as yet they knew not the Scripture;” (v. 9). He now began more fully to recall and understand our Lord's repeated declaration, that he was to rise again on the third day;<sup>314</sup> a declaration on which the Jews had already acted in setting a watch.<sup>315</sup> In this way, the difficulty which is sometimes urged of an apparent want of connection between verses 8 and 9, disappears.

The two disciples went their way, “wondering in themselves at what was come to pass.” Mary Magdalene who had followed them back to the sepulchre, remained before it weeping. While she thus wept, she too, like John, stooped down and looked in, “and seeth two angels, in white, sitting, the one at the head and the other at the feet, where the body of Jesus had lain.” To their inquiry why she wept, her reply was the same report which she had before borne to the two disciples: “Because they have taken away my Lord, and I know not where they have laid him,” v. 13. Of the angels we learn nothing further. The whole character of this representation seems to show clearly, that Mary had not

[502]

<sup>314</sup> Matt. 16: 21. 17: 23. Luke 9: 22. 24: 6, 7. al.

<sup>315</sup> Matt. 28: 63 sq.

before seen the angels; and also that she had not before been told, that Jesus was risen. We must otherwise regard her as having been in a most unaccountably obtuse and unbelieving frame of mind; the very contrary of which seems to have been the fact. If also she had before informed the two disciples of a vision of angels and of Christ's resurrection, it is difficult to see, why John should omit to mention this circumstance, so important and so personal to himself.

After replying to the angels, Mary turns herself about, and sees a person standing near, whom, from his being present there, she takes to be the keeper of the garden. He too inquires, why she weeps. Her reply is the same as before; except that she, not unnaturally, supposes him to have been engaged in removing the body, which she desires to recover. He simply utters in reply, in well-known tones, the name Mary! and the whole truth flashes upon her soul; doubt is dispelled, and faith triumphs. She exclaims: "Rabboni!" as much as to say, "My dearest Master!" and apparently, like the other women,<sup>316</sup> falls at his feet in order to embrace and worship him. This Jesus forbids her to do, in these remarkable words: "Touch me not: for I am not yet ascended to my Father. But go to my brethren, and say unto them, I ascend unto my Father and your Father, and to my God and your God;" v. 17.

There remains to be considered the circumstance, that Mark, in v. 9, seems to represent this appearance of Jesus at the sepulchre to Mary Magdalene, as his first appearance: "Now, being risen early the first of the week, he appeared *first* to Mary Magdalene." In attempting to harmonize this with Matthew's account of our Lord's appearance to the other women on their return from the sepulchre, several methods have been adopted; but the most to the purpose is the view which regards the word *first*, in Mark v. 9, as put not absolutely, but relatively. That is to say, Mark

---

<sup>316</sup> Matt. 28: 9.

narrates three, and only three, appearances of our Lord; *of these three*, that to Mary Magdalene takes place *first*, and that to the assembled disciples the same evening occurs *last*, v. 14. A similar example occurs in 1 Cor. 15: 5-8, where Paul enumerates those to whom the Lord showed himself after his resurrection, viz. to Peter, to the twelve, to five hundred brethren, to James, to all the apostles, and *last of all* to Paul also. Now had Paul written here, as with strict propriety he might have done, “he was seen *first* of Cephas,” assuredly no one would ever have understood him as intending to assert that the appearance to Peter was the first absolutely; that is, as implying that Jesus was seen of Peter before he appeared to Mary Magdalene and the other women. In like manner when John declares (21: 14) that Jesus showed himself to his disciples by the lake of Galilee for the *third* time after he was risen from the dead; this is said relatively to the two previous appearances to the assembled apostles; and does by no means exclude the four still earlier appearances, viz. to Peter, to the two at Emmaus, to Mary Magdalene, and to the other women,—one of which John himself relates in full.

In this way the old difficulty in the case before us disappears; and the complex and cumbrous machinery of earlier commentators becomes superfluous.

After her interview with Jesus, Mary Magdalene returns to the city, and tells the disciples that she had seen the Lord and that he had spoken these things unto her. According to Mark (vs. 10, 11), the disciples were “mourning and weeping;” and when they heard that Jesus was alive and had been seen of her, they believed not.

§ 5. *Jesus appears to two disciples on the way to Emmaus. Also to Peter.*

Luke 24: 13-35. Mark 16: 12, 13. 1 Cor. 15: 5.

This appearance on the way to Emmaus is related in full only by Luke. Mark merely notes the fact; while the other two Evangelists and Paul (1 Cor. 15: 5) make no mention of it.



On the afternoon of the same day on which our Lord arose, two of his disciples, one of them named Cleopas, were on their way on foot to a village called Emmaus, sixty stadia or seven and a half Roman miles distant from Jerusalem,—a walk of some two or two and a half hours. They had heard and credited the tidings brought by the women, and also by Peter and John, that the sepulchre was open and empty; and that the women had also seen a vision of angels, who said that Jesus was alive. They had most probably likewise heard the reports of Mary Magdalene and the other women, that Jesus himself had appeared to them; but these they did not regard, and do not mention them (v. 24); because they, like the other disciples, had looked upon them “as idle tales, and they believed them not;” v. 11. As they went, they were sad, and talked together of all these things which had happened. After some time Jesus himself drew near and went with them. But they knew him not. Mark says he was in another form; Luke affirms that “their eyes were holden, that they should not know him;” v. 16. Was there in this anything miraculous? The “another form” of Mark, Doddridge explains by “a different habit from what he ordinarily wore.” His garments, of course, were not his former ones; and this was probably one reason why Mary Magdalene had before taken him for the keeper of the garden.<sup>317</sup> It may be, too, that these two disciples had not been intimately acquainted with the Lord. He had arrived at Jerusalem only six days before his crucifixion; and these might possibly have been recent converts, who had not before seen him. To such, the change of garments, and the unexpectedness of the meeting, would render a recognition more difficult; nor could it be regarded as surprising, that under such circumstances they should not know him. Still, all this is hypothesis; and the averment of Luke, that “their eyes were holden,” and the manner of our Lord's parting from them afterwards, seem more naturally

---

<sup>317</sup> See also John 21: 4.

to imply that the idea of a supernatural agency, affecting not Jesus himself, but the eyes or minds of the two disciples, was in the mind of the sacred writer.

Jesus inquires the cause of their sadness; chides them for their slowness of heart to believe what the prophets had spoken; and then proceeds to expound unto them "in all the Scriptures the things concerning himself." They feel the power of his words; and their hearts burn within them. By this time they drew nigh to the village whither they went; it was toward evening, and the day was far spent. Their journey was ended; and Jesus was about to depart from them. In accordance with oriental hospitality they constrained him to remain with them. He consents; and as he sat at meat with them, he took bread, and blessed and brake, and gave unto them. At this time, and in connection with this act, their eyes were opened; they knew him; and he vanished away from them. Here too the question is raised, whether the language necessarily implies anything miraculous? Our English translators have rendered this passage in the margin, "he ceased to be seen of them;" and have referred to Luke 4: 30, and John 8: 59, as illustrating this idea. They might also have referred to Acts 8: 39. Still, the language is doubtless such as the sacred writers would most naturally have employed in order directly to express the idea of supernatural agency.

Full of wonder and joy, the two disciples set off the same hour and return to Jerusalem. They find the eleven and other disciples assembled; and as they enter, they are met with the joyful exclamation: "The Lord is risen indeed, and hath appeared unto Simon;" v. 34. They then rehearse what had happened to themselves; but, according to Mark, the rest believed them not. As in the case of the women, so here, there would seem to have been something in the position or character of these two disciples, which led the others to give less credit to their testimony, than to that of Peter, one of the leading apostles.

This appearance to Peter is mentioned by no other Evangelist;

and we know nothing of the particular time, nor of the attending circumstances. It would seem to have taken place either not long before, or else shortly after, that to the two disciples. It had not happened when they left Jerusalem for Emmaus; or, at least, they had not heard of it. It had occurred when they returned; and that long enough before to have been fully reported to all the disciples and believed by them. It may perhaps have happened about the time when the two disciples set off, or shortly afterwards.

Paul, in enumerating those by whom the Lord was seen after his resurrection (1 Cor. 15: 5), mentions Peter first; passing over the appearances to the women, and also that to the two disciples; probably because they did not belong among the apostles.

[504]

§ 6. *Jesus appears to the Apostles in the absence of Thomas; and afterwards when Thomas is present.*

Mark 16: 14-18. Luke 24: 36-48. John 20: 19-29. 1 Cor. 15: 5.

The narrative of our Lord's first appearance to the apostles is most fully given by Luke: John adds a few circumstances; and Mark, as well as Luke, has preserved the first charge thus privately given to the apostles, to preach the Gospel in all the world,—a charge afterwards repeated in a more public and solemn manner on the mountain in Galilee. When Paul says the Lord appeared to *the twelve*, he obviously employs this number as being the usual designation of the apostles; and very probably includes both the occasion narrated in this section. Mark and Luke speak in like manner of *the eleven*; and yet we know from John, that Thomas was not at first among them; so that of course only *ten* were actually present.

According to Mark, the disciples were at their evening meal; which implies a not very late hour. John says the doors were shut, for fear of the Jews. While the two who had returned from Emmaus were still recounting what had happened unto them, Jesus himself “came and stood in the midst of them, and saith unto them, Peace be unto you!” The question here again is

raised, whether this entrance of our Lord was miraculous? That it might have been so, there is no reason to doubt. He who in the days of his flesh walked upon the waters, and before whose angel the iron gate of the prison opened of its own accord so that Peter might pass out; he who was himself just risen from the dead; might well in same miraculous way present himself to his followers in spite of bolts and bars. But does the language here necessarily imply a miracle? The doors indeed were shut; but the word used does not of itself signify that they were bolted or fastened. The object no doubt was, to prevent access to spies from the Jews; or also to guard themselves from the danger of being arrested; and both these objects might perhaps have been as effectually accomplished by a watch at or before the door. Nor do the words used of our Lord strictly indicate anything miraculous. We do not find here a form of the word commonly employed to express the sudden appearance of angels; but, “he *came* and stood in the midst of them;” implying *per se* nothing more than the ordinary mode of approach. There is, in fact, nothing in the whole account to suggest a miracle, except the remark of John respecting the doors; and as this circumstance is not mentioned either by Mark or Luke, it may be doubtful whether we are necessarily compelled by the language to regard the mode of our Lord's entrance as miraculous.

At this interview Thomas was not present. On his return the other disciples relate to him the circumstances. But Thomas now disbelieved the others; as they before had disbelieved the women. His reply was, “except I shall see in his hands the print of the nails, and put my finger into the print of the nails, and thrust my hand into his side, I will not believe.” Our Lord had compassion upon his perverseness. Eight days afterwards, when the disciples were again assembled and Thomas with them, our Lord came as before, and stood in the midst, and said, Peace be unto you! He permits to Thomas the test he had demanded; and charges him to be not faithless, but believing. Thomas,

convinced and abashed, exclaims in the fulness of faith and joy, My Lord and my God! recognising and acknowledging thereby the divine nature thus manifested in the flesh. The reply of our Lord to Thomas is strikingly impressive and condemnatory of his want of faith: "Thomas, because thou hast seen me, thou hast believed; blessed are they that have not seen, and yet have believed!" He and the other disciples, who were to be the heralds of the Lord's resurrection to the world as the foundation of the hope of the Gospel, refused to believe except upon the evidence of their own senses; while all who after them have borne the Christian Name, have believed this great fact of the Gospel solely upon their testimony. God has overruled their unbelief for good, in making it a powerful argument for the truth of their testimony in behalf of this great fact, which they themselves were so slow to believe. Blessed, indeed, are they who have received their testimony.

§ 7. *Our Lord's Appearance in Galilee.*

John 21: 1-24. Matt. 28: 16-20. 1 Cor. 15: 6.

It appears from the narrative of Matthew, that while the disciples were yet in Jerusalem, our Lord had appointed a time, when he would meet them in Galilee, upon a certain mountain.<sup>318</sup> [505] They therefore left Jerusalem after the passover, probably soon after the interview at which Thomas was present, and returned to Galilee, their home. While waiting for the appointed time, they engaged in their usual occupation of fishermen. On a certain day, as John relates, towards evening, seven of them being together, including Peter, Thomas, and the sons of Zebedee, they put out upon the lake with their nets in a fishing boat; but during the whole night they caught nothing. At early dawn Jesus stood upon the shore, from which they were not far off, and directed them to cast the net upon the right side of the boat. "They cast therefore, and now they were not able to draw it for the multitude of the

---

<sup>318</sup> See Matt. 26: 32.

fishes.” Recognising in this miracle their risen Lord, they pressed around him. Peter, with his characteristic ardour, threw himself into the water in order to reach him the sooner. At their Lord's command they prepared a meal from the fish they had thus taken. “Jesus then cometh and taketh bread, and giveth them, and fish likewise.” This was his third appearance to the eleven; or rather to a large number of them together. It was on this occasion, and after their meal, that our Lord put to Peter the touching and thrice repeated question, “Lovest thou me?”

At length the set time arrived; and the eleven disciples went away into the mountain “where Jesus had appointed them.” It would seem most probable, that this time and place had been appointed of our Lord for a solemn and more public interview, not only with the eleven, whom he had already met, but with all his disciples in Galilee; and that therefore it was on this same occasion, when, according to Paul, “he was seen of above five hundred brethren at once.”<sup>319</sup> That the interview was not confined to the eleven alone, would seem evident from the fact that “some doubted;” for this could hardly be supposed true of any of the eleven, after what had already happened to them in Jerusalem and Galilee, and after having been appointed to meet their risen Lord at this very time and place. The appearance of the five hundred must at any rate be referred to Galilee; for even after our Lord's ascension, the number of the names in Jerusalem were together only about an hundred and twenty.<sup>320</sup> I do not hesitate, therefore, to hold with Flatt, Olshausen, Hengstenberg, and others, that the appearances thus described by Matthew and Paul, were identical. It was a great and solemn occasion. Our Lord had directed that the eleven and all his disciples in Galilee should thus be convened upon the mountain. It was the closing scene of his ministry in Galilee. Here his life had been spent. Here most of his mighty works had been done and his discourses

---

<sup>319</sup> 1 Cor. 15: 6.

<sup>320</sup> Acts 1: 15.

held. Here his followers were as yet most numerous. He therefore here takes leave on earth of those among whom he had lived and laboured longest; and repeats to all his disciples in public the solemn charge, which he had already given in private to the apostles: "Go ye therefore and teach all nations:—and lo, I am with you alway, even unto the end of the world." It was doubtless his last interview with his disciples in that region,—his last great act in Galilee.

§ 8. *Our Lord's further Appearances at Jerusalem, and his Ascension.*

1 Cor. 15: 7. Acts 1: 3-12. Luke 24: 49-53. Mark 16: 19, 20.

Luke relates, in Acts 1: 3, that Jesus showed himself alive to his apostles, "after his passion, by many infallible proofs, being seen of them forty days, and speaking of the things pertaining to the kingdom of God." This would seem to imply interviews and communications, as to which we have little more than this very general notice. One of these may have been the appearance to James, mentioned by Paul alone (1 Cor. 15: 7), as subsequent to that to the five hundred brethren. It may be referred with most probability to Jerusalem, after the return of the Apostles from Galilee. That this return took place by the Lord's direction, there can be no doubt; although none of the Evangelists have given us the slightest hint as to any such direction. Indeed, it is this very brevity,—this omission to place on record the minor details which might serve to connect the great facts and events of our Lord's last forty days on earth, that has occasioned all the doubt and difficulty with which this portion of the written history of these events has been encompassed.—The James here intended was probably our Lord's brother; who was of high consideration in the church, and is often, in the latter books, simply so named without any special designation.<sup>321</sup> At the time when Paul wrote, the other James, "the brother of John," as he is called, was already

<sup>321</sup> See Acts 12: 17. 15: 13. 21: 18. Gal. 2: 9, 12 al.

[506]

dead.<sup>322</sup>

After thus appearing to James, our Lord, according to Paul, was seen “of all the apostles.” This, too, was apparently an appointed meeting; and was doubtless the same of which Luke speaks, as occurring in Jerusalem immediately preceding the ascension. It was, of course, the Lord's last interview with his apostles. He repeats to them the promise of the baptism with the Holy Spirit as soon to take place; and charges them not to depart from Jerusalem until this should be accomplished.<sup>323</sup> Strange as it may appear, the twelve, in this last solemn moment, put to him the question, “Lord, wilt thou at this time restore the kingdom to Israel?” How, indeed, were they to believe! Their gross and darkened minds, not yet enlightened by the baptism of the Spirit, clung still to the idea of a temporal Prince and Saviour, who should deliver his people, not from their sins, but from the galling yoke of Roman dominion. Our Lord deals gently with their ignorance and want of faith: “It is not for you to know the times and seasons;—but ye shall receive the power of the Holy Ghost coming upon you; and ye shall be witnesses unto me—unto the uttermost part of the earth.”

During this discourse, or in immediate connection with it, our Lord leads them out *as far as to* Bethany, and lifting up his hands he blessed them; Luke 24: 50. This act of blessing must be understood, by all the laws of language, as having taken place at or near Bethany. “And it came to pass, *while* he blessed them, he was parted from them, and carried up into heaven.” Our Lord's ascension, then, took place at or near Bethany. Indeed, the sacred writer could hardly have found words to express this fact more definitely and fully; and a doubt on this point could never have suggested itself to the mind of any reader, but for the language of the same writer, in Acts 1: 12, where he relates that after the ascension the disciples “returned unto Jerusalem by the

---

<sup>322</sup> Acts 12: 1.

<sup>323</sup> To this interview belongs also Luke 24: 44.



mount called Olivet.” Luke obviously did not mean to contradict himself; and the most that his expression can be made to imply, is, that from Bethany, where their Lord had ascended, which lies on the eastern slope of the Mount of Olives, a mile or more below the summit of the ridge, the disciples returned to Jerusalem by a path across the mount.

As these disciples stood gazing and wondering, while a cloud received their Lord out of their sight, two angels stood by them in white apparel, announcing unto them, that this same Jesus, who was thus taken up from them into heaven, shall again so come, in like manner as they had seen him go into heaven. With this annunciation closes the written history of our Lord's resurrection and ascension.

## An Account Of The Trial Of Jesus.

The death of Jesus is universally regarded among Christians as a cruel murder, perpetrated under the pretence of a legal sentence, after a trial, in which the forms of law were essentially and grossly violated. The Jews to this day maintain, that, whatever were the merits of the case, the trial was at least regular, and the sentence legally just; that he was accused of blasphemy, and convicted of that offence by legal evidence. The question between them involves two distinct points of inquiry, namely, first, whether he was guilty of blasphemy; and, secondly, whether the arraignment and trial were conducted in the ordinary forms of law. But there will still remain a third question, namely, whether, admitting that, as a mere man, he had violated the law against blasphemy, he could legally be put to death for that cause; and if not, then whether he was justly condemned upon the new and supplemental accusation of treason or of sedition, which was vehemently urged against him. The first and last of these inquiries it is proposed briefly to pursue; but it will be necessary previously to understand the light in which he was regarded by the Jewish rulers and people, the state of their criminal jurisprudence and course of proceeding, and especially the nature and extent of the law concerning blasphemy, upon which he was indicted.

In the early period of the ministry of Jesus, he does not appear to have excited among the Pharisees any emotion but wonder and astonishment, and an intense interest respecting the nature of his mission. But the people heard him with increasing avidity, and followed him in countless throngs. He taught a purer religion than the Scribes and Pharisees, whose pride and corruption he boldly denounced. He preached charity and humility, and perfect

holiness of heart and life, as essential to the favour of God, whose laws he expounded in all the depth of their spirituality, in opposition to the traditions of the elders, and the false glosses of the Scribes and Pharisees. These sects he boldly charged with making void and rejecting the law of God, and enslaving men by their traditions; he accused them of hypocrisy, covetousness, oppression, and lust of power and popularity; and denounced them as hinderers of the salvation of others, as a generation of serpents and vipers, doomed to final perdition. It was natural that these terrific denunciations, from such a personage, supported by his growing power and the increasing acclamations of the people, should alarm the partisans of the ancient theocracy, and lead them to desire his destruction. This alarm evidently increased with the progress of his ministry; and was greatly heightened by the raising of Lazarus from the dead, on which occasion the death of Jesus was definitively resolved on;<sup>324</sup> but no active measures against him seem to have been attempted, until the time when, under the parable of the wicked husbandmen who cast the heir out of the vineyard and slew him, he declared that the kingdom of God should be taken from them, and given to others more worthy. Perceiving that he spake this parable against them, from that hour they sought to lay hands on him, and were restrained only by fear of the popular indignation.<sup>325</sup>

Having thus determined to destroy Jesus at all events, as a person whose very existence was fatal to their own power, and perhaps, in their view, to the safety of their nation, the first step was to render him odious to the people; without which the design would undoubtedly recoil on the heads of its contrivers, his popularity being unbounded. Countless numbers had received the benefit of his miraculous gifts; and it was therefore deemed a vain attempt to found an accusation, at that time, on any past transaction of his life. A new occasion was accordingly sought,

---

<sup>324</sup> See John xi. 47-54.

<sup>325</sup> Matt. xxi. 33-46. Mark xxii. 1-12. Luke xx. 9-19.

[509]

by endeavouring to “entangle him in his talk;” a measure, planned and conducted with consummate cunning and skill. The Jews were divided into two political parties. One of these consisted of the Pharisees, who held it unlawful to acknowledge or pay tribute to the Roman emperor, because they were forbidden, by the law of Moses,<sup>326</sup> to set a king over them who was a stranger, and not one of their own countrymen. The other party was composed of the partisans of Herod, who understood this law to forbid only the voluntary election of a stranger, and therefore esteemed it not unlawful to submit and pay tribute to a conqueror. These two parties, though bitterly opposed to each other, united in the attempt to entrap Jesus, by the question,—“Is it lawful to give tribute to Cæsar, or not?”<sup>327</sup> If he answered in the negative, the Herodians were to accuse him to Pilate, for treason; if in the affirmative, the Pharisees would denounce him to the people, as an enemy to their liberties.<sup>328</sup> This insidious design was signally frustrated by the wisdom of his reply, when, referring to Cæsar's image and legend, on the coins which they all received as legally current, he showed the inconsistency of withholding the honour due to one thus implicitly acknowledged by both parties to be their lawful sovereign.

Defeated in this attempt to commit him politically, their next endeavour was to render him obnoxious to one or the other of the two great religious sects, which were divided upon the doctrine of the resurrection, the Pharisees affirming, and the Sadducees denying, that the dead would rise again. The latter he easily silenced, by a striking exposition of their own law. They asked him which, of several husbands, would be entitled in the next world to the wife whom they successively had married in this; and in reply, he showed them that in heaven the relation of

---

<sup>326</sup> Deut. xvii. 15.

<sup>327</sup> Matt. xxii. 15-22. Mark xii. 13-17. Luke xx. 20-26.

<sup>328</sup> Tappan's Jewish Ant. p. 239.

husband and wife was unknown.<sup>329</sup>

Their last trial was made by a lawyer, who sought to entrap him into an assertion that one commandment in the law was greater than another; a design rendered abortive by his reply that they were all of equal obligation.<sup>330</sup>

It being apparent, from these successive defeats, that any farther attempt to find new matter of accusation would result only in disgrace to themselves, the enemies of Jesus seem to have come to the determination to secure his person secretly, and afterwards to put him to death, in any manner that would not render them odious to the people. In execution of this design, they first bribed Judas to betray him by night into their hands. This object being attained, the next step was to destroy his reputation, and if possible to render him so vile in the public estimation, as that his destruction would be regarded with complacency. Now no charge could so surely produce this effect, and none could so plausibly be preferred against him, as that of blasphemy; a crime which the Jews regarded with peculiar horror. Even their veneration of Jesus, and the awe which his presence inspired, had not been sufficient to restrain their rising indignation on several occasions, when they regarded his language as the blasphemous arrogation of a divine character and power to himself; and could they now be brought to believe him a blasphemer, and see him legally convicted of this atrocious crime, his destruction might easily be brought about, without any very scrupulous regard to the form, and even with honour to those by whom it might be accomplished. [510]

It will now be necessary to consider more particularly the nature of the crime of blasphemy, in its larger signification, as it may be deduced from the law of God. That the spirit of this law requires from all men, everywhere, and at all times, the profoundest veneration of the Supreme Being, and the most

<sup>329</sup> Matt. xxii. 23-33. Mark xii. 18-27. Luke xx. 27-39.

<sup>330</sup> Matt. xxii. 25-40, 46. Mark xii. 28-34.

[511]

submissive acknowledgment of Him as their rightful Sovereign, is too plain to require argument. If proof were wanted, it is abundantly furnished in the Decalogue,<sup>331</sup> which is admitted among Christians to be of universal obligation. At the time when the Jewish Theocracy was established, idolatry had become generally prevalent, and men had nearly lost all just notions of the nature and attributes of their Creator. It is therefore supposed that the design of Jehovah, in forming the Jewish constitution and code of laws, was to preserve the knowledge of himself as the true God, and to retain that people in the strictest possible allegiance to him alone; totally excluding every acknowledgment of any other being, either as an object of worship or a source of power. Hence the severity with which he required that sorceries, divinations, witchcrafts and false prophecies, as well as open idolatries, should be punished, they being alike acts of treason, or, as we might say, of *præmunire*, amounting to the open acknowledgment of a power independent of Jehovah. Hence, too, the great veneration in which he commanded that his name and attributes should be held, even in ordinary conversation. It is the breach of this last law, to which the term *blasphemy*, in its more restricted sense, has usually been applied;<sup>332</sup> but

---

<sup>331</sup> Exodus xx. 1-7. And God spake all these words, saying, I am the Lord thy God, which have brought thee out of the land of Egypt, out of the house of bondage. Thou shalt have no other gods before me. Thou shalt not make unto thee any graven image, or any likeness *of any thing* that *is* in heaven above, or that is in the earth beneath, or that *is* in the water under the earth: Thou shalt not bow down thyself to them, nor serve them: for I the Lord thy God am a jealous God, visiting the iniquity of the fathers upon the children unto the third and fourth *generation* of them that hate me; And shewing mercy unto thousands of them that love me, and keep my commandments. Thou shalt not take the name of the Lord thy God in vain: for the Lord will not hold him guiltless that taketh his name in vain.

<sup>332</sup> Lev. xxiv. 11-16. And the Israelitish woman's son blasphemed the name *of the Lord*, and cursed; and they brought him unto Moses (and his mother's name was Shelomith, the daughter of Dibri, of the tribe of Dan): And they put him in ward, that the mind of the Lord might be shewed them. And the

originally the command evidently extended to every word or act, directly in derogation of the sovereignty of Jehovah, such as speaking in the name of another god,<sup>333</sup> or omitting, on any occasion that required it, to give to Jehovah the honour due to [512]

---

Lord spake unto Moses, saying, Bring forth him that hath cursed without the camp, and let all that heard *him* lay their hands upon his head, and let all the congregation stone him. And thou shalt speak unto the children of Israel, saying, Whosoever curseth his God shall bear his sin. And he that blasphemeth the name of the Lord, he shall surely be put to death, *and* all the congregation shall certainly stone him: as well the stranger, as he that is born in the land, when he blasphemeth the name *of the Lord*, shall be put to death. See A. Clarke on Matt. ix. 3.

<sup>333</sup> Deut. xiii. 6-10. If thy brother, the son of thy mother, or thy son, or thy daughter, or the wife of thy bosom, or thy friend, which is as thine own soul, entice thee secretly, saying, Let us go and serve other gods, which thou hast not known, thou, nor thy fathers; *Namely*, of the gods of the people which *are* round about you, nigh unto thee, or far off from thee, from the *one* end of the earth even unto the *other* end of the earth; Thou shalt not consent unto him, nor hearken unto him; neither shall thine eye pity him, neither shalt thou spare, neither shalt thou conceal him: But thou shalt surely kill him; thine hand shall be first upon him to death, and afterwards the hand of all the people. And thou shalt stone him with *stones* that he die; because he hath sought to thrust thee away from the Lord thy God, which brought thee out of the land of Egypt from the house of bondage. Deut. xviii. 20. But the prophet, which shall presume to speak a word in my name, which I have not commanded him to speak, or that

his own name.<sup>334</sup> Thus, when Moses and Aaron, at the command of God, smote the rock in Kadesh, that from it waters might flow to refresh the famishing multitude, but neglected to honour him as the source of the miraculous energy, and arrogated it to themselves, saying, "Hear now, ye rebels, must *we* bring you water out of this rock?"<sup>335</sup> this omission drew on them his severe displeasure. "And the Lord spake unto Moses and Aaron, Because ye believed me not, to sanctify *me* in the eyes of the children of Israel, therefore *ye* shall not bring this congregation into the land which I have given them." Accordingly, both Moses and Aaron died before the Israelites entered into the promised land.<sup>336</sup> No other deity was permitted to be invoked; no miracle must be wrought, but in the name of God alone. "I am Jehovah; that is my name; and my glory will I not give to another, neither my praise to graven images."<sup>337</sup> This was ever a cardinal principle of his law, neither newly announced by Isaiah, nor by Moses. Its promulgation on Mount Sinai was merely declaratory of what had been well understood at the beginning, namely, that God alone was the Lord of all power and might, and would be expressly acknowledged as such, in every exertion of superhuman energy or wisdom. Thus Joseph, when required to interpret the dream of Pharaoh, replied, "It is not in me: God shall give Pharaoh an answer of peace."<sup>338</sup> And Moses, in all

---

shall speak in the name of other gods, even that prophet shall die.

<sup>334</sup> It is true that in the Mishna it is written—"Blasphemus non tenetur, nisi expressit Nomen." Mishna, Pars iv. p. 242. Tractatus de Synedriis, cap. 7, § 5. But these traditions were not written until 150 years after the time of our Saviour; and the passage, moreover, seems properly to refer to that form of blasphemy which consists in evil speaking of the Supreme Being, in a direct manner, rather than to the other forms in which this offence, in its larger acceptation, might be committed. See Michælis, Comm. Art. 251. Vol. 4, p. 67-70.

<sup>335</sup> Numb. xx. 10, 12.

<sup>336</sup> Numb. xx. 24. Deut. i. 37, and xxxiv. 4, 5.

<sup>337</sup> Is. xlii. 8, and xlviii. 2.

<sup>338</sup> Gen. xli. 16, 25, 28.



the miracles previously wrought by him in Egypt, expressly [513] denounced them as the judgments of God, by whose hand alone they were inflicted.<sup>339</sup> After the solemn re-enactment of this law on Mount Sinai, its signal violation by Moses and Aaron deserved to be made as signal an example of warning; and this judgment of Jehovah may be said to constitute the leading case under this article of the law; forming a rule of action and of judgment for all cases of miracles which might be wrought in all coming time. The same principle was afterwards expressly extended to prophesying. "The prophet—that shall speak in the name of other gods, even that prophet shall die."<sup>340</sup> His character of prophet, and even his inspiration, shall not authorize him to prophesy but in the name of the Lord. He shall not exercise his office in his own name, nor in any name but that of Jehovah, from whom his power was derived.

That such was understood to be the true meaning of this law of God, is further evident from the practice of the prophets, in later times, to whom was given the power of working miracles. These they always wrought in his name, expressly acknowledged at the time. Thus, the miracle of thunder and rain in the season of the wheat-harvest, called for by Samuel, he expressly attributed to the Lord.<sup>341</sup> So did Elijah, when he called fire from heaven to consume his sacrifice, in refutation of the claims of Baal.<sup>342</sup> So did Elisha, when he divided the waters of Jordan, by smiting them with the mantle of Elijah;<sup>343</sup> and again, when he miraculously

---

<sup>339</sup> Exod. viii. ix. x. per tot.

<sup>340</sup> Deut. xviii. 20.

<sup>341</sup> "Now, therefore, stand and see this great thing, which the LORD {FNS will do before your eyes." 1 Sam. xii. 16-18.

<sup>342</sup> "And it came to pass, at the time of the offering of the evening sacrifice, that Elijah the prophet came near and said, Lord God of Abraham, Isaac, and of Israel, let it be known this day that *thou art God in Israel*," &c. 1 Kings xviii. 36-38.

<sup>343</sup> "And he took the mantle of Elijah that fell from him, and smote the waters, and said, *Where is the Lord God of Elijah?*" &c. 2 Kings ii. 14.

[514]

multiplied the loaves of bread, for the people that were with him;<sup>344</sup> and again, when he caused the young man's eyes to be opened, that he might behold the hosts of the Lord around him, and smote his enemies with blindness.<sup>345</sup> And even the angel Gabriel, when sent to interpret to Daniel the things which should befall his people in the latter days, explicitly announced himself as speaking in Jehovah's name.<sup>346</sup>

The same view of the sinfulness of exercising superhuman power without an express acknowledgment of God as its author, and of any usurpation of his authority, continued to prevail, down to the time of our Saviour. Thus, when he said to the sick of the palsy, "Son, be of good cheer, thy sins be forgiven thee," certain of the Scribes said within themselves, "This man blasphemeth. Who can forgive sins, but God alone?"<sup>347</sup> And again, when the Jews, on another occasion, took up stones to stone him, and Jesus, appealing to his good works done among them, asked for which of them he was to be stoned; they replied, "For a good work we stone thee not, but for blasphemy, and because that thou, being a man, makest thyself God."<sup>348</sup> Yet Jesus had on no occasion mentioned the *name* of Jehovah, but with profound reverence.

Thus it appears that the law of blasphemy, as it was understood among the Jews, extended not only to the offence of impiously using the name of the Supreme Being, but to every usurpation of his authority, or arrogation, by a created being, of the honour

<sup>344</sup> "*For thus saith the Lord*, they shall eat and shall leave thereof," &c. 2 Kings iv. 43.

<sup>345</sup> See 2 Kings vi. 16, 17, 18, 20. In some other places, where there is no express reference to the power of God, the omission may be attributed to the brevity of the narrative; but even in those cases, such reference is plainly implied.

<sup>346</sup> Dan. ix. 21, 23, and x. 11, 12. See further, 2 Kings xviii. 30-35, and xix. 1-3.

<sup>347</sup> Matt. ix. 2, 3. Luke v. 20, 21.

<sup>348</sup> John x. 31-33.

and power belonging to him alone.<sup>349</sup> Like the crime of treason among men, its essence consisted in acknowledging or setting up the authority of another sovereign than one's own, or invading the powers pertaining exclusively to him; an offence, of which the case of Moses, before cited, is a prominent instance, both in its circumstances and in its punishment. Whether a false god was acknowledged or the true one denied, and whether the denial was in express terms, or by implication, in assuming to do, by underived power, and in one's own name, that which God only could perform, the offence was essentially the same. And in such horror was it held by the Israelites, that in token of it every one was obliged, by an early and universal custom, to rend his garments, whenever it was committed or related in his presence.<sup>350</sup> This sentiment was deeply felt by the whole people, as a part of their religion. [515]

Such being the general scope and spirit of the law, it would

---

<sup>349</sup> This view of the Jewish law may seem opposed to that of Dr. Campbell, in his Preliminary Dissertation on the Gospels, (Vol. 2, Diss. ix. Part 2); but it is evident, on examination, that he is discussing the *word blasphemy*, and the propriety of its application, taken in its more restricted sense of intentional and direct malediction of Jehovah; and not whether the assumption of his attributes and authority was or was not a violation of his law. That this assumption was a heinous transgression, seems universally agreed. The question, therefore, is reduced to this—whether the offence was properly *termed* blasphemy. For the *act*, by whatever name it were called, was a capital crime. The Jewish judges of that day held it to amount to blasphemy; and in so doing, they do not appear to have given to their law a construction more expanded and comprehensive than has been given by judges in our own times, to the law of treason, or of sedition.

<sup>350</sup> This was judicially and solemnly done by the members of the Sanhedrim, rising from their seats, when the crime was testified to. Only one witness was permitted to repeat the words; the others simply stating that they heard the same which he had related. The practice is thus described in the Mishna: “*Exactis omnibus, interrogant vetustissimum testium, dicendo,—Edissere, quodcumque audivisti expresse. Tum ille hoc refert. Judices autem stant erecti, vestesque discerpunt, non resarciendas. Dein secundus tertiusque ait,—Ego idem, quod ille audivi.*” Mishna, Pars 4. Tractat. de Synedriis, cap. 7, § 5. Upon which,

seem to have been easy to prove that Jesus had repeatedly incurred its penalties. He had performed many miracles, but never in any other name than his own. In his own name, and without the recognition of any higher power, he had miraculously healed the sick, restored sight to the blind and strength to the lame, cast out devils, rebuked the winds, calmed the sea, and raised the dead. In his own name, also, and with no allusion to the Omniscient, no "Thus saith the Lord," he had prophesied of things to come. He had by his own authority forgiven sins, and promised, by his own power, not only to raise the dead, but to resume his own life, after he should, as he predicted, be put to death. Finally, he had expressly claimed for himself a divine origin and character, and the power to judge both the quick and the dead<sup>351</sup>. Considered as a man, he had usurped the attributes of God. That he was not arrested at an earlier period, is to be attributed to his great popularity, and the astounding effect of his miracles. His whole career had been resplendent with beneficence to the thousands who surrounded him. His eloquence surpassed all that had been uttered by man. The people were amazed, bewildered, and fascinated, by the resistless power of his life. It was not

[516]

---

Cocceius remarks:—"Assurgunt reverentiæ causâ. Mos discendarum vestium probatur ex 2do Regum, xviii. 37. Hinc nata est regula,—*Qui blasphemiam audit, vel ab ipso auctore vel ex alio, tenetur vestem discerpere*. Ratio est, ut semper ob oculos et animum versetur mæroris aut indignationis mnemosynon." Coccej. in loc. § 11, 12. The custom is fully explained, with particular reference to the high priest at the trial of Jesus, by Hedenus, *De Scissione Vestium*, 38, 42. (In Ugolini Thesauro, tom. xxix, fol. 1025. &c.)

<sup>351</sup> That the Jews understood Jesus to make himself equal with God, is maintained by Mr. Salvador, himself a Jew, in his *Histoire des Institutions de Moïse et du Peuple Hébreu*, Liv. iv. ch. 3, p. 81, of which chapter a translation is given at the end of this article. Mr. Noah, also a Jew, seems to be of opinion, that Jesus was brought to trial under the law in Deut. xiii. 1-11. See his *Discourse on the Restoration of the Jews*, p. 19. But whether he was charged with a blasphemous usurpation of the attributes of Deity, or with sedition, in inciting the people to serve another god, meaning himself, the difference is of no importance; the essence of the offence in both cases being the same.

until his last triumphal visit to Jerusalem, after he had openly raised Lazarus from the dead, when the chief priests and elders perceived that “the world was gone after him,” that they were stricken with dismay and apprehension for their safety, and under this panic resolved upon the perilous measure of his destruction.

The only safe method in which this could be accomplished, was under the sanction of a legal trial and sentence. Jesus, therefore, upon his apprehension, was first brought before the great tribunal of the Sanhedrim, and charged with the crime of blasphemy. What were the specifications under this general charge, or whether any were necessary, we are not informed. But that this was the offence charged, is manifest both from the evidence adduced and from the judgment of conviction.<sup>352</sup> Such was the estimation in which he was held, that it was with great difficulty that witnesses could be found to testify against him; and the two who at last were procured, testified falsely, in applying his words to the temple of Solomon, which he spake of the temple of his body. When, upon the occasion of his scourging the [517] money-changers out of the temple, the Jews demanded by what authority he did this, Jesus replied, alluding to his own person, “Destroy *this* temple, and in three days I will raise it up.”<sup>353</sup> But though the witnesses swore falsely in testifying that he spake of the Jewish temple, yet his words, in either sense, amounted to a claim of the power of working miracles, and so brought him within the law. The high priest, however, still desirous of new evidence, which might justify his condemnation in the eyes of the people, proceeded to interrogate Jesus concerning his character and mission. “I adjure thee, by the living God, that thou tell us whether thou be the Christ, the Son of God. Jesus saith unto him,

<sup>352</sup> Matt. xxvi. 60-65. This view of the nature of the offence with which Jesus was charged, is confirmed by the learned jurist, Chr. Thomasius, in his *Dissertatio de injusto Pilati judicio*, § 11, 12, and by the authors whom he there cites. *Dissert. Thomasii*. vol. 1, p. 5.

<sup>353</sup> John ii. 13-22.

Thou hast said: nevertheless, I say unto you, hereafter ye shall see the Son of Man sitting on the right hand of power, and coming in the clouds of heaven. Then the high priest *rent his clothes*, saying He hath *spoken blasphemy*; what *further* need have we of witnesses? Behold, now *ye have heard his blasphemy*. What think ye? They answered and said, *He is guilty of death*.”<sup>354</sup> We may suppose the multitude standing without the hall of judgment, able, through its avenues and windows, to see, but not to hear, all that was transacting within. It became important, therefore, to obtain some reason upon which the high priest might rend his clothes in their sight, thus giving to the people, by this expressive and awful sign, the highest evidence of blasphemy, uttered by Jesus in the presence of that august assembly. This act turned the tide of popular indignation against him, whose name, but a short time before, had been the theme of their loudest hosannas. There was now no need to go into the past transactions of his ministry, for matter of accusation. His friends might claim for him on that score all that the warmest gratitude and love could inspire; and all this could be safely conceded. But here, his accusers might say, was a new and shocking crime, just perpetrated in the presence of the most sacred tribunal; a crime so shocking, and so boldly committed, that the high priest rent his clothes with horror, in the very judgment seat, in the presence of all the members of the Sanhedrim, who, with one accord, upon that evidence alone, immediately convicted the offender and sentenced him to death.

[518]

If we regard Jesus simply as a Jewish citizen, and with no higher character, this conviction seems substantially right in point of law, though the trial were not legal in all its forms. For, whether the accusation were founded on the first or second commands in the decalogue, or on the law, laid down in the thirteenth chapter of Deuteronomy, or on that in the eighteenth chapter and twentieth verse, he had violated them all, by assuming to himself powers

---

<sup>354</sup> Matt. xxvi. 63-66.

belonging alone to Jehovah. And even if he were recognized as a prophet of the Lord, he was still obnoxious to punishment, under the decision in the case of Moses and Aaron, before cited. It is not easy to perceive on what ground his conduct could have been defended before any tribunal, unless upon that of his superhuman character. No lawyer, it is conceived, would think of placing his defence upon any other basis.

The great object of exciting the people against Jesus being thus successfully accomplished, the next step was to obtain legal authority to put him to death. For though the Sanhedrim had condemned him, they had not the power to pass a capital sentence; this being a right which had passed from the Jews by the conquest of their country, and now belonged to the Romans alone. They were merely citizens of a Roman province; they were left in the enjoyment of their civil laws, the public exercise of their religion, and many other things relating to their police and municipal regulations; but they had not the power of life and death. This was a principal attribute of sovereignty, which the Romans always took care to reserve to themselves in order to be able to reach those individuals who might become impatient of the yoke, whatever else might be neglected. *Apud quos (Romanos), vis imperii valet; inania transmittuntur.*<sup>355</sup> The jurisdiction of

---

<sup>355</sup> Tacit. Annal. xv. 31. See M. Dupin's Trial of Jesus, p. 57-59, (Amer. Ed.) Chr. Thomasius, Dissertatio de injusto Pilati judicio, § 12, 60. The want of this power was admitted by the Jews, in their reply to Pilate, when he required them to judge Jesus according to their own law, and they replied, "It is not lawful for us to put any man to death." John xviii. 31.

This point has been held in different ways by learned men. Some are of opinion that the Sanhedrim had power to inflict death for offences touching religion, though not for political offences; and that it was with reference to the charge of treason that they said to Pilate what has just been cited from St. John. They say that, though the Sanhedrim had convicted Jesus of blasphemy, yet they dared not execute that sentence, for fear of a sedition of the people:—that they therefore craftily determined to throw on Pilate the odium of his destruction, by accusing him of treason; and hence, after condemning him, they consulted further, as stated in Matt. xxvii. 1, 2. Mark xv. 1, how to

[519] capital cases belonged ordinarily to the governor general or *Præses* of a province, the *Procurator* having for his principal duty only the charge of the revenue and the cognizance of revenue causes. But the right of taking cognizance of capital crimes was, in some cases, given to certain *Procurators*, who were sent into small provinces, to fill the places of governors, (*Vice Præsides*,) as clearly appears from the Roman laws. The government of all Syria was at this time under a governor general, or *Præses*; of which Judea was one of the lesser dependencies, under the charge of Pilate as *Vice Præses*, with capital jurisdiction.<sup>356</sup>

[520] It could not be expected that Pilate would trouble himself with the cognizance of any matter, not pertaining to the Roman law; much less with an alleged offence against the God of the Jews, who was neither acknowledged nor even respected by their conquerors. Of this the chief priests and elders were fully aware; and therefore they prepared a second accusation against Jesus, founded on the Roman law; as likely to succeed with Pilate,

---

quum fungebantur *vice præsidium*; ut Pontius Pilatus fuit procurator Cæsaris *vice præsidis* in Syria. Cujas, *Observ.* xix. 13.

effect this design:—that when Pilate found no fault in him, and directed them to take and crucify him, some replied, “We have a law, and by our law he ought to die,” (John xix. 7,) to intimate to Pilate that Jesus was guilty of death by the Jewish law also, as well as the Roman, and that therefore he would not lose any popularity by condemning him. See Zorrius, *Hist. Fisci Judaici*, ch. 2, § 2, (in Ugolini *Thesaur.* tom. 26, col. 1001-1003.) The same view is taken by Deylingius, *De Judæorum Jure Gladii*, § 10, 11, 12, (in Ugolini. *Thesaur.* tom. 29, col. 1189-1192.) But he concludes that in all capital cases, there was an appeal from the Sanhedrim to the Prætor; and that without the approval of the latter, the sentence of the Sanhedrim could not be executed. *Ibid.* § 15, col. 1196. Molinaeus understood the Jewish law in the same manner. See his *Harmony of the Gospels*, note on John xviii. 31. C. Molinæi *Opera*, tom. 5. pp. 603, 604. But this opinion is refuted by what is said by M. Dupin, *Trial, &c.*, § 8, and by Thomasius, above cited.

<sup>356</sup> See M. Dupin's *Trial of Jesus*, pp. 55-62. His authorities are Loiseau, Godefroy, and Cujas, the two latter of whom he cites as follows:—*Procurator Cæsaris fungens vice præsidis potest cognoscere de causis criminalibus.* Godefroy, in his note (letter S) upon the 3rd law of the code, *Ibi causæ fiscales*, &c. And he cites several others, which I have verified, and which are most



as the former had done with the people. They charged him with attempting to restore the kingdom of Israel, under his own dominion as king of the Jews. "We found this fellow, said they, perverting the nation, and forbidding to give tribute to Cæsar, saying, That he himself is Christ, a king."<sup>357</sup>

It was a charge of high treason against the Roman state and emperor; a charge which was clearly within Pilate's cognizance, and which, as they well knew, no officer of Tiberius would venture lightly to regard. Pilate accordingly forthwith arraigned Jesus, and called upon him to answer this accusation. It is worthy of note, that from the moment when he was accused of treason before Pilate, no further allusion was made to the previous charge of blasphemy; the Roman governor being engaged solely with the charge newly preferred before himself. The answer of Jesus to this charge satisfied Pilate that it was groundless, the kingdom which he set up appearing plainly to be not a kingdom of this world, but his spiritual reign in righteousness and holiness and peace, in the hearts of men. Pilate therefore acquitted him of the offence. "He went out again unto the Jews, and saith unto them, *I find in him no fault at all.*"<sup>358</sup> Here was a sentence of acquittal, judicially pronounced, and irreversible, except by a higher power, upon appeal; and it was the duty of Pilate thereupon to have discharged him. But the multitude, headed now by the priests and elders, grew clamorous for his execution; adding, "He stirreth up the people, teaching throughout all Jewry, beginning from Galilee to this place."<sup>359</sup> Hearing this reference to Galilee, Pilate seized the opportunity, thus offered, of escaping from the responsibility of a judgment, either of acquittal or of

---

precise to the same effect. See particularly the 4th law of the Code, *Ad. leg. fab. de plag.*, and the 2nd law of the Code, *De Pænis*.—*Procuratoribus Cæsaris data est jurisdictio in causis fiscalibus pecuniariis, non in criminalibus, nisi*

<sup>357</sup> Luke xxiii. 2.

<sup>358</sup> John xviii. 38.

<sup>359</sup> Luke xxiii. 5.

[521]

condemnation, by treating the case as out of his jurisdiction, and within that of Herod, tetrarch of Galilee, who was then in Jerusalem on a visit. He therefore sent Jesus and his accusers to Herod; before whom the charge was vehemently renewed and urged. But Herod, too, perceived that it was utterly groundless, and accordingly treated it with derision, arraying Jesus in mock habiliments of royalty, and remanding him to Pilate.<sup>360</sup> The cause was then solemnly re-examined by the Roman governor, and a second judgment of acquittal pronounced. For "Pilate, when he had called together the chief priests and the rulers, and the people, said unto them, Ye have brought this man unto me, as one that perverteth the people; and behold, I having examined him before you, have found no fault in this man, touching those things whereof ye accuse him: No, nor yet Herod: for I sent you to him; and lo, nothing worthy of death is done unto him. I will therefore chastise him and release him."<sup>361</sup>

It may seem strange to us that after a judgment of acquittal thus solemnly pronounced, any judge, in a civilized country, should venture to reverse it, upon the same evidence, and without the pretence of mistake or error in the proceedings. Probably, in the settled jurisprudence of the city of Rome, it could not have been done. But this was in a remote province of the empire, under the administration not of a jurist, but a soldier; and he, too, irresolute and vacillating; fearful for his office, and even for his life, for he served the "dark and unrelenting Tiberius." As soon as he proposed to release Jesus, "the Jews cried out, saying, If thou let this man go, thou art not Cæsar's friend. Whosoever maketh himself a king, speaketh against Cæsar."<sup>362</sup> Whereupon

---

<sup>360</sup> Luke xxiii. 10, 11.

<sup>361</sup> Luke xxiii. 13, 14, 15. I regard this judgement as conclusive evidence of the innocence of the accused. Pilate's strenuous endeavour to release him instead of Barabbas, and his solemn washing his own hands of the guilt of his blood, though they show the strength of his own convictions, yet add no legal force to the judgement itself.

<sup>362</sup> John xix. 12.

“Pilate gave sentence that it should be as they required.”<sup>363</sup> That Jesus was executed under the pretence of treason, and that alone, is manifest from the tenor of the writing placed over his head, [522] stating that he was king of the Jews; such being the invariable custom among the Romans, in order that the public might know for what crime the party had been condemned.<sup>364</sup> The remaining act in this tragedy is sufficiently known.

In the preceding remarks, the case has been considered only upon its general merits, and with no reference to the manner in which the proceedings were conducted. But M. Dupin, in his tract on the Trial of Jesus before the Sanhedrim, in reply to Mr. Salvador's account of it, has satisfactorily shown that throughout the whole course of that trial the rules of the Jewish law of procedure were grossly violated, and that the accused was deprived of rights, belonging even to the meanest citizen. He was arrested in the night, bound as a malefactor, beaten before his arraignment, and struck in open court during the trial; he was tried on a feast day, and before sunrise; he was compelled to criminate himself, and this, under an oath or solemn judicial adjuration; and he was sentenced on the same day of the conviction. In all these particulars the law was wholly disregarded.<sup>365</sup>

[523]

---

<sup>363</sup> Luke xxiii. 24.

<sup>364</sup> See M. Dupin's Trial of Jesus, pp. 82-84.

<sup>365</sup> Ibid. 7-15. Jahn's Bibl. Ant. § 246.

## The Jewish Account Of The Trial Of Jesus. By Mr. Salvador.

MR. JOSEPH SALVADOR, a physician and a learned Jew, a few years ago published at Paris, a work, entitled, “*Histoire des Institutions de Moïse et du Peuple Hébreu*,” in which, among other things, he gives an account of their course of criminal procedure, in a chapter on “The Administration of Justice;” which he illustrates, in a succeeding chapter, by an account of the trial of Jesus. As this is the recent work of a man of learning, himself a Jew, it may be regarded as an authentic statement of what is understood and held by the most intelligent and best informed Jews, respecting the claims of our Lord, the tenor of his doctrines, the nature of the charge laid against him before the Sanhedrim, and the grounds on which they condemned him. The following translation of the last-mentioned chapter will therefore not be unacceptable to the reader. It will be found in Book IV. chapter iii., entitled, “The Trial and Condemnation of Jesus.” The reader will bear in his mind, that it is the language of an enemy of our Saviour, and in justification of his murderers.

“According to this exposition of judicial proceedings,” says the Jew, “I shall follow out the application of them in the most memorable tried in history, that of Jesus Christ. I have already explained the motives which have directed me, and the point of view in which I have considered the subject; I have already shown, that among the Jews no title was a shelter against a prosecution and sentence. Whether the law or its forms were good or bad, is not the object of my present investigation; neither is it to ascertain whether we ought to pity the blindness of the Hebrews in not discovering a Deity in Jesus, or to be astonished

that a God personified could not make himself comprehended when he desired it. But since they regarded him only as a citizen, [524] did they not try him according to their law and its existing forms? This is my question, which can admit of no equivocation. I shall draw all my facts from the Evangelists themselves, without inquiring whether all this history was developed after the event, to serve as a form to a new doctrine, or to an old one which had received a fresh impulse.

Jesus was born of a family of small fortune; Joseph, his supposed father, perceived that his wife was big before they had come together. If he had brought her to trial, in the ordinary course of things, Mary, according to the 23rd verse of the 22nd chapter of Deuteronomy, would have been condemned, and Jesus, having been declared illegitimate, could never, according to the 2nd verse of the 23rd chapter, have been admitted to a seat in the Sanhedrim.<sup>366</sup> But Joseph, who, to save his wife from disgrace, had taken the resolution of sending her away privately, soon had a dream which consoled him.<sup>367</sup>

After having been circumcised, Jesus grew like other men, attended the solemn feasts, and early displayed surprising wisdom and sagacity. In the assembly on the Sabbath, the Jews, eager for the disputes to which the interpretation of the law gave rise, loved to hear him. But he soon devoted himself to more important labours; he pronounced censures against whole towns, Capernaum, Chorazin and Bethsaida.<sup>368</sup> Recalling the times of Isaiah and Jeremiah, he thundered against the chiefs of the people with a vehemence which would in our day be terrific.<sup>369</sup> The people then regarded him as a prophet,<sup>370</sup> they heard him preach in towns and country without opposition; they saw him

<sup>366</sup> Deut. xxii. 22, and xxiii. 2. Selden, *De Synedriis*, lib. 3, cap. 4, 5.

<sup>367</sup> Matt. i. 19, 20.

<sup>368</sup> Matt. xi. 20-24. Luke iv. &c.

<sup>369</sup> Matt. xxiii. *per tot.*

<sup>370</sup> Matt. xii. 11-46. John vii. 40.

surrounded with disciples according to the custom of the learned men of the age; whatever may have been the resentment of the chief men, they were silent as long as he confined himself to the law.

[525]

But Jesus, in presenting new theories, and in giving new forms to those already promulgated, speaks of himself as God; his disciples repeat it; and the subsequent events prove in the most satisfactory manner, that they thus understood him.<sup>371</sup> This was shocking blasphemy in the eyes of the citizens: the law commands them to follow Jehovah alone, the only true God; not to believe in gods of flesh and bone, resembling men or women; neither to spare nor listen to a prophet who, even doing miracles, should proclaim a new god, a god whom neither they nor their fathers had known.<sup>372</sup>

Jesus having said to them one day: "I have come down from heaven to do these things," the Jews, who till then had listened to him, murmured and cried: "Is not this Jesus, the son of Joseph and of Mary? we know his father, his mother, and his brethren; why then does he say that he has come down from heaven?"<sup>373</sup> On another day, the Jews, irritated from the same cause, took stones and threatened him. Jesus said unto them, "I have done good works in your eyes by the power of my Father, for which of these works would you stone me? It is for no good work," replied the Jews, who stated the whole process in few words, "but because of thy blasphemy; for being a man,<sup>374</sup> thou makest

---

<sup>371</sup> The expression *son of God* was in common use among the Jews, to designate a man of remarkable wisdom and piety. It was not in this sense that Jesus Christ used it; for in that case it would have occasioned no great sensation. Besides, if we should assume, in order to make it a subject of accusation against these Jews, that Jesus did not expressly declare himself to be God, we should be exposed to this rejoinder: Why then do you believe in him?

<sup>372</sup> See Deut. iv. 15, and xiii. per tot.

<sup>373</sup> John vi. 39-42. Matt. xiii. 55.

<sup>374</sup> This fact is clearly established as possible; and we must observe that till then there had been neither opposition nor enmity in the minds of this people,

thyself God.”<sup>375</sup>

His language was not always clear. Often his disciples themselves did not comprehend him. Among his maxims, some of which showed the greatest mildness, there were some which the Hebrews, who were touched only through their natural sense, thought criminal. “Think not that I am come to send peace on earth; I came not to send peace, but a sword. For I am come to set a man at variance against his father, and the daughter against [526] her mother, and the daughter-in-law against her mother-in-law. And a man's foes shall be they of his own household. He that loveth father or mother more than me, is not worthy of me.”<sup>376</sup> Finally, if he wrought miracles before certain of the people, his replies to the questions of the doctors were generally evasive.<sup>377</sup>

In regard to political relations, he caused dissensions.<sup>378</sup> A great number of disorderly persons whom he had the design of reclaiming, but who inspired dread in the national council, attached themselves to him;<sup>379</sup> his discourse flattered them inasmuch as he pronounced anathemas against riches. “Know,” said he, “that it is easier for a camel to go through the eye of a needle, than for a rich man to enter the kingdom of heaven.”<sup>380</sup> In this state of affairs, the council deliberates; some are of opinion that he should be regarded as a madman,<sup>381</sup> others say that he seeks to seduce the people.<sup>382</sup> Caiaphas, the high priest, whose dignity compels him to defend the letter of the law, observes

---

since they had listened to him with the greatest attention, and did not hesitate to acknowledge in him all that public law permitted them to do, viz., a prophet, a highly inspired man.

<sup>375</sup> John x. 30-33.

<sup>376</sup> Matt. x. 34. Mark x. 29.

<sup>377</sup> Matt. xvi. 1-4. John viii. 13-18.

<sup>378</sup> John vii. 43. Luke xxiii. 5.

<sup>379</sup> Matt. ix. 10. Mark ii. 15. Luke xv. 1.

<sup>380</sup> Matt. xix. 24.

<sup>381</sup> John x. 20.

<sup>382</sup> John vii. 12.

that these dissensions would furnish an excuse to the Romans for overwhelming Judea, and that the interests of the whole nation must outweigh those of a single individual; he constitutes himself the accuser of Jesus.<sup>383</sup>

The order is given to seize him. But let us pause here upon a fact of the highest importance. The senate did not begin by actually seizing Jesus, as is now the practice; they begin by giving, after some debate, an order that he should be seized.<sup>384</sup> This decree is made public; it is known to all, especially to Jesus. No opposition is offered to his passing the frontier: his liberty depends entirely upon himself. This is not all; the order for his arrest was preceded by a decree of admonition. One day, Jesus having entered the temple, took upon himself authority contrary to the common law; then he preached to the people, and said: "That those who should believe in him should be able to do all things, so that if they should say to a mountain, remove thyself and cast thyself into the sea, it would obey." Then the chief priest and senators went to find him and said to him, "By what authority doest thou these things? who gave thee this power?"<sup>385</sup>

[527]

Meanwhile a traitor discloses the place whither the accused had retired; the guards, authorized by the high priest and by the elders,<sup>386</sup> hasten to seize him. One of his disciples, breaking into open rebellion, with a stroke of his sword cuts off the ear of one of them, and brings upon himself the reproof of his master.<sup>387</sup> As soon as Jesus is arrested, the zeal of the apostles is extinguished; all forsake him.<sup>388</sup> He is brought before the grand council, where

---

<sup>383</sup> John xi. 47-50.

<sup>384</sup> Matt. xxvi. 4. John xi. 53, 54.

<sup>385</sup> Matt. xxi. 23.

<sup>386</sup> It will be recollected, that the senate held its sessions in one of the porticos of the temple. At this time the high priest presided over the senate, so that the guards of the high priest, of the elders and the temple, were no other than the legal militia.

<sup>387</sup> John xviii. 10, 11.

<sup>388</sup> Mark xiv. 50. Matt. xxvi. 56.



the priests sustain the accusation. The witnesses testify, and they are numerous; for the deeds of which he is accused were done in the presence of all the people. The two witnesses whom St. Matthew and St. Mark accuse of perjury, relate a discourse which St. John declares to be true, with regard to the power which Jesus arrogates to himself.<sup>389</sup> Finally, the high priest addresses the accused, and says: "Is it true that thou art Christ, that thou art the Son of God?" "I am he," replies Jesus; "you shall see me hereafter at the right hand of the majesty of God, who shall come upon the clouds of heaven." At these words, Caiaphas rent his garments in token of horror.<sup>390</sup> "You have heard him." They deliberate.

[528]

The question already raised among the people was this: Has Jesus become God? But the senate having adjudged that Jesus, son of Joseph, born at Bethlehem, had profaned the name of God by usurping it to himself, a mere citizen, applied to him the law of blasphemy, and the law in the 13th chapter of Deuteronomy, and the 20th verse in chapter 18, according to which every prophet, even he who works miracles, must be punished, when he speaks of a god unknown to the Jews and their fathers:<sup>391</sup> the capital

---

<sup>389</sup> Matt. xxvi. 60, 61. And the last came two false witnesses, and said, this fellow said, I am able to destroy the temple of God, and to build it in three days. Mark xiv. 57, 58. And there arose certain and bare false witness against him, saying, We heard him say, I will destroy this temple that is made with hands, and within three days I will build another made without hands. John ii. 19, 21, 22. Jesus answered and said unto them, Destroy this temple, and in three days I will raise it up. But he spake of the temple of his body. When, therefore, he was risen from the dead, his disciples remembered that he had said this unto them; and they believed the scripture, and the word which Jesus had said.

<sup>390</sup> I repeat that the expression *son of God*, includes here the idea of God himself; the fact is already established, and all the subsequent events confirm it. Observe, also, that I quote the narrative of only one of the parties to this great proceeding.

<sup>391</sup> Deut. xxviii. 20. But the prophet, which shall presume to speak a word in my name, which I have not commanded him to speak, or that shall speak in the name of other gods, even that prophet shall die.

sentence was pronounced. As to the ill-treatment which followed the sentence, it was contrary to the spirit of the Jewish law; and it is not in the course of nature, that a senate composed of the most respectable men of a nation, who, however they might have been deceived, yet intended to act legally, should have permitted such outrages against him whose life was at their disposal. The writers who have transmitted to us these details, not having been present at the trial, have been disposed to exaggerate the picture, either on account of their prejudices, or to throw greater obloquy on the judges.

One thing is certain, that the council met again on the morning of the next day or the day following that,<sup>392</sup> as the law requires, to confirm or to annul the sentence: it was confirmed. Jesus was brought before Pilate, the procurator that the Romans had placed over the Jews. They had retained the power of trying according to their own laws, but the executive power was in the hands of the procurator alone: no criminal could be executed without his consent: this was in order that the Senate should not have the means of reaching men who were sold to foreigners.<sup>393</sup> Pilate, the Roman, signed the decree. His soldiers, an impure mixture of diverse nations, were charged with the punishment. These are they who brought Jesus to the judgment hall, who stripped him before the whole cohort, who placed upon his head a crown of thorns, and a reed in his hand, who showed all the barbarity to

[529]

<sup>392</sup> Matt. xxvii. 1. Mark xv. 1.

<sup>393</sup> The duties of Pilate were to inform himself whether the sentences given did or did not affect the interests of Rome; there his part ended. Thus it is not astonishing that this procurator, doubtless little acquainted with the Jewish laws, signed the decree for the arrest of Jesus, although he did not find him guilty. We shall see hereafter that there were then many parties among the Jews, among whom were the Herodians or serviles, partisans of the house of Herod, and devoted to the foreign interests. These are they who speak continually of Cæsar, of rendering to Cæsar the tribute due to Cæsar; they also insist that Jesus called himself *king of the Jews*, but this charge was reckoned as nothing before the senate, and was not of a nature alone to merit capital punishment.

which the populace in all ages is disposed; who finally caused him to undergo a punishment common at Rome, and which was not in use among the Jews.<sup>394</sup> But before the execution, the governor had granted to the condemned an appeal to the people, who, respecting the judgment of their own council, would not permit this favour, couching their refusal in these terms: "We have a law; and by our law he ought to die, because he made himself the Son of God."<sup>395</sup> Then Pilate left them the choice of saving Jesus, or a man accused of murder in a sedition; the people declared for the latter; saying that the other would scatter the seeds of discord in the bosom of the nation, at a time when union was most necessary.<sup>396</sup>

"Jesus was put to death. The priests and elders went to the place of punishment; and as the sentence was founded upon this fact, that he had unlawfully arrogated to himself the title of Son of God, God himself, they appealed to him thus: 'Thou wouldst save others; thyself thou canst not save. If thou art indeed the king of Israel, come down into the midst of us, and we will believe in thee, since thou hast said, I am the Son of God, let that God who loves thee come now to thine aid.'<sup>397</sup> According [530] to the Evangelist, these words were a mockery; but the character of the persons who pronounced them, their dignity, their age, the order which they had observed in the trial, prove their good faith. Would not a miracle at this time have been decisive?"

<sup>394</sup> See Matt. xxvii. 27. Mark xv. 16. John xix. 2.

<sup>395</sup> John xix. 7.

<sup>396</sup> The sending back of Jesus to Herod, which, according to the Gospel of St. Luke, Pilate would have done, is not stated by the other Evangelists, and does not at all change the judicial question. Herod Antipas, tetrarch of Galilee, and of Perea, had no authority in Jerusalem. Upon his visit to this city, Pilate, according to St. Luke, would, out of respect, have caused Jesus to appear before this ally of the Romans, because Jesus was surnamed the Galilean, though originally from Judea. But to whatever tribe he belonged, the nature of the accusation would still have required, according to the Hebrew law, that he should be judged by the senate of Jerusalem.

<sup>397</sup> Matt. xvii. 42, 43.



# The Trial Of Jesus Before Caiaphas And Pilate.

Being A Refutation Of Mr. Salvador's  
Chapter Entitled “The Trial And  
Condemnation Of Jesus.” By M. Dupin.  
Translated From The French by John  
Pickering, LL.D.

## Preface.

A few years ago, Mr. Joseph Salvador, a physician—and a descendant of one of those Jewish families, whom the intolerance of Ferdinand the Catholic expelled, in a body, from Spain, about the year 1492—published at Paris a learned work, entitled “*Histoire des Institutions de Moïse et du Peuple Hébreu*,” or History of the Institutions of Moses and the Hebrew People; and in one chapter of his work he gives an account of the *Administration of Justice* among the Hebrews. To that chapter he has subjoined an account of the “Trial and Condemnation of Jesus;” in the course of which he expresses his opinion, that the trial, considered merely *as a legal proceeding*, was conformable to the Jewish laws.

The author of the following little work, M. Dupin, who is one of the most eminent lawyers of the French Bar, immediately called in question the correctness of Mr. Salvador's opinion, and entered upon an analysis of this portion of his work, with a view to examine its soundness, and the present volume contains the result of that examination, conducted with great legal skill and extensive learning.

It appears, that he had, many years before, in a little work, entitled “*The Free Defence of Accused Persons*,” published in 1815, taken the same views of this great trial; which, as he observes, has been justly called “the *Passion* or *Suffering* of our Saviour; for he did in truth *suffer*, and had not a trial.”

The author's attention, however, had been withdrawn from this subject for several years, when it was again brought under his notice by the work of Mr. Salvador, a copy of which was sent to him by that writer, with a request that M. Dupin would give some account of it. Accordingly, says the latter, “it is in compliance with *his request*, and not from a spirit of hostility, that I have made this examination of his work;” and he gives ample proof of his good feeling towards Mr. Salvador, with

whom, he says, he is personally acquainted and for whose talents he has a great respect.

With this friendly spirit he enters upon his examination; which is conducted with an ability, learning, animation, and interest, that leave nothing to be desired. As an argument, his work is unanswerable,—he has demolished that of his adversary; and, for intense interest, we do not know any publication of the present day to be compared with it.

[534]

The introductory *Analysis* of Mr. Salvador's chapter on the Administration of Justice according to the Jewish Law will be highly instructive and interesting; and those persons, who have not been accustomed to read the Bible with particular reference to the *Law*, will find many new and striking views of that portion of the Scriptures. They cannot fail to be particularly struck with the extraordinary care taken to secure by law the personal liberty and rights of the citizen.

According to Mr. Salvador's view, "the fundamental division into *castes* is the principal basis of the oriental theocracies." Moses, on the contrary, took for his basis the *unity* of the people. In his system of legislation the people are every thing; and the author shows us, that every thing, eventually, is done for them, by them, and with them. The tribe of Levi was established, only to supply a secondary want; and that tribe was very far from obtaining all the powers which we are apt to attribute to it; it did not make, nor develop the laws; it did not judge or govern; all its members, even the high priest himself, were subject to the control of the Elders of the nation, or of a Senate legally assembled.

Intimately connected with these rights of the people was the *liberty of speech*; and Mr. Salvador, in his chapter on the *Public Orators and Prophets*, maintains, and in the opinion of M. Dupin, proves clearly, that in no nation was the liberty of speech ever so unlimited, as among the Hebrews. Accordingly he observes—"What an additional difference was this between

the Israelites and the Egyptians! Among the latter, the mass of the people did not dare, without incurring the hazard of the most terrible punishment, to utter a word on affairs of state; it was Harpocrates, the god of silence with his finger on his closed lips, who was their God; in Israel, it was *the right of speech*.”

But we forbear any further reflections, and submit this remarkable performance to our readers. Those, who are familiar with the animated tone of French writers, will perhaps discover in this translation some loss of the fire and intensity of the original; but the translator's purpose will be effected, if his version shall be found to be a faithful one.

September 3, 1839.



## Analysis Of The Chapter Of Mr. Salvador, Entitled “The Administration Of Justice” Among The Jews.<sup>398</sup>

Mr. Salvador has discussed with particular care whatever relates to the *administration of justice* among the Jewish people. We shall dwell upon this chapter, which undoubtedly will most interest our readers.

*Judicare* and *judicari*, to judge and to be judged, express the rights of every Hebrew citizen; that is, no one could be condemned without a judgment, and every one might, in his turn, be called upon to sit in judgment upon others. Some exceptions to this principle are explained; but they do not affect the rule. In matters of mere interest each party chose a judge, and these two chose a third person. If a discussion arose as to *the interpretation of a law*, they carried it to the lower council of Elders, and from thence to the Great council at Jerusalem. Each town of more than one hundred and twenty families was to have its lower council, consisting of twenty-three members; and these had jurisdiction in criminal cases.

The expressions, *he shall die*, *he shall be cut off from the people*, which are so often used in the Mosaic law, embrace three very different significations, which we are accustomed to confound. They indicate the suffering of death as a punishment, civil death, and that premature death, with which an individual is naturally threatened, who departs from those rules which are useful to the nation and to the individual himself. Civil death is the last degree of *separation*, or *excommunication*; it is pronounced, as a judicial punishment, by the assembly of the judges.

[536]

---

<sup>398</sup> This Analysis first appeared in the *Gazette des Tribunaux*.

There were three kinds of separation; which Mr. Salvador compares to the three degrees of civil excommunication provided for in the French Penal Code, and which condemn the criminal to hard labour either for life or for a term of years, or to certain correctional punishments. But the Hebrew excommunication had this advantage, that the party *never lost all hope of regaining his original standing.*

The Hebrew lawyers, in relation to the punishment of death, maintained opinions, which deserve to be quoted:—

“A tribunal, which condemns to death *once in seven years*, may be called *sanguinary*.”—“It deserves this appellation, says doctor Eliezer, when it pronounces a like sentence once in seventy years.”—“If we had been members of the high court, say the doctors Tyrphon and Akiba, we should never have condemned a man to death.” Simeon, the son of Gamaliel, replied—“Would not that be an abuse? Would you not have been afraid of multiplying crimes in Israel?” Mr. Salvador answers—“No, certainly; far from lessening their number, the severity of the punishment increases it, by giving a more resolute character to the men who are able to brave it; and, at the present day, how many intelligent minds range themselves on the side of Akiba and Tyrphon! How many consciences refuse to participate, in any manner, in the death of a man! The flowing of blood, the multitude excited by an unbecoming curiosity, the victim dragged in triumph to the horrible altar, the impossibility of repairing a mistake, (from which human wisdom is never exempt), the dread of one day seeing a departed shade rising up and saying, *‘I was innocent,’* the facility which modern nations have of expelling from among them the man whose presence pollutes them—the influence of general depravity on the production of crimes—and finally the absurd contrast of the whole of society, while in possession of strength, intelligence, and arms, opposing itself to an individual wretch (who has been drawn on by want, by passion, or by ignorance) and yet finding no other means of redress than by

exceeding him in cruelty—all these things, and many others, have so deeply penetrated the minds of all ranks of people, that there will one day proceed from them the most striking proof of the power of morals over the laws; for the law will be changed by the simple fact, that we shall not find any person who will consent to apply it.” [537]

I feel honoured in having maintained the same opinion in my *Observations on Criminal Legislation*; but I solicit those, who wish to see this question discussed in its whole extent, to read the profound reflections which the Duke de Broglie has just published on the subject, in the last number of the *Revue Française* (for October, 1828.)

The whole criminal procedure in the Pentateuch rests upon three principles, which may be thus expressed; publicity of the trial, entire liberty of defence allowed to the accused; and a guaranty against the dangers of testimony. According to the Hebrew text *one* witness is no witness; there must be at least two or three who know the fact. The witness, who testifies against a man, must swear that he speaks the truth; the judges then proceed to take exact information of the matter; and, if it is found that the witness has sworn falsely, they compel him to undergo the punishment to which he would have exposed his neighbour. The discussion between the accuser and the accused is conducted before the whole assembly of the people. When a man is condemned to death, those witnesses whose evidence decided the sentence inflict the first blows, in order to add the last degree of certainty to their evidence. Hence the expression—*Let him among you, who is without sin, cast the first stone.*

If we pursue their application of these fundamental rules in practice, we shall find that a trial proceeded in the following manner.

On the day of the trial, the executive officers of justice caused the accused person to make his appearance. At the feet of the Elders were placed men who, under the name of *auditors*, or

*candidates*, followed regularly the sittings of the Council. The papers in the case were read; and the witnesses were called in succession. The president addressed this exhortation to each of them: “It is not conjectures, or whatever public rumour has brought to thee, that we ask of thee; consider that a great responsibility rests upon thee: that we are not occupied by an affair, like a case of pecuniary interest, in which the injury may be repaired. If thou causest the condemnation of a person unjustly

[538] accused, his blood, and the blood of all the posterity of him, of whom thou wilt have deprived the earth, will fall upon thee; God will demand of thee an account, as he demanded of Cain an account of the blood of Abel. Speak.”

A woman could not be a witness, because she would not have the courage to give the first blow to the condemned person; nor could a child, that is irresponsible, nor a slave, nor a man of bad character, nor one whose infirmities prevent the full enjoyment of his physical and moral faculties. *The simple confession of an individual against himself*, or the declaration of a prophet, however renowned, would not decide a condemnation. The Doctors say—“We hold it as fundamental, that *no one shall prejudice himself*. If a man accuses himself before a tribunal, we must not believe him, unless the fact is attested by two other witnesses; and it is proper to remark, that the punishment of death inflicted upon Achan, in the time of Joshua<sup>399</sup> was an exception, occasioned by the nature of the circumstances; for our law does not condemn upon the simple confession of the accused, nor upon the declaration of one prophet alone.”

The witnesses were to attest to the identity of the party, and to depose to the month, day, hour, and circumstances of the crime. After an examination of the proofs, those judges who believed the party innocent stated their reasons; those who believed him guilty spoke afterwards, and *with the greatest moderation*. If

---

<sup>399</sup> Joshua vii. 19, &c.

one of the *auditors*, or *candidates*, was entrusted by the accused with his defence, or if he wished in his own name to present any elucidations in favour of innocence, he was admitted to the seat, from which he addressed the judges and the people. But this liberty was not granted to him, if his opinion was in favour of condemning. Lastly; when the accused person himself wished to speak, they gave the most profound attention. When the discussion was finished, one of the judges recapitulated the case; they removed all the spectators; two scribes took down the votes of the judges; one of them noted those which were in favour of the accused, and the other, those which condemned him. Eleven votes, out of twenty-three, were sufficient to acquit; but it required thirteen to convict. If any of the judges [539] stated that they were not sufficiently informed, there were added two more Elders, and then two others in succession, till they formed a council of sixty-two, which was the number of the Grand Council. If a majority of votes acquitted, the accused was discharged *instantly*; if he was to be punished, the judges postponed pronouncing sentence till the third day; during the intermediate day they could not be occupied with anything but the cause, and they abstained from eating freely, and from wine, liquors, and everything which might render their minds less capable of reflection.

On the morning of the third day they returned to the judgment seat. Each judge, who had not changed his opinion, said, *I continue of the same opinion and condemn*; any one, who at first condemned, might at this sitting acquit; but he who had once acquitted was not allowed to condemn. If a majority condemned, two *magistrates* immediately accompanied the condemned person to the place of punishment. The Elders did not descend from their seats; they placed at the entrance of the judgment hall an officer of justice with a small flag in his hand; a second officer, on horseback, followed the prisoner, and constantly kept looking back to the place of departure. During

this interval, if any person came to announce to the Elders any new evidence favourable to the prisoner, the first officer waved his flag, and the second one, as soon as he perceived it, brought back the prisoner. If the prisoner declared to the *magistrates*, that he recollected some reasons which had escaped him, they brought him before the *judges* no less than five times. If no incident occurred, the procession advanced slowly, preceded by a herald who, in a loud voice, addressed the people thus: "This man (stating his name and surname) is led to punishment for such a crime; the witnesses who have sworn against him are such and such persons; if any one has evidence to give in his favour, let him come forth quickly."

It was in consequence of this rule that the youthful Daniel caused the procession to go back, which was leading Susanna to punishment, and he himself ascended the seat of justice to put some new questions to the witnesses.

[540]

At some distance from the place of punishment, they urged the prisoner to confess his crime, and they made him drink a stupefying beverage, in order to render the approach of death less terrible.<sup>400</sup>

By this mere analysis of a part of Mr. Salvador's work we may judge of the extreme interest of the whole. His principal object has been, to make apparent the mutual aids which history, philosophy, and legislation afford in explaining the institutions of the Jewish people. His book is a scientific work, and at the same time a work of taste. His notes indicate vast reading; and in the choice of his citations he gives proofs of his critical skill and discrimination. Mr. Salvador belongs, by his age, to that new generation, which is distinguished as much by its application to solid studies, as by elevation and generosity of sentiment.

---

<sup>400</sup> By this, says Father Lamy, we may understand what the mixture of wine and myrrh was, which they presented to Jesus on the cross, and which he would not drink. *Introd. to the reading of the Holy Scriptures*, chap. vi. (*Note of Mr. Salvador*, Book iv. ch. 2.)



## Trial Of Jesus.

### Refutation Of The Chapter Of Mr. Salvador, Entitled “The Trial And Condemnation Of Jesus.”

“The chapter, in which Mr. Salvador treats of *the Administration of Justice among the Hebrews*, is altogether theoretical. He makes an exposition of the law—that things, in order to be *conformable to rule*, must be transacted in a certain mode. In all this I have not contradicted him, but have let him speak for himself.

In the subsequent chapter the author announces: “That according to this *exposition of judicial proceedings* he is going to follow out the application of them to the most memorable trial in all history, that of Jesus Christ.” Accordingly the chapter is entitled: *The Trial and Condemnation of Jesus*.

The author first takes care to inform us under what point of view he intends to give an account of that accusation: “That we ought to lament the blindness of the Hebrews for not having recognised a God in Jesus, is a point which I do not examine.” (There is another thing also, which he says he shall not examine.) “But, when they discovered in him *only a citizen*, did they try him *according to existing laws and formalities*?”

The question being thus stated, Mr. Salvador goes over all the various aspects of the accusation; and his conclusion is, that the procedure was perfectly regular, and the condemnation perfectly appropriate to the act committed. “Now,” says he, (p. 87,) “the Senate, having adjudged that Jesus, the son of Joseph, born in Bethlehem, had profaned the name of God by usurping it himself, though a simple citizen, applied to him the law against blasphemy, the law in the 13th chapter of Deuteronomy, and verse 20, chapter 18th, conformably to which every prophet,



even one that performs miracles, is to be punished when he speaks of a God unknown to the Hebrews or their fathers.”

This conclusion is formed to please the followers of the Jewish law; it is wholly for their benefit, and the evident object is, to justify them from the reproach of *deicide*.

We will, however, avoid treating this grave subject in a theological point of view. As to myself, Jesus Christ is the *Man-God*; but it is not with arguments drawn from my religion and my creed, that I intend to combat the statement and the conclusion of Mr. Salvador. The present age would charge me with being intolerant; and this is a reproach which I will never incur. Besides, I do not wish to give to the enemies of Christianity the advantage of making the outcry, that we are afraid to enter into a discussion with them, and that we wish to crush rather than to convince them. Having thus contented myself with declaring my own faith, as Mr. Salvador has let us clearly understand his, I shall also examine the question under a merely *human* point of view, and proceed to inquire, with him, “Whether Jesus Christ, considered as a *simple citizen*, was tried according to the existing laws and formalities.”

The catholic religion itself warrants me in this; it is not a mere fiction; for God willed, that Jesus should be clothed in the forms of humanity (*et homo factus est*), and that he should undergo the lot and sufferings of humanity. The *son of God*, as to his moral state and his holy spirit, he was also, in reality, the *Son of Man*, for the purpose of accomplishing the mission which he came upon earth to fulfil.

This being the state of the question, then, I enter upon my subject; and I do not hesitate to affirm, because I will prove it, that, upon examining all the circumstances of this great trial, we shall be very far from discovering in it the application of those legal maxims, which are the safeguard of the rights of accused persons, and of which Mr. Salvador, in his chapter *On the Administration of Justice*, has made a seductive exposition.

[543]

The accusation of Jesus, instigated by the hatred of the priests and the Pharisees, and presented at first as a charge of *sacrilege*, but afterwards converted into a *political* crime and an *offence against the state*, was marked, in all its aspects, with the foulest acts of violence and perfidy. It was not so much a *trial* environed with legal forms, as a real *passion*, or prolonged suffering, in which the imperturbable gentleness of the victim displays more strongly the unrelenting ferocity of his persecutors.

When Jesus appeared among the Jews, that people was but the shadow of itself. Broken down by more than one subjugation, divided by factions and irreconcilable sects, they had in the last resort been obliged to succumb to the Roman power and surrender their own sovereignty. Jerusalem, having become a mere appendage to the province of Syria, saw within its walls an imperial garrison; Pilate commanded there, in the name of Cæsar; and the late people of God were groaning under the double tyranny of a conqueror, whose power they abhorred and whose idolatry they detested, and of a priesthood that exerted itself to keep them under the rigorous bonds of a religious fanaticism.

Jesus Christ deplored the misfortunes of his country. How often did he weep for Jerusalem! Read in Bossuet's *Politics drawn from the Holy Scriptures*, the admirable chapter entitled, *Jesus Christ the good citizen*. He recommended to his countrymen *union*, which constitutes the strength of states. "O Jerusalem, Jerusalem, (said he,) thou that killest the prophets and stonest them which are sent unto thee, how often would I have gathered thy children together, even as a hen gathereth her chickens under her wings, and ye would not!"

He was supposed to be not favorable to the Romans; but he only loved his own countrymen more. Witness the address of the Jews, who, in order to induce him to restore to the centurion a sick servant that was dear to him, used as the most powerful argument these words—that he was worthy for whom he should do this, for he loveth our nation. And Jesus went with them.

Luke vii. 4, 5.

Touched with the distresses of the nation, Jesus comforted them by holding up to them the hope of another life; he alarmed the great, the rich, and the haughty, by the prospect of a final judgment, at which every man would be judged not according to his rank, but his works. He was desirous of again bringing back man to his original dignity; he spoke to him of his *duties*, but at the same time of his *rights*. The people heard him with avidity, and followed him with eagerness; his words affected them; his hand healed their diseases, and his moral teaching instructed them; he preached, and practised one virtue till then unknown, and which belongs to him alone—*charity*. This celebrity, however, and these wonders excited envy. The partisans of the *ancient theocracy* were alarmed at the *new doctrine*; the chief priests felt that their power was threatened; the pride of the Pharisees was humbled; the scribes came in as their auxiliaries, and the destruction of Jesus was resolved upon. [544]

Now, if his conduct was reprehensible, if it afforded grounds for a *legal accusation*, why was not that course taken openly? Why not try him for the acts committed by him, and for his public discourses? Why employ against him subterfuges, artifice, perfidy, and violence? for such was the mode of proceeding against Jesus.

Let us now take up the subject, and look at the narratives which have come down to us. Let us, with Mr. Salvador, open the books of the Gospels; for he does not object to that testimony; nay, he relies upon it: "It is by the Gospels themselves," says he, "that I shall establish *all the facts*."

In truth, how can we (except by contrary evidence, of which there is none) refuse to place confidence in an historian, who tells us, as Saint John does, with affecting simplicity: "He that saw it bare record, and his record is true, and he knoweth that he saith true, that ye might believe." John xix. 35.

Section I.—SPIES, OR INFORMERS.

[545]

Who will not be surprised to find in this case the odious practice of employing hired informers? Branded with infamy, as they are in modern times, they will be still more so when we carry back their origin to the trial of Christ. It will be seen presently, whether I have not properly characterized by the name of hired informers those emissaries, whom the chief priests sent out to be about Jesus.

We read in the evangelist Luke, chap. xx. 20: *Et observantes miserunt insidiatores, qui se justos simularent, ut caperent eum in sermone, et traderent illum principatui et potestati præsidis.* I will not translate this text myself, but will take the language of a translator whose accuracy is well known, Mr. De Sacy: “As they only sought occasions for his destruction, they sent to him *apostate persons who feigned themselves just men*, in order to *take hold* of his words, that they might deliver him unto magistrate and into the power of the governor.” And Mr. De Sacy adds—“if there should escape from him the least word against the public authorities.”

This first artifice has escaped the sagacity of Mr. Salvador.

#### Section II.—THE CORRUPTION AND TREACHERY OF JUDAS.

According to Mr. Salvador, the senate, as he calls it, did not commence their proceedings by arresting Jesus, as would be done at the present day; but they began by passing a preliminary decree, that he should be arrested; and he cites, in proof of his assertion, St. John xi. 53, 54, and St. Matthew xxvi. 4, 5.

But St. John says nothing of this pretended decree. He speaks, too, not of a public sitting, but of a consultation held by the chief priests and the *Pharisees*, who did not, to my knowledge, constitute a judicial tribunal among the Jews. “Then gathered the chief priests and the Pharisees a council, and said, What do we? for this man *doeth many miracles.*” John xi. 47. They add: “If we let him thus alone, all men will believe on him,”—which imported also, in their minds, *and they will no longer believe in us.* Now, in this, I can readily perceive the fear of seeing

the morals and doctrines of Jesus prevail; but where is the preliminary *judgment*, or decree? I cannot discover it.

“And one of them, named Caiaphas, being the high priest that same year, said unto them, Ye know nothing at all, nor consider, [546] that it is expedient for us, that one man should die for the people ... and he *prophesied*, that Jesus should die for the nation of the Jews.” But to *prophecy* is not to *pass judgment*; and the individual opinion of Caiaphas, who was only one among them, was not the opinion of all, nor a *judgment of the senate*. We, therefore, still find a *judgment* wanting; and we only observe, that the priests and Pharisees are stimulated by a violent hatred of Jesus, and that “from that day forth they took counsel together for to put him to death; *ut interficerent eum*.” John xi. 53.

The authority of St. John, then, is directly in contradiction of the assertion, that there was an *order of arrest* previously passed by a regular tribunal.

St. Matthew, in relating the same facts, says, that the chief priests assembled at the palace of the high priest, who was called Caiaphas, and there held counsel together. But what counsel? and what was the result of it? Was it to issue an *order of arrest* against Jesus, that they might hear him and then pass sentence? Not at all; but they held counsel together, “that they might take Jesus *by subtilty, or fraud, and kill him*”; *concilium fecerunt, ut Jesum DOLO tenerent et OCCIDERENT*. Matt. xxvi. 5. Now in the Latin language, a language perfectly well constituted in everything relating to terms of the law, the words *occidere* and *interficere* were never employed to express the act of passing sentence, or *judgment of death*, but simply to signify *murder* or *assassination*.<sup>401</sup> Feras interficere. Lucret. lib. v. 251.

<sup>401</sup> As was that of Stephen, whom the same priests caused to be massacred by the populace, without a previous sentence of the law. OCCIDERE{FNS: Non occides, thou shalt not kill. Deut. v. 17. Veneno homines occidere. Cic. pro Roscio, 61. Virginiam filiam sua manu occidit Virginius. Cic. de Finib. 107. Non hominem occidi. Horat. I. Epist. 17, 10. Inermem occidere. Ovid. ii. Fast.

Interfectus in acie. Cic. de Finib. 103. Cæsaris interfectores. Brutus Ciceroni, 16, 8. Interfectorem Gracchi. Cic. de Claris Orrato. 66.

This *fraud*, by the aid of which they were to get Jesus into their power, was nothing but the bargain made between the chief priests and Judas.

Judas, one of the twelve, goes to find the chief priests, and says to them, What will ye give me, and I will deliver him unto you? Matt. xxvi. 14, 15. And they covenanted with him for thirty pieces of silver! Jesus, who foresaw his treachery, warned him of it mildly, in the midst of the Last Supper, where the voice of his master, in the presence of his brethren, should have touched him and awakened his reflections! But not so; wholly absorbed in his reward, Judas placed himself at the head of a gang of servants, to whom he was to point out Jesus; and, then, by a *kiss* consummated his treachery!<sup>402</sup>

[547]

Is it thus that a *judicial decree was to be executed*, if there had really been one made for the arrest of Jesus?

Section III.—PERSONAL LIBERTY.—RESISTANCE TO AN ARMED FORCE.

The act was done in the night time. After having celebrated the Supper, Jesus had conducted his disciples to the Mount of Olives. He prayed fervently; but they fell asleep.

Jesus awakes them, with a gentle reproof for their weakness, and warns them that the moment is approaching. “Rise, let us be going; behold he is at hand that doth betray me.” Matt. xxvi. 46.

---

139. INTERFICERE{FNS

<sup>402</sup> Will it be believed, that Tertullian and St. Irenæus were obliged to refute seriously some writers of their day, who considered the conduct of Judas not only excusable, but worthy of admiration and highly meritorious, “because (as they said) of the immense service which he had rendered to the human race by *preparing their redemption!*” In the same manner, at a certain period, we have seen plunderers of the public money make a merit of their conduct, because in that way they had weakened the usurpation and prepared the way for the triumph of legitimacy.

Judas was not alone; in his suite there was a kind of ruffian band, almost entirely composed of servants of the high priest, but whom Mr. Salvador honours with the title of the *legal soldiery*. If in the crowd there were any Roman *soldiers*, they were there as spectators, and without having been legally called on duty; for the Roman commanding officer, Pilate, had not yet heard the affair spoken of.

This personal seizure of Jesus had so much the appearance of a forcible arrest, an illegal act of violence, that his disciples made preparation to repel force by force.

Malchus, the insolent servant of the high priest, having shown [548] himself the most eager to rush upon Jesus, Peter, not less zealous for his own master, cut off the servant's right ear.

This resistance might have been continued with success, if Jesus had not immediately interfered. But what proves that Peter, even while causing bloodshed, was not resisting a *legal order*, a *legal judgment* or decree, (which would have made his resistance an act of *rebellion by an armed force against a judicial order*,) is this—that he was not arrested, either at the moment or afterwards, at the house of the high priest, to which he followed Jesus, and where he was most distinctly recognised by the maid servant of the high priest, and even by a relative of Malchus.

Jesus alone was arrested; and although he had not individually offered any active resistance, and had even restrained that of his disciples, they bound him as a malefactor; which was a criminal degree of rigour, since for the purpose of securing a single man by a numerous band of persons armed with swords and staves it was not necessary. “Be ye come out as against a thief with swords and staves?” Luke xxii. 52.

Section IV.—OTHER IRREGULARITIES IN THE ARREST.—SEIZURE OF THE PERSON.

They dragged Jesus along with them; and, instead of taking him directly to the proper magistrate, they carried him before Annas, who had no other character than that of being *father-in-*

*law to the high priest.* John xviii. 13. Now, if this was only for the purpose of letting him be seen by him, such a curiosity was not to be gratified; it was a vexatious proceeding, an irregularity.

From the house of Annas they led him to that of the high priest; all this time being *bound*. John xviii. 24. They placed him in the court yard; it was cold, and they made a fire; it was in the night time, but by the light of the fire Peter was recognised by the people of the palace.

[549]

Now the Jewish law prohibited *all proceedings by night*; here, therefore, there was another infraction of the law.

Under this state of things, his person being forcibly seized and detained in a private house, and delivered into the hands of servants, in the midst of a court, how was Jesus treated? St. Luke says, the men that held Jesus *mocked* him and *smote* him; and when they had blindfolded him, they struck him on the face, and asked him, saying, Prophecy, who is it that smote thee? And many other things blasphemously spake they against him. Luke xxii. 63, 64, 65.

Will it be said, as Mr. Salvador does, that all this took place out of the presence of the senate? Let us wait, in this instance, till the senate shall be called up, and we shall see how far they protected the accused person.

Section V.—CAPTIOUS INTERROGATORIES.—ACTS OF VIOLENCE TOWARDS JESUS.

Already had the cock crowed! But it was not yet day. The elders of the people and the chief priests and the scribes came together, and, having caused Jesus to appear before their council, they proceeded to interrogate him. Luke xxii. 66.

Now, in the outset, it should be observed, that if they had been less carried away by their hatred, they should, as it was the *night time*, not only have postponed, but put a stop to the proceedings, because it was *the feast of the Passover*, the most solemn of all festivals; and according to their law no *judicial procedure* could



take place on a feast-day, under the penalty of being null.<sup>403</sup> Nevertheless, let us see who proceeded to interrogate Jesus. This was that same Caiaphas, who, if he had intended to remain a *judge*, was evidently liable to objection; for in the preceding assemblage he had made himself the *accuser* of Jesus.<sup>404</sup> Even before he had seen or heard him, he declared him to be *deserving of death*. He said to his colleagues, that “it was *expedient* that one man should die for all.” John xviii. 14. Such being the opinion [550] of Caiaphas, we shall not be surprised, if he shows partiality.

Instead of interrogating Jesus respecting *positive acts done*, with their circumstances, and respecting *facts personal to himself*, Caiaphas interrogates him respecting *general facts*, respecting his disciples (whom it would have been much more simple to have called as witnesses), and respecting his *doctrine*, which was a mere abstraction so long as no external acts were the consequence of it. “The high priest then asked Jesus of his disciples and of his doctrine.” John xviii. 19.

Jesus answered with dignity: “I spake openly to the world; I ever taught in the synagogue and in the temple, whither the Jews always resort; and in secret have I said nothing.” Ib. 20.

“Why askest thou me? Ask them which heard me, *what I have said unto them*; behold, they know what I said.” Ib. 21.

“And when he had thus spoken, one of the officers which stood by struck Jesus with the palm of his hand, saying, Answerest thou the high priest so?” Ib. 22.

Will it here be still said, that this violence was the individual act of the person who thus struck the accused? I answer, that on this occasion the fact took place in the presence and under the eyes of the whole council; and, as the high priest who presided did not restrain the author of it, I come to the conclusion, that

<sup>403</sup> See, as to these two grounds of nullity, the Jewish authors cited by Prost de Royer, tome 2, p. 205, *verbo* ACCUSATION{FNS.

<sup>404</sup> Mr. Salvador admits this: “Caiaphas,” says he, “made himself his accuser.” p. 85.

he became an accomplice, especially when this violence was committed under the pretence of avenging the alleged affront to his dignity.

But in what respect could the answer of Jesus appear offensive? "If I have spoken evil," said Jesus, "bear witness of the evil; but if well, why smitest thou me?"<sup>405</sup> John xviii. 23.

There remained no mode of escaping from this dilemma. They accused Jesus; it was for those, who accused, to prove their accusation. An accused person is not obliged to criminate himself. He should have been convicted by proofs; he himself called for them. Let us see what witnesses were produced against him.

[551]

Section VI.—WITNESSES.—NEW INTERROGATORIES.—THE JUDGE IN A PASSION.

"And the chief priests and all the council sought for witness against Jesus to put him to death; and found none." Mark xiv. 55.

"For many bare *false witness* against him, but their witness agreed not together." Ib. 56.

"And there arose certain, and bare false witness against him, saying, We heard him say, I will destroy this temple that is made with hands, and within three days I will build another made without hands." Ib. 57, 58.

"But (to the same point still) neither so did their witness agree together." Ib. 59.

Mr. Salvador, on this subject, says, p. 87: "The two witnesses, whom St. Matthew and St. Mark charge with *falsehood*, narrate a discourse which St. John declares to be *true*, so far as respects the power which Jesus Christ attributed to himself."

This alleged contradiction among the Evangelists does not exist. In the first place, St. Matthew does not say that the

<sup>405</sup> Ananias, a chief priest, having given orders to strike Paul upon the face, Paul said to him: "God shall smite thee, thou whited wall; for sittest thou to judge me after the law, and commandest me to be smitten, *contrary to the law!*" Acts xxiii. 3.

discourse was had by Jesus. In chapter xxvi. 61, he states the depositions of the witnesses, but saying at the same time that they were *false witnesses*; and in chapter xxvii. 40, he puts the same declaration into the mouth of those who insulted Jesus at the foot of the cross; but he does not put it into the mouth of Christ. He is in accordance with St. Mark.

St. John, chapter ii. 19, makes Jesus speak in these words: "Jesus answered and said unto them, Destroy this temple, and in three days I will raise it up." And St. John adds: "He spake of the temple of his body."

Thus Jesus did not say in an affirmative and somewhat menacing manner, *I will destroy this temple*, as the witnesses *falsely* assumed; he only said, hypothetically, *Destroy this temple*, that is to say, suppose this temple should be destroyed, I will raise it up in three days. Besides, they could not dissemble, that he referred to a temple altogether different from theirs, because he said, I will raise up another in three days, *which will not be made by the hands of man*. [552]

It hence results, at least, that the Jews did not understand him, for they cried out, "Forty and six years was this temple in building, and wilt thou rear it up in three days?"

Thus, then, the witnesses did not agree together, and their declarations had nothing conclusive. Mark xiv. 59. We must, therefore, look for other proofs.

"Then the high priest, (we must not forget, that he is still the accuser,) the high priest stood up in the midst, and asked Jesus, saying, Answerest thou nothing? what is it, which these witness against thee? But he held his peace, and answered nothing." Mark xiv. 60. In truth, since the question was not concerning the temple of the Jews, but an ideal temple, not made by the hand of man, and which was alone in the thoughts of Jesus, the explanation was to be found in the very evidence itself.

The high priest continued: "I adjure thee, by the living God, that thou tell us, whether thou be the Christ, the Son of God."

Matt. xxvi. 63. I adjure thee, I call upon thee on oath! a gross infraction of that rule of morals and jurisprudence, which forbids our placing an accused person between the danger of perjury and the fear of inculcating himself, and thus making his situation more hazardous. The high priest, however, persists, and says to him: Art thou the Christ, the Son of God?<sup>406</sup> Jesus answered, *Thou hast said*. Matthew xxvi. 64; *I am*. Mark xiv. 62.

“Then the high priest rent his clothes, saying, *He hath spoken blasphemy; what further need have we of witnesses?* behold, now ye have heard his blasphemy. What think ye? They answered and said, He is guilty of death.” Matt. xxvi. 66.

Let us now compare this scene of violence with the mild deduction of principles, which we find in the chapter of Mr. Salvador *On the Administration of Justice*; and let us ask ourselves, if, as he alleges, we find a just *application* of them in the proceedings against Christ?

[553]

Do we discover here that *respect* of the Hebrew judge towards the party accused, when we see that Caiaphas permitted him to be struck, in his presence, *with impunity*?

What was this Caiaphas, at once an accuser and judge?<sup>407</sup> A passionate man, and too much resembling the odious portrait which the historian Josephus has given us of him!<sup>408</sup> A judge, who was irritated to such a degree, that he rent his clothes; who imposed upon the accused a most solemn oath, and who gave to his answers the criminal character, that *he had spoken blasphemy*! And, from that moment, he wanted no more

<sup>406</sup> Mr. Salvador, in his note to p. 82, admits, that “the expression *Son of God* was in common use among the Hebrews, to signify a man of great wisdom, or of deep piety.” But he adds, “*It was not in this sense*, that it was used by Jesus Christ; it would not have caused so strong a sensation.” Thus, then, by *construction*, and changing the words from their usual meaning, an article of accusation is formed against Jesus.

<sup>407</sup> That is, he usurped the functions of a judge; for we shall see, in the next section, that the *Council* of the Jews had not jurisdiction of capital cases.

<sup>408</sup> Antiq. Judaic. lib. 18, cap. 3 & 6.

witnesses, notwithstanding the law required them. He would not have an inquiry, which he perceived would be insufficient; he attempts to supply it by captious questions. He is desirous of having him condemned *upon his own declaration alone*, (interpreted, too, as he chooses to understand it,) though that was forbidden by the laws of the Hebrews! And, in the midst of a most violent transport of passion, this accuser himself, a high priest, who means to speak in the name of the living God, is the first to pass sentence of death, and carries with him the opinions of the rest!

In this hideous picture I cannot recognise that justice of the Hebrews, of which Mr. Salvador has given so fine a view in *his theory*!

#### Section VII.—SUBSEQUENT ACTS OF VIOLENCE.

Immediately after this kind of sacerdotal verdict rendered against Jesus, the acts of violence and insults recommenced with increased strength; the fury of the judge must have communicated itself to the bystanders. St. Matthew says: “Then did they spit in his face, and buffeted him; and others smote him with the palms of their hands, saying, Prophecy unto us, thou Christ; who is he that smote thee?” Matt. xxvi. 67, 68.

[554]

Mr. Salvador does not contest the truth of this ill treatment. In page 88 he says, “It was contrary to the spirit of the Hebrew law, and that it was not according to the order of nature, that a senate composed of the most respectable men of a nation,—that a senate, which might perhaps be mistaken, but which thought it was acting mildly, should have permitted such outrages against him whose life it held in its own hands. The writers who have transmitted these details to us, not having been present themselves at the trial, were disposed to overcharge the picture, either on account of their own feelings, or to throw upon their judges a greater odium.”

I repeat; this ill treatment was entirely contrary to the spirit of the law. And what do I want more, since my object is to make

prominent *all the violations of law*.

“It is not in nature to see a body, which respects itself, authorize such attempts.” But of what consequence is that, when the fact is established? “The historians, it is said, were not present at the trial.” But was Mr. Salvador there present himself, so that he could give a flat denial of their statements? And when even an able writer, who was not an eye-witness, relates the same events after the lapse of more than eighteen centuries, he ought at least to bring opposing evidence, if he would impeach that of contemporaries; who, if they were not in the very hall of the council, were certainly on the spot, in the vicinity, perhaps in the court yard, inquiring anxiously of every thing that was happening to the man whose disciples they were.<sup>409</sup> Besides, the learned author whom I am combating says, in the outset (p. 81), “it is from the Gospels themselves that he will take all his facts.” He must then take the whole together, as well those which go to condemn, as those which are in palliation or excuse.

Those gross insults, those inhuman acts of violence, even if they are to be cast upon the servants of the high priest and the persons in his train, do not excuse those individuals, who, when they took upon themselves the authority of judges, were bound at the same time to throw around him all the protection of the law. Caiaphas, too, was culpable as the master of the house (for every thing took place in his house), even if he should not be responsible as high priest and president of the council for having permitted excesses, which, indeed were but too much in accordance with the rage he had himself displayed upon the bench.

These outrages, which would be inexcusable even towards a man irrevocably condemned to punishment, were the more criminal towards Jesus, because, legally and judicially speaking,

<sup>409</sup> Peter followed him afar off unto the high priest's palace, and went in and sat with the servants to see the end. Matt. xxvi. 58. So also the young man spoken of by St. Mark, xiv. 51: And there followed him a certain young man, &c.

there had not yet been any sentence properly passed against him according to the public law of the country; as we shall see in the following section, which will deserve the undivided attention of the reader.

Section VIII.—THE POSITION OF THE JEWS IN RESPECT TO THE ROMANS.

We must not forget, *that Judea was a conquered country*. After the death of Herod—most inappropriately surnamed *the Great*—Augustus had confirmed his last will, by which that king of the Jews had arranged the division of his dominions between *his* two sons: but Augustus did not continue their title of *king*, which their father had borne.

Archeläus, on whom Judea devolved, having been recalled on account of his cruelties, the territory, which was at first intrusted to his command, was united to the province of Syria. (*Josephus*, Antiq. Jud. lib. 17, cap. 15.)

Augustus then appointed particular officers for Judea. Tiberius did the same; and at the time of which we are speaking, Pilate was one of those officers. (*Josephus*, lib. 18, cap. 3 & 8.)

Some have considered Pilate as governor, by title, and have given him the Latin appellation, *Præses*, president or governor. But they have mistaken the force of the word. Pilate was one of those public officers, who were called by the Romans, *procuratores Cæsaris*, Imperial procurators. With this title of *procurator*, he was placed under the superior authority of the governor of Syria, the true *præses*, or governor of that province, of which Judea was then only one of the dependencies. [556]

To the governor (*præses*) peculiarly belonged the right of taking cognizance of *capital* cases.<sup>410</sup> The *procurator*, on the contrary, had, for his principal duty, nothing but the collection of the revenue, and the trial of revenue causes. But the right of taking cognizance of *capital* cases did, in some instances, belong

<sup>410</sup> *De Crimine præsidis cognitio est*. Cujas, xix. Observ. 13.

to certain *procurators*, who were sent into small provinces to fill the places of governors (*vice præsidēs*), as appears clearly from the Roman laws.<sup>411</sup> Such was *Pilate* at Jerusalem.<sup>412</sup>

The Jews, placed in this political position—notwithstanding they were left in the enjoyment of their civil laws, the public exercise of their religion, and many things merely relating to their police and municipal regulations—the Jews, I say, had not the *power of life and death*; this was a principal attribute of sovereignty, which the Romans always took great care to reserve to themselves, even if they neglected other things. *Apud Romanos, jus valet gladii; cætera transmittuntur.* TACIT.

What then was the right of the Jewish authorities in regard to Jesus? Without doubt the scribes, and their friends the Pharisees, might well have been alarmed, as a body and individually, at the preaching and success of Jesus; they might be concerned for their worship; and they might have interrogated the man respecting his creed and his doctrines,—they might have made a kind of preparatory proceeding,—they might have declared, in point of fact, that those doctrines, which threatened their own, were contrary to their law, as understood by themselves.

[557]

But that law, although it had not undergone any alteration as to the affairs of religion, had no longer any coercive power as to the external or civil regulations of society. In vain would they have undertaken to pronounce sentence of death under the circumstances of the case of Jesus; the council of the Jews had not the power to pass a *sentence of death*; it only would have had power to make *an accusation* against him before the governor,

<sup>411</sup> Procurator Cæsaris fungens vice præsidis potest cognoscere de causis criminalibus. Godefroy, in his note (letter S) upon the 3rd law of the Code, *Ubi causæ fiscales*, &c. And he cites several others, which I have verified, and which are most precise to the same effect. See particularly the 4th law of the Code, *Ad leg. fab. de plag.*, and the 2nd law of the Code, *De Pœnis*.

<sup>412</sup> Procuratoribus Cæsaris data est jurisdictio in causis fiscalibus pecuniariis, non in criminalibus, nisi quum fungebantur vice præsidum; ut Pontius Pilatus fuit procurator Cæsaris vice præsidis in Syria. Cujas, *Observ.* xix. 13.



or his deputy, and then deliver him over to be tried by him.

Let us distinctly establish this point; for here I entirely differ in opinion from Mr. Salvador. According to him, (p. 88), “the Jews had *reserved the power of trying, according to their law*; but it was in the hands of the *procurator* alone, that the executive power was vested; every culprit must be put to death by *his* consent, in order that the senate should not have the means of reaching persons that were sold to foreigners.”

No; the Jews had not reserved *the right of passing sentence of death*. This right had been transferred to the Romans by the very act of conquest; and this was not merely that the senate should not have the means of reaching persons who were sold to foreign countries; but it was done, in order that the conqueror might be able to reach those individuals who should become *impatient of the yoke*; it was, in short, for the equal protection of all, as all had become Roman subjects; and to Rome alone belonged the highest judicial power, which is the principal attribute of sovereignty. Pilate, as the representative of Cæsar in Judea, was not merely an agent of the *executive authority*, which would have left the *judiciary* and *legislative* power in the hands of the conquered people—he was not simply an officer appointed to give an *exequatur* or mere approval (*visa*) to sentences passed by *another authority*, the *authority of the Jews*. When the matter in question was a *capital* case, the Roman authorities not only ordered the *execution* of a sentence, but also took cognizance (*cognitio*) of the crime; it had the right of jurisdiction *à priori*, and that of *passing judgment in the last resort*. If Pilate himself had not had this power by special delegation, *vice præsidis*, it was vested in the governor, within whose territorial jurisdiction the case occurred; but in any event we hold it to be clear, [558] that the Jews had lost the right of *condemning to death* any person whatever, not only so far as respects the *execution* but the *passing* of the sentence. This is one of the best settled points in the provincial law of the Romans.

The Jews were not ignorant of this; for when they went before Pilate, to ask of him the condemnation of Jesus, they themselves declared, that it was not permitted to them to put any person to death: "It is not lawful for us to put any man to death." John xviii. 31.

Here I am happy to be able to support myself by the opinion of a very respectable authority, the celebrated Loiseau, in his treatise on *Seigneuries*, in the chapter on the administration of *justice belonging to cities*. "In truth," says he, "there is some evidence, that the *police*, in which the people had the sole interest, was administered by officers of the people; but I know not upon what were founded the concessions of power to some cities of France to exercise criminal jurisdiction; nor why the Ordinance of Moulins left that to them rather than civil cases; for the criminal jurisdiction is the *right of the sword*, the *merum imperium*, or absolute sovereignty. Accordingly, by the Roman law, the administration of justice was so far prohibited to the officers of cities, that they could not punish even by a simple fine. *Thus it is doubtless that we must understand* that passage of the Gospel, where the Jews say to Pilate, *It is not lawful for us to put any man to death*; for, after they were subjected to the Romans, they had not jurisdiction of crimes."

Let us now follow Jesus to the presence of Pilate.

#### Section IX.—THE ACCUSATION MADE BEFORE PILATE.

At this point I must entreat the particular attention of the reader. The irregularities and acts of violence, which I have hitherto remarked upon, are nothing in comparison with the unbridled fury, which is about to display itself before the *Roman Judge*, in order to extort from him, against his own conviction, a sentence of death.

[559]

"And straightway in the morning the chief priests held a consultation with the elders, and scribes, and the whole council, and bound Jesus, and carried him away, and delivered him to Pilate." Mark xv. 1.

*As soon as the morning was come; for, as I have observed already, every thing which had been done thus far against Jesus was done during the night.*

They then led Jesus from Caiaphas unto the Hall of Judgment of Pilate.<sup>413</sup> It was early; and they themselves went not into the judgment hall, lest *they should be defiled*; but that they might eat the passover. John xviii. 28.

Singular scrupulousness! and truly worthy of the Pharisees! They were afraid of *defiling themselves on the day of the passover* by entering *the house of a heathen*! And yet, the same day, only some hours before presenting themselves to Pilate, they had, in contempt of their own law, committed the outrage of *holding a council* and deliberating upon *an accusation of a capital crime*.

As they would not enter, "Pilate went out to them." John xviii. 29. Now observe his language. He did not say to them, *Where is the sentence you have passed*; as he must have done, if he was only to give them his simple *exequatur*, or permission to execute the sentence; but he takes up the matter from the beginning, as would be done by one who had *plenary jurisdiction*; and he says to them: What accusation bring ye against this man?

They answered, with their accustomed haughtiness: If he were not *a malefactor* we would not have delivered him up to thee. John xviii. 30. They wished to have it understood, that, being a question of *blasphemy*, it was the *cause of their religion*, which they could appreciate better than any others could. Pilate, then, would have been under the necessity of believing them *on their word*. But this Roman, indignant at their proposed course of proceeding, which would have restricted his jurisdiction by making him the passive instrument of the wishes of the Jews, answered them in an ironical manner: Well, since you say he [560] has sinned against your law, take him yourselves and judge him according to your law. John xviii. 31. This was an absolute

<sup>413</sup> "To carry one from Caiaphas to Pilate" has since become a proverb.

mystification to them, for they knew their own want of power to condemn him to death. But they were obliged to yield the point, and to submit to Pilate himself their *articles of accusation*.

Now what were the grounds of this accusation? Were they *the same* which had hitherto been alleged against Jesus—the charge of *blasphemy*—which was the only one brought forward by Caiaphas before the council of the Jews? Not at all; despairing of obtaining from the Roman judge a sentence of *death* for a *religious* quarrel, which was of no interest to the Romans,<sup>414</sup> they suddenly changed their plan; they abandoned their first accusation, the charge of blasphemy, and substituted for it a *political* accusation, an *offence against the state*.

Here we have the very crisis, or essential incident, of the passion; and that which makes the heaviest accusation of guilt on the part of the informers against Jesus. For, being fully bent on destroying him in any manner whatever, they no longer exhibited themselves as the avengers of *their religion*, which was alleged to have been outraged, or of their worship, which it was pretended was threatened; but, ceasing to appear as Jews, in order to affect sentiments belonging to a foreign nation, those hypocrites held out the appearance of being concerned for the interests of *Rome*; they accused their own countryman of an intention to restore the kingdom of Jerusalem, to make himself *king* of the *Jews*, and to make an insurrection of the people against their conquerors. Let us hear them speak for themselves:

“And they began to *accuse* him, saying, We found this fellow perverting the nation, and forbidding to give tribute to Cæsar, saying, that he himself is Christ a *king*.” Luke xxiii. 2.

What a calumny! Jesus forbidding to give tribute to Cæsar! when he had answered the Pharisees themselves, in presence of the whole people, by showing them the image of Cæsar upon

---

<sup>414</sup> Lysias thus wrote to Felix the Governor, in relation to Paul: Whom I perceived to be accused of questions of their law, but to have nothing laid to his charge worthy of death or bonds. Acts xxiii. 29.

a Roman piece of money, and saying, Give unto Cæsar the things which are Cæsar's. But this accusation was one mode of interesting Pilate in respect to his jurisdiction; for, as an imperial *procurator*, he was specially to superintend the collection of the revenue. The second branch of the accusation still more directly affected the sovereignty of the Romans: "He holds himself up for a *king*." [561]

The accusation having thus assumed a character purely *political*, Pilate thought he must pay attention to it. "Then Pilate entered into the judgment hall," (the place where justice was administered,) and having *summoned Jesus to appear* before him, he proceeds to his Examination, and says to him: "Art thou the king of the Jews?" John xviii. 33.

This question, so different from those which had been addressed to him at the house of the high priest, appears to have excited the astonishment of Jesus; and, in his turn, he asked Pilate: "Sayest thou this thing of thyself, or did others tell it thee of me?" Ib. 24. In reality, Jesus was desirous of knowing, first of all, the authors of this new accusation—Is this an accusation brought against me by the *Romans* or by the *Jews*?

Pilate replied to him—"Am I a Jew? Thine own nation and the chief priests have delivered thee unto me; what hast thou done?" Ib. 35.

All the particulars of this procedure are important; I cannot too often repeat the remark, that in no part of the transactions before Pilate is there any question at all respecting a previous sentence, a judgment already passed—a judgment, the execution of which was the only subject of consideration; it was a case of a capital accusation; but an accusation which was then just beginning; they were about the preliminary *interrogatories* put to the accused, and Pilate says to him, "What hast thou done?"

Jesus, seeing by the explanation what was the source of the *prejudging* of his case, and knowing the secret thoughts which predominated in making the accusation, and that his enemies

[562]

wanted to arrive at the same end by an artifice, answered Pilate—“*My kingdom is not of this world*; if my kingdom were of this world, then would my servants fight, that I should not be delivered to the Jews;” (we see, in fact, that Jesus had forbidden his people to resist) but, he added, “now is my kingdom not from hence.” John xviii. 36.

This answer of Jesus is very remarkable; it became the foundation of his religion, and the pledge of its universality, because it detached it from the interests of all governments. It rests not merely in assertion, in doctrine; it was given in *justification*, in *defence* against the accusation of intending to make himself *King of the Jews*. Indeed, if Jesus had affected a *temporal* royal authority, if there had been the least attempt, on his part, to usurp *the power of Cæsar*, he would have been guilty of treason in the eyes of the magistrate. But, by answering twice, *my kingdom is not of this world*, *my kingdom is not from hence*, his justification was complete.

Pilate, however, persisted and said to him: “Art thou a king then?” Jesus replied, Thou sayest that I am a king. To this end was I born, and for this cause came I into the world, that I should bear witness unto the truth. Every one that is of the truth heareth my voice. John xviii. 37.

Pilate then said to him: *What is the truth?*

This question proves, that Pilate had not a very clear idea of what Jesus called *the truth*. He perceived nothing in it but *ideology*; and, satisfied with having said (less in the manner of a question than of an exclamation) “*What is the truth,*” he went on to the Jews (who remained outside) and said to them, “*I find in him no fault at all.*” John xviii. 38.

Here, then, we see Jesus absolved from the accusation by the declaration of the Roman judge himself.

But the accusers, persisting still farther, added—“*He stirreth up the people, teaching throughout all Jewry, beginning from Galilee to this place.*” Luke xxiii. 5.

“He stirreth up the people!” This is a charge of sedition; and for Pilate. But observe, it was *by the doctrine which he teaches*; these words comprehend the real complaint of the Jews. To them it was equivalent to saying—He *teaches* the people, he instructs them, he enlightens them; he preaches *new doctrines* which are not *ours*. “He stirs up the people!” This, in their months signified—the people hear him willingly; the people follow and become attached to him; for he preaches a doctrine that is friendly and consolatory to the people; he unmasks our pride, our avarice, our insatiable spirit of domination! [563]

Pilate, however, does not appear to have attached much importance to this new turn given to the accusation; but he here betrays a weakness. He heard the word *Galilee*; and he makes that the occasion of shifting off the responsibility upon another public officer, and seizes the occasion with avidity. He says to Jesus—you are a *Galilean* then? and, upon the answer being in the affirmative, considering Jesus as belonging to the jurisdiction of Herod-Antipas, who, by the good pleasure of Cæsar, was then tetrarch of Galilee, he sent him to Herod. Luke xxiii. 6, 7.

But Herod, who, as St. Luke says, had been long desirous of *seeing Jesus* and had hoped to see some miracle done by him, after satisfying an idle curiosity and putting several questions to him, which Jesus did not deign to answer,—Herod, notwithstanding the presence of the priests, (who had not yet gone off, but stood there with their scribes,) and notwithstanding the pertinacity with which they continued to accuse Jesus, perceiving nothing but what was merely chimerical in the *accusation of being a king*, made a mockery of the affair, and sent Jesus back to Pilate, *after having arrayed him in a gorgeous robe*, in order to show that he thought this pretended royalty was a subject of ridicule rather than of apprehensions. Luke xxiii. 8, &c., and De Sacy. *Ib*.

#### Section X.—THE LAST EFFORTS BEFORE PILATE.

No person, then, was willing to condemn Jesus; neither Herod, who only made the case a subject of mockery, nor Pilate, who

had openly declared that he found nothing criminal in him.

But the hatred of the priests was not disarmed—so far from it, that the chief priests, with a numerous train of their partisans, returned to Pilate with a determination to force him to a decision.

[564]

The unfortunate Pilate, reviewing his proceedings in their presence, said to them again: “Ye have brought this man unto me as one that perverteth the people—and, behold, I, having examined him before you, *have found no fault in this man touching those things whereof ye accuse him*: No, nor yet Herod; for I sent you to him, and lo, *nothing worthy of death is done unto him*. I will therefore chastise him and release him.” Luke xxiii. 14, 15.

After “chastising” him! And was not this a piece of cruelty, when he considered him to be innocent?<sup>415</sup> But this was an act of condescension by which Pilate hoped to quiet the rage with which he saw they were agitated.

“Then Pilate therefore took Jesus and scourged him.” John xix. 1. And, supposing that he had done enough to disarm their fury, he exhibited him to them in that pitiable condition; saying to them at the same time, Behold the man! *Ecce homo*. John xix. 5.

Now, in my turn, I say, here is indeed a decree of Pilate, and an unjust decree; but it is not the pretended decree alleged to have been made by the Jews. It is a decision wholly different; an unjust decision, it is true; but sufficient to avail as a *legal bar* to any new proceedings against Jesus for the same act. *Non bis in idem*, no man shall be put twice in jeopardy, &c. is a maxim, which has come down to us from the Romans.

<sup>415</sup> Gerhard makes the following unanswerable dilemma upon this point. “Be consistent with thyself, Pilate; for, if Christ is innocent, why dost thou not send him away acquitted? And if thou believest him deserving of chastisement with rods, why dost thou proclaim him to be innocent?” *Gerh. Harm.* ch. 193, p. 1889.



Accordingly, “from thenceforth Pilate sought to *release* Jesus.” John xix. 12.

Here, now, observe the deep perfidy of his accusers. “If thou let this man go, thou art not Cæsar’s friend; whosoever maketh himself a *king* speaketh against Cæsar.” Ib.

It does not appear that Pilate was malignant; we see all the efforts he had made at different times to save Jesus. But he was a *public officer*, and was attached to *his office*; he was intimidated by the outcry which called in question his *fidelity to the emperor*; he was afraid of a *dismissal*: and he yielded. He immediately reascended the judgment-seat; (Matt. xxvii. 19), and, as new light had thus come upon him, he proceeded to make a second decree!

[565]

But being for a moment stopped by the voice of his own conscience, and by the advice which his terrified wife sent to him—“*Have thou nothing to do with that just man*”—(Matt. xxvii. 19)—he made his last effort, by attempting to influence the populace to accept of Barabbas instead of Jesus. “But the chief priests moved the people, that he should rather release Barabbas unto them.” Mark xv. 11. Barabbas! a murderer! an assassin!

Pilate spoke to them again: *What will ye then, that I should do with Jesus?* And they cried out, *Away with him, crucify him.* Pilate still persisted: *Shall I crucify your king?* thus using terms of raillery, in order to disarm them. But here showing themselves to be more truly Roman than Pilate himself, the chief priests hypocritically answered: *We have no king but Cæsar.* John xix. 15.

The outcry was renewed—Crucify him, crucify him! And the clamour became more and more threatening; “and the voices of them and of the chief priests prevailed.” Luke xxiii. 23.

At length Pilate, *being desirous of pleasing the multitude*, proceeds to speak. But can we call it a legal adjudication, a *judgment*, that he is about to pronounce? Is he, at the moment,

in that free state of mind which is necessary for a judge, who is about to pass a *sentence of death*? What new witnesses, what proofs have been brought forward to change his conviction and opinion, which had been so energetically declared, of the innocence of Jesus?

“When Pilate saw that he could prevail nothing, but that rather a tumult was made, he took water and washed his hands before the multitude, saying, *I am innocent of the blood of this just person*; see ye to it. Matt. xxvii. 24. And Pilate gave sentence, that it should be as they required. Luke xxiii. 24. And he delivered him to them to be crucified.” Matt. xxvii. 26.

Well mayest thou wash thy hands, Pilate, stained as they are with innocent blood! Thou hast authorised the act in thy weakness; thou art not less culpable, than if thou hadst sacrificed him through wickedness! All generations, down to our own time, have repeated that the *Just One* suffered under *Pontius Pilate*. Thy name has remained in history, to serve for the instruction of all public men, all pusillanimous judges, in order to hold up to them the shame of *yielding contrary to one's own convictions*. The populace, in its fury, made an outcry at the foot of thy judgment-seat, where, perhaps, thou thyself didst not sit securely! But of what importance was that? Thy *duty* spoke out; and in such a case, better would it be to suffer death, than to inflict it on another.<sup>416</sup>

We will now come to a conclusion.

<sup>416</sup> We will cite here the words of one of the finest laws of the Romans: Vanæ voces populi non sunt audiendæ, quando aut noxium crimine absolvi, aut innocentum condemnari desiderant—The idle clamour of the populace is not to be regarded, when they call for a guilty man to be acquitted, or an innocent one to be condemned. *Law 12, Code de Pœnis*. Pilate might also have read in Horace: Justum et tenacem, &c.—

“The man in conscious virtue bold,  
Who dares his secret purpose hold,  
Unshaken hears the crowd's tumultuous cries,  
And the impetuous tyrant's angry brow defies.”

The *proof* that Jesus was not, as Mr. Salvador maintains, put to death for the crime of blasphemy or sacrilege, and for having preached a new religious worship in contravention of the Mosaic law, results from *the very sentence* pronounced by Pilate; a sentence, in pursuance of which he was led to execution by Roman soldiers.

There was among the Romans a custom, which we borrowed from their jurisprudence, and which is still followed, of placing over the head of a condemned criminal a writing containing *an extract from his sentence*, in order that the public might know *for what crime* he was condemned. This was the reason why Pilate put on the cross a label, on which he had written these words: *Jesus Nazarenus Rex Judæorum*, (Jesus of Nazareth, King of the Jews), which has since been denoted by the initials J. N. R. J. This was the alleged cause of his condemnation. St. Mark says—“And the superscription of his *accusation* was written over—*The King of the Jews*.” Mark xv. 26.

This inscription was first in *Latin*, which was the legal language of the *Roman* judge; and it was repeated in *Hebrew* and *Greek*, in order to be understood by the people of the nation and by foreigners. [567]

The chief priests, whose indefatigable hatred did not overlook the most minute details, being apprehensive that people would take it to be literally a fact affirmed, that Jesus *was the King of the Jews*, said to Pilate: “Write not *King of the Jews*, but that *he said* I am king of the Jews.” But Pilate answered: “What I have written I have written.” John xix. 21, 22.

This is a conclusive answer to one of the last assertions of Mr. Salvador, (p. 88,) that “the Roman Pilate signed the sentence;” by which he always means that Pilate did nothing but sign a sentence, which he supposes to have been passed by the Sanhedrim; but in this he is mistaken. Pilate did not merely *sign* the sentence, or decree, but *drew it up*; and, when his draft was objected to by the priests, he still adhered to it, saying, what I

have written shall remain as written.

Here then we see the true cause of the condemnation of Jesus! Here we have the “*judicial and legal proof*.” Jesus was the victim of a *political* accusation! He was put to death for the imaginary crime of having aimed at the power of Cæsar, by calling himself *King of the Jews*! Absurd accusation; which Pilate never believed, and which the chief priests and the Pharisees themselves did not believe. For they were not authorized to arrest Jesus on that account; it was a new, and totally different, accusation from that which they first planned—a sudden accusation of the moment, when they saw that Pilate was but little affected by their *religious* zeal, and they found it necessary to arouse *his* zeal for Cæsar.

“*If thou let this man go, thou art not Cæsar's friend!*” This alarming language has too often, since that time, reverberated in the ears of timid judges, who, like Pilate, have rendered themselves criminal by delivering up victims through want of firmness, whom they would never have condemned, if they had listened to the voice of their own consciences.

Let us now recapitulate the case, as I have considered it from the beginning.

Is it not evident, contrary to the conclusion of Mr. Salvador, that Jesus, considered merely as *a simple citizen*, was not tried and sentenced either *according to law*, or *agreeably to the forms of legal proceedings then existing*?

God, according to his eternal design, might permit the just to suffer by the malice of men; but he also intended, that this should at least happen by a disregard of all laws, and by a violation of all established rules, in order that the entire contempt of forms should stand as the first warning of the violation of law.

Let us not be surprised then, that in another part of his work, Mr. Salvador (who, it is gratifying to observe, discusses his subject dispassionately) expresses some regret in speaking of the “*unfortunate sentence against Jesus*.” Vol. i. p. 59. He has wished to excuse the Hebrews; but, one of that nation, in giving

utterance to the feelings of his heart, still says—in language which I took from his own mouth, “We should be very cautious of condemning him at this day.”

I pass over the excesses which followed the order of Pilate; as, the violence shown to Simon, the Cyrenian, who was made in some degree a sharer in the punishment, by being compelled to carry the cross; the injurious treatment which attended the victim to the place of the sacrifice, and even to the cross, where Jesus still prayed for his brethren and his executioners!

To the heathen themselves I would say—You, who have gloried in the death of Socrates, how much must you be struck with wonder at that of Jesus! Ye, censors of the Areopagus, how could you undertake to excuse the Synagogue, and justify the sentence of the Hall of Judgment? Philosophy herself has not hesitated to proclaim, and we may repeat with her—“Yes, if the life and death of *Socrates* were those of a sage, the life and death of *Jesus* were those of a divinity.”



## Footnotes





\*\*\*END OF THE PROJECT GUTENBERG EBOOK AN  
EXAMINATION OF THE TESTIMONY OF THE FOUR  
EVANGELISTS\*\*\*



# Credits

January 17, 2011

Project Gutenberg TEI edition 1

Produced by Dianna Adair, Jeff G., David King,  
and the Online Distributed Proofreading Team at  
<<http://www.pgdp.net/>>. (This book was produced  
from scanned images of public domain material from  
the Google Print project.)



# A Word from Project Gutenberg

This file should be named 34989-pdf.pdf or 34989-pdf.zip.

This and all associated files of various formats will be found in:

<http://www.gutenberg.org/dirs/3/4/9/8/34989/>

Updated editions will replace the previous one — the old editions will be renamed.

Creating the works from public domain print editions means that no one owns a United States copyright in these works, so the Foundation (and you!) can copy and distribute it in the United States without permission and without paying copyright royalties. Special rules, set forth in the General Terms of Use part of this license, apply to copying and distributing Project Gutenberg™ electronic works to protect the Project Gutenberg™ concept and trademark. Project Gutenberg is a registered trademark, and may not be used if you charge for the eBooks, unless you receive specific permission. If you do not charge anything for copies of this eBook, complying with the rules is very easy. You may use this eBook for nearly any purpose such as creation of derivative works, reports, performances and research. They may be modified and printed and given away — you may do practically *anything* with public domain eBooks. Redistribution is subject to the trademark license, especially commercial redistribution.

# The Full Project Gutenberg License

*Please read this before you distribute or use this work.*

To protect the Project Gutenberg™ mission of promoting the free distribution of electronic works, by using or distributing this work (or any other work associated in any way with the phrase “Project Gutenberg”), you agree to comply with all the terms of the Full Project Gutenberg™ License (available with this file or online at <http://www.gutenberg.org/license>).

## Section 1.

### General Terms of Use & Redistributing Project Gutenberg™ electronic works

#### 1.A.

By reading or using any part of this Project Gutenberg™ electronic work, you indicate that you have read, understand, agree to and accept all the terms of this license and intellectual property (trademark/copyright) agreement. If you do not agree to abide by all the terms of this agreement, you must cease using and return or destroy all copies of Project Gutenberg™ electronic works in your possession. If you paid a fee for obtaining a copy of or access to a Project Gutenberg™ electronic work and you do not agree to be bound by the terms of this agreement, you may obtain a refund from the person or entity to whom you paid the fee as set forth in paragraph 1.E.8.

## 1.B.

“Project Gutenberg” is a registered trademark. It may only be used on or associated in any way with an electronic work by people who agree to be bound by the terms of this agreement. There are a few things that you can do with most Project Gutenberg™ electronic works even without complying with the full terms of this agreement. See paragraph 1.C below. There are a lot of things you can do with Project Gutenberg™ electronic works if you follow the terms of this agreement and help preserve free future access to Project Gutenberg™ electronic works. See paragraph 1.E below.

## 1.C.

The Project Gutenberg Literary Archive Foundation (“the Foundation” or PGLAF), owns a compilation copyright in the collection of Project Gutenberg™ electronic works. Nearly all the individual works in the collection are in the public domain in the United States. If an individual work is in the public domain in the United States and you are located in the United States, we do not claim a right to prevent you from copying, distributing, performing, displaying or creating derivative works based on the work as long as all references to Project Gutenberg are removed. Of course, we hope that you will support the Project Gutenberg™ mission of promoting free access to electronic works by freely sharing Project Gutenberg™ works in compliance with the terms of this agreement for keeping the Project Gutenberg™ name associated with the work. You can easily comply with the terms of this agreement by keeping this work in the same format with its attached full Project Gutenberg™ License when you share it without charge with others.

### 1.D.

The copyright laws of the place where you are located also govern what you can do with this work. Copyright laws in most countries are in a constant state of change. If you are outside the United States, check the laws of your country in addition to the terms of this agreement before downloading, copying, displaying, performing, distributing or creating derivative works based on this work or any other Project Gutenberg™ work. The Foundation makes no representations concerning the copyright status of any work in any country outside the United States.

### 1.E.

Unless you have removed all references to Project Gutenberg:

#### 1.E.1.

The following sentence, with active links to, or other immediate access to, the full Project Gutenberg™ License must appear prominently whenever any copy of a Project Gutenberg™ work (any work on which the phrase “Project Gutenberg” appears, or with which the phrase “Project Gutenberg” is associated) is accessed, displayed, performed, viewed, copied or distributed:

This eBook is for the use of anyone anywhere at no cost and with almost no restrictions whatsoever. You may copy it, give it away or re-use it under the terms of the Project Gutenberg License included with this eBook or online at <http://www.gutenberg.org>

#### 1.E.2.



If an individual Project Gutenberg™ electronic work is derived from the public domain (does not contain a notice indicating that it is posted with permission of the copyright holder), the work can be copied and distributed to anyone in the United States without paying any fees or charges. If you are redistributing or providing access to a work with the phrase “Project Gutenberg” associated with or appearing on the work, you must comply either with the requirements of paragraphs 1.E.1 through 1.E.7 or obtain permission for the use of the work and the Project Gutenberg™ trademark as set forth in paragraphs 1.E.8 or 1.E.9.

#### 1.E.3.

If an individual Project Gutenberg™ electronic work is posted with the permission of the copyright holder, your use and distribution must comply with both paragraphs 1.E.1 through 1.E.7 and any additional terms imposed by the copyright holder. Additional terms will be linked to the Project Gutenberg™ License for all works posted with the permission of the copyright holder found at the beginning of this work.

#### 1.E.4.

Do not unlink or detach or remove the full Project Gutenberg™ License terms from this work, or any files containing a part of this work or any other work associated with Project Gutenberg™.

#### 1.E.5.

Do not copy, display, perform, distribute or redistribute this electronic work, or any part of this electronic work, without prominently displaying the sentence set forth in paragraph 1.E.1

with active links or immediate access to the full terms of the Project Gutenberg™ License.

1.E.6.

You may convert to and distribute this work in any binary, compressed, marked up, nonproprietary or proprietary form, including any word processing or hypertext form. However, if you provide access to or distribute copies of a Project Gutenberg™ work in a format other than “Plain Vanilla ASCII” or other format used in the official version posted on the official Project Gutenberg™ web site (<http://www.gutenberg.org>), you must, at no additional cost, fee or expense to the user, provide a copy, a means of exporting a copy, or a means of obtaining a copy upon request, of the work in its original “Plain Vanilla ASCII” or other form. Any alternate format must include the full Project Gutenberg™ License as specified in paragraph 1.E.1.

1.E.7.

Do not charge a fee for access to, viewing, displaying, performing, copying or distributing any Project Gutenberg™ works unless you comply with paragraph 1.E.8 or 1.E.9.

1.E.8.

You may charge a reasonable fee for copies of or providing access to or distributing Project Gutenberg™ electronic works provided that

- You pay a royalty fee of 20% of the gross profits you derive from the use of Project Gutenberg™ works calculated using the method you already use to calculate your applicable taxes. The fee is owed to the owner of the Project

Gutenberg™ trademark, but he has agreed to donate royalties under this paragraph to the Project Gutenberg Literary Archive Foundation. Royalty payments must be paid within 60 days following each date on which you prepare (or are legally required to prepare) your periodic tax returns. Royalty payments should be clearly marked as such and sent to the Project Gutenberg Literary Archive Foundation at the address specified in Section 4, “Information about donations to the Project Gutenberg Literary Archive Foundation.”

- You provide a full refund of any money paid by a user who notifies you in writing (or by e-mail) within 30 days of receipt that s/he does not agree to the terms of the full Project Gutenberg™ License. You must require such a user to return or destroy all copies of the works possessed in a physical medium and discontinue all use of and all access to other copies of Project Gutenberg™ works.
- You provide, in accordance with paragraph 1.F.3, a full refund of any money paid for a work or a replacement copy, if a defect in the electronic work is discovered and reported to you within 90 days of receipt of the work.
- You comply with all other terms of this agreement for free distribution of Project Gutenberg™ works.

#### 1.E.9.

If you wish to charge a fee or distribute a Project Gutenberg™ electronic work or group of works on different terms than are set forth in this agreement, you must obtain permission in writing from both the Project Gutenberg Literary Archive Foundation and Michael Hart, the owner of the Project Gutenberg™ trademark. Contact the Foundation as set forth in Section 3 below.

## 1.F.

### 1.F.1.

Project Gutenberg volunteers and employees expend considerable effort to identify, do copyright research on, transcribe and proofread public domain works in creating the Project Gutenberg™ collection. Despite these efforts, Project Gutenberg™ electronic works, and the medium on which they may be stored, may contain “Defects,” such as, but not limited to, incomplete, inaccurate or corrupt data, transcription errors, a copyright or other intellectual property infringement, a defective or damaged disk or other medium, a computer virus, or computer codes that damage or cannot be read by your equipment.

### 1.F.2.

**LIMITED WARRANTY, DISCLAIMER OF DAMAGES —** Except for the “Right of Replacement or Refund” described in paragraph 1.F.3, the Project Gutenberg Literary Archive Foundation, the owner of the Project Gutenberg™ trademark, and any other party distributing a Project Gutenberg™ electronic work under this agreement, disclaim all liability to you for damages, costs and expenses, including legal fees. **YOU AGREE THAT YOU HAVE NO REMEDIES FOR NEGLIGENCE, STRICT LIABILITY, BREACH OF WARRANTY OR BREACH OF CONTRACT EXCEPT THOSE PROVIDED IN PARAGRAPH F3. YOU AGREE THAT THE FOUNDATION, THE TRADEMARK OWNER, AND ANY DISTRIBUTOR UNDER THIS AGREEMENT WILL NOT BE LIABLE TO YOU FOR ACTUAL, DIRECT, INDIRECT, CONSEQUENTIAL, PUNITIVE OR**

INCIDENTAL DAMAGES EVEN IF YOU GIVE NOTICE  
OF THE POSSIBILITY OF SUCH DAMAGE.

1.F.3.

LIMITED RIGHT OF REPLACEMENT OR REFUND — If you discover a defect in this electronic work within 90 days of receiving it, you can receive a refund of the money (if any) you paid for it by sending a written explanation to the person you received the work from. If you received the work on a physical medium, you must return the medium with your written explanation. The person or entity that provided you with the defective work may elect to provide a replacement copy in lieu of a refund. If you received the work electronically, the person or entity providing it to you may choose to give you a second opportunity to receive the work electronically in lieu of a refund. If the second copy is also defective, you may demand a refund in writing without further opportunities to fix the problem.

1.F.4.

Except for the limited right of replacement or refund set forth in paragraph 1.F.3, this work is provided to you 'AS-IS,' WITH NO OTHER WARRANTIES OF ANY KIND, EXPRESS OR IMPLIED, INCLUDING BUT NOT LIMITED TO WARRANTIES OF MERCHANTABILITY OR FITNESS FOR ANY PURPOSE.

1.F.5.

Some states do not allow disclaimers of certain implied warranties or the exclusion or limitation of certain types of damages. If any disclaimer or limitation set forth in this agreement

violates the law of the state applicable to this agreement, the agreement shall be interpreted to make the maximum disclaimer or limitation permitted by the applicable state law. The invalidity or unenforceability of any provision of this agreement shall not void the remaining provisions.

#### 1.F.6.

INDEMNITY — You agree to indemnify and hold the Foundation, the trademark owner, any agent or employee of the Foundation, anyone providing copies of Project Gutenberg™ electronic works in accordance with this agreement, and any volunteers associated with the production, promotion and distribution of Project Gutenberg™ electronic works, harmless from all liability, costs and expenses, including legal fees, that arise directly or indirectly from any of the following which you do or cause to occur: (a) distribution of this or any Project Gutenberg™ work, (b) alteration, modification, or additions or deletions to any Project Gutenberg™ work, and (c) any Defect you cause.

## Section 2.

### Information about the Mission of Project Gutenberg™

Project Gutenberg™ is synonymous with the free distribution of electronic works in formats readable by the widest variety of computers including obsolete, old, middle-aged and new computers. It exists because of the efforts of hundreds of volunteers and donations from people in all walks of life.

Volunteers and financial support to provide volunteers with the assistance they need, is critical to reaching Project Gutenberg™'s goals and ensuring that the Project Gutenberg™ collection will remain freely available for generations to come. In 2001, the Project Gutenberg Literary Archive Foundation was created to provide a secure and permanent future for Project Gutenberg™ and future generations. To learn more about the Project Gutenberg Literary Archive Foundation and how your efforts and donations can help, see Sections 3 and 4 and the Foundation web page at <http://www.pgla.org>.

## Section 3.

### Information about the Project Gutenberg Literary Archive Foundation

The Project Gutenberg Literary Archive Foundation is a non profit 501(c)(3) educational corporation organized under the laws of the state of Mississippi and granted tax exempt status by the Internal Revenue Service. The Foundation's EIN or federal tax identification number is 64-6221541. Its 501(c)(3) letter is posted at <http://www.gutenberg.org/fundraising/pglaf>. Contributions to the Project Gutenberg Literary Archive Foundation are tax deductible to the full extent permitted by U.S. federal laws and your state's laws.

The Foundation's principal office is located at 4557 Melan Dr. S. Fairbanks, AK, 99712., but its volunteers and employees are scattered throughout numerous locations. Its business office is located at 809 North 1500 West, Salt Lake City, UT 84116, (801) 596-1887, email [business@pglaf.org](mailto:business@pglaf.org). Email contact links and up

to date contact information can be found at the Foundation's web site and official page at <http://www.pgla.org>

For additional contact information:

Dr. Gregory B. Newby  
Chief Executive and Director  
[gbnewby@pgla.org](mailto:gbnewby@pgla.org)

## Section 4.

### Information about Donations to the Project Gutenberg Literary Archive Foundation

Project Gutenberg™ depends upon and cannot survive without wide spread public support and donations to carry out its mission of increasing the number of public domain and licensed works that can be freely distributed in machine readable form accessible by the widest array of equipment including outdated equipment. Many small donations (\$1 to \$5,000) are particularly important to maintaining tax exempt status with the IRS.

The Foundation is committed to complying with the laws regulating charities and charitable donations in all 50 states of the United States. Compliance requirements are not uniform and it takes a considerable effort, much paperwork and many fees to meet and keep up with these requirements. We do not solicit donations in locations where we have not received written confirmation of compliance. To SEND DONATIONS or determine the status of compliance for any particular state visit <http://www.gutenberg.org/fundraising/donate>

While we cannot and do not solicit contributions from states where we have not met the solicitation requirements, we know



of no prohibition against accepting unsolicited donations from donors in such states who approach us with offers to donate.

International donations are gratefully accepted, but we cannot make any statements concerning tax treatment of donations received from outside the United States. U.S. laws alone swamp our small staff.

Please check the Project Gutenberg Web pages for current donation methods and addresses. Donations are accepted in a number of other ways including checks, online payments and credit card donations. To donate, please visit: <http://www.gutenberg.org/fundraising/donate>

## Section 5.

### General Information About Project Gutenberg™ electronic works.

Professor Michael S. Hart is the originator of the Project Gutenberg™ concept of a library of electronic works that could be freely shared with anyone. For thirty years, he produced and distributed Project Gutenberg™ eBooks with only a loose network of volunteer support.

Project Gutenberg™ eBooks are often created from several printed editions, all of which are confirmed as Public Domain in the U.S. unless a copyright notice is included. Thus, we do not necessarily keep eBooks in compliance with any particular paper edition.

Each eBook is in a subdirectory of the same number as the eBook's eBook number, often in several formats including plain vanilla ASCII, compressed (zipped), HTML and others.

Corrected *editions* of our eBooks replace the old file and take over the old filename and etext number. The replaced older file is renamed. *Versions* based on separate sources are treated as new eBooks receiving new filenames and etext numbers.

Most people start at our Web site which has the main PG search facility:

<http://www.gutenberg.org>

This Web site includes information about Project Gutenberg™, including how to make donations to the Project Gutenberg Literary Archive Foundation, how to help produce our new eBooks, and how to subscribe to our email newsletter to hear about new eBooks.